



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>

The Greatest Street In The World

Broadway

NEW YORK • POUGHKEEPSIE • ALBANY



Stephen Jenkins







THE NEW YORK PUBLIC LIBRARY
ASTOR LENOX TILDEN FOUNDATION

FROM THE
ASTOR LENOX TILDEN FOUNDATION

Geological Society
A Winter Scene in Broadway, 1860
from an engraving by Gustave Doré, the painting by
H. S. G. H.

NEW YORK, 1860





**The Story of Broadway, Old and New, from the
Bowling Green to Albany**

11

Presented to the Westchester County Historical Society
by the
A. Winter School in Broadway, 1900
from an engraving by Girard after the painting by
H. Schreyer

New York

The Knickerbocker Press

1911



A Winter Scene in Broadway, 1860

From an engraving by Girardet, after the painting by
H. Sebron

The Greatest Street in the World

The Story of Broadway, Old and New, from the
Bowling Green to Albany

By

Stephen Jenkins

Member of the Westchester County Historical Society

160 Illustrations and 6 Maps

STANFORD LIBRARY

G. P. Putnam's Sons
New York and London
The Knickerbocker Press

1911

Ct

952.71

J52

~~952.71~~

679813

COPYRIGHT, 1911

BY

STEPHEN JENKINS

WAXES: IRONWAX

The Knickerbocker Press, New York

**THIS BOOK IS DEDICATED TO
JOHN W. DAVIS
DISTRICT SUPERINTENDENT OF SCHOOLS OF THE CITY OF
NEW YORK, IN GRATEFUL ACKNOWLEDGMENT
OF HIS VALUED ASSISTANCE AND
ENCOURAGEMENT**

INTRODUCTION



URING the past ten or more years I have been delivering a lecture in New York and elsewhere, which I have called "Broadway, Old and New, from New York to Albany." In this volume, I have expanded the lecture to book size.

Broadway is the longest of the modern streets of the world, though it is surpassed in length by two of ancient Roman construction: the Appian Way from Rome to Brundisium, 350 miles, and Watling Street in England, from Dover via London to Chester and York, thence in two branches to Carlisle and the Wall near Newcastle. These have, however, fallen from their high estate; and of the latter road traces only are found in some parts of its course of over three hundred miles; remains of the former are sometimes unearthed, though a more modern road, built by Pope Pius VI. in 1789 parallels the ancient roadway from Rome to Albano, nineteen miles northeast of the Eternal City.

From the beginning of the nineteenth century Broadway has been the main artery of the city, and its growth has been an indication of that of the old city upon the island of Manhattan. It has become the Mecca toward which the eyes of exiled Manhattanites are always turned, and they long for a sight of "dear old Broadway." It

represents to them New York—it is the epitome of the life of the great metropolis, with its various activities, mercantile, social, political, and theatrical. The outsider must also see Broadway, if he should visit New York; though it is greatly to be feared that the gaiety of the thoroughfare is its most potent attraction to him. If you are a New Yorker, let me ask you if you have ever been away from the city for a few weeks? When you return and your footsteps carry you along Broadway, does not every face you see—whether man, woman or child—have for you so marked a familiarity that you feel as if you knew personally each individual, and you have an almost overmastering inclination to nod or to say “How d’ ye do?” to each one you pass? In other words, you feel *at home*, or like Micawber, that “your foot is on your native heath.” I sometimes wonder if the naturalized New Yorker ever experiences the same feeling. I do not believe he does.

I think I am right in calling it “the greatest street in the world.” There are famous streets in the other great cities of the world, but none that shows such wealth for so great a distance. It is said that when the famous Field Marshal Blücher rode in triumphal procession through the streets of London after the battle of Waterloo he gazed about him in astonishment, and, true to his upbringing as a soldier of Frederick the Great and the military canons of the time, exclaimed: “*Gott in Himmel!* Vot a magnificent city to sack!” If we could suppose the doughty old warrior transported to New York and driven over her great thoroughfare, we can readily believe that words would fail him.

The question is often asked whether New York will ever be finished. It does not seem so, for there is such continual tearing down and building up. This has been

a marked feature of Broadway since the days of the Dutch. It is, perhaps, a sign of financial progress and wealth—the desire to have something better than there was before. But it has its unpleasant side if we judge from the sentimental point of view; for old and historic landmarks have disappeared. Of course, if some of these had been preserved, it would have been expensive toll to pay for sentiment, and we are a practical people and inclined to say with Sir Peter Teazle: “D—— sentiment.” Then again, our population is so mixed with foreign elements that historic associations have played but little part when utility has required change or demolition.

In writing this volume, I have tried to be as accurate as possible, and where there has been doubt to give that statement which has the greatest authority. A bibliography will be found at the end of the volume; and I wish here to acknowledge the obligations I am under to the Lenox, Astor, Society, Mechanics, New York Historical Society and Mount Vernon public libraries, and especially to the private library of District Superintendent of Schools, John W. Davis; also to many individuals, both in public positions and private life, to whom I have addressed inquiries which have always been courteously answered.

STEPHEN JENKINS.

MOUNT VERNON, NEW YORK,
January, 1911.

CONTENTS

CHAPTER	PAGE
I.—THE DUTCH HEERE STRAAT	1
II.—THE FORT AND THE BOWLING GREEN . .	12
III.—BROADWAY TO WALL STREET	31
IV.—FROM WALL STREET TO THE COMMONS . .	58
V.—THE COMMONS, OR FIELDS	84
VI.—THE CITY HALL PARK	109
VII.—FROM THE PARK TO CANAL STREET . .	132
VIII.—FROM CANAL STREET TO UNION SQUARE .	171
IX.—PLACES OF AMUSEMENT BELOW UNION SQUARE	192
X.—FROM UNION SQUARE TO FORTY-SECOND STREET	220
XI.—FROM FORTY-SECOND STREET TO NINETY-SIXTH STREET	262
XII.—FROM NINETY-SIXTH STREET TO ONE HUNDRED AND SIXTY-EIGHTH STREET	297
XIII.—FROM ONE HUNDRED AND SIXTY-EIGHTH STREET TO KINGSBRIDGE	324

CHAPTER	PAGE
XIV.—THE BOROUGH OF THE BRONX AND LOWER WESTCHESTER COUNTY	343
XV.—UPPER WESTCHESTER COUNTY	373
XVI.—PUTNAM AND DUTCHESS COUNTIES	405
XVII.—COLUMBIA AND RENSSELAER COUNTIES	436
BIBLIOGRAPHY	469
INDEX	475

ILLUSTRATIONS

	PAGE
A WINTER SCENE IN BROADWAY, 1860, SHOWING THE BROADWAY SLEIGHS <i>Frontispiece</i> From an engraving by Girardet, after the painting by H. Sebron.	
MAP OF NEW YORK IN 1642, DRAWN "FROM THE BEST DATA IN HIS POSSESSION" BY D. T. VALENTINE	5
BROAD STREET CANAL	7
MAP OF THE ORIGINAL GRANTS OF VILLAGE LOTS FROM THE DUTCH WEST INDIA COMPANY TO THE INHABI- TANTS OF NEW AMSTERDAM, 1642	10
SOUTHWEST VIEW OF THE CITY OF NEW YORK From William Russell's <i>History of America</i> , vol. ii., London, 1778, opposite p. 270. Also a copy on a smaller scale engraved by J. Carwitham (between 1737 and 1741). Carwitham was in his prime about 1740. Reproduced in Valentine's <i>Manual</i> for 1858 by Hayward of New York.	13
FIREMEN AT WORK IN 1800 From Valentine's <i>Manual</i> .	20
PULLING DOWN THE STATUE OF GEORGE III. From an old print.	23
GOVERNMENT HOUSE	26

	PAGE
"STEAMSHIP ROW" AND THE BOWLING GREEN	29
A PLAN OF THE CITY OF NEW YORK FROM A SURVEY BY JAMES LANE	30
Prepared by William Bradford.	
HAVEMEYER MANSION IN 1861, BETWEEN FIFTY-EIGHTH AND FIFTY-NINTH STREETS AND EIGHTH AND NINTH AVENUES	33
From Valentine's <i>Manual</i> for 1861.	
"THE DUKE'S PLAN." A DESCRIPTION OF THE TOWN OF NEW AMSTERDAM IN 1664	40
THE KING'S ARMS, ATLANTIC GARDENS, IN 1765	46
From Valentine's <i>Manual</i> for 1856.	
BROADWAY AND BOWLING GREEN IN 1910	49
Photo by Geo. P. Hall & Son.	
THE BUNKER MANSION ON BROADWAY, 1830	51
From Valentine's <i>Manual</i> .	
BROADWAY AND CORTLANDT STREET	59
From Valentine's <i>Manual</i> for 1859.	
CITY HOTEL, TRINITY AND GRACE CHURCHES, BROAD- WAY, IN 1831	65
From a drawing by A. Dick.	
THE SINGER BUILDING	69
From a photograph by Geo. P. Hall & Son.	
ST. PAUL'S CHAPEL IN 1875	73
From an etching by Eliza Greatorox	
THE LOEW BRIDGE AT FULTON STREET AND BROADWAY	79
VIEW FROM THE STEEPLE OF ST. PAUL'S CHAPEL, 1849	81
From the drawing by J. W. Hill.	

Illustrations

xiii

	PAGE
PETER STUYVESANT'S ARMY ENTERING NEW AMSTER- DAM	82
From the drawing by William Heath, London. (From Irving's <i>Knickerbocker's History of New York</i> .)	
THE COLLECT	85
THE EXECUTION OF A NEGRO ON THE COMMONS	87
Redrawn from an old print.	
SKETCH PLAN OF THE COMMONS IN 1742	89
Based on the drawing by David Grim.	
THE PROVOST BRITISH PRISON	91
THE HALL OF RECORDS	93
From the drawing by F. B. Nichols.	
THE AMERICAN HOTEL AT THE CORNER OF BARCLAY STREET, AND PHILIP HONE'S RESIDENCE AT 235 BROADWAY	99
A VIEW OF CITY HALL PARK, LOOKING NORTH, ABOUT 1830	111
CITY HALL PARK IN 1827	113
THE NATHAN HALE STATUE IN CITY HALL PARK	120
CITY HALL	123
THE ROTUNDA IN CITY HALL PARK—1852	127
THE NORTH END OF CITY HALL PARK, SHOWING SCUDDER'S MUSEUM, 1825	130
THE ASTOR HOUSE BETWEEN VESEY AND BARCLAY STREETS	138
THE SEVENTH REGIMENT MARCHING DOWN BROADWAY	141
(Thomas Nast—Original in 7th Regt. Armory.)	
BROADWAY STAGES	143

	PAGE
NEW YORK HOSPITAL, ABOUT 1800. BROADWAY OPPOSITE PEARL STREET	151
WASHINGTON HALL IN 1828	153
From Valentine's <i>History of Broadway</i> .	
EAST SIDE OF BROADWAY, BETWEEN DUANE AND PEARL STREETS, IN 1807	161
MASONIC HALL, ON THE EAST SIDE OF BROADWAY, BETWEEN DUANE AND PEARL STREETS, 1830	163
APOLLO ROOMS IN 1830	165
LISPENARD'S MEADOWS, TAKEN FROM THE SITE OF THE ST. NICHOLAS HOTEL, BROADWAY	172
Drawn by A. Anderson, 1785.	
THE STONE BRIDGE AT CANAL STREET	173
From Valentine's <i>Manual</i> , 1857.	
GRACE CHURCH AT THE CORNER OF TENTH STREET AND BROADWAY	180
ST. THOMAS'S CHURCH, CORNER OF BROADWAY AND HOUSTON STREET, ERECTED IN 1823	182
BROADWAY TABERNACLE, BETWEEN WORTH STREET AND CATHERINE LANE, ON THE EAST SIDE OF BROADWAY	184
BROADWAY AT CANAL STREET IN 1862	185
BROADWAY AND GRAND STREET	186
Drawn by Eliza Greatorrex.	
BROADWAY AND BLEECKER STREET	188
Drawn by Eliza Greatorrex	
CONTOIT'S GARDEN IN 1830	195
Redrawn from an old print.	

Illustrations

xv

	PAGE
BURNING OF BARNUM'S MUSEUM IN 1865	197
NIBLO'S GARDEN, SHOWING TENTS	202
THE METROPOLITAN HOTEL AT PRINCE STREET	203
TRIPLER'S HALL, OR METROPOLITAN HALL, 1854	206
WALLACK'S (STAR) THEATRE, VIEW FROM FOURTH AVENUE	209
Redrawn from an old print.	
BROADWAY THEATRE, EAST SIDE OF BROADWAY, BE- TWEEN PEARL AND WORTH STREETS, 1850	212
HARRIGAN & HART'S NEW THEATRE COMIQUE	215
JUNCTION OF BROADWAY AND THE BOWERY	221
THE STATUE OF LAFAYETTE IN UNION SQUARE	224
THE WEST SIDE OF UNION SQUARE IN 1897	225
BUCK'S HORN TAVERN, TWENTY-SECOND STREET AND BROADWAY, IN 1812	233
From Valentine's <i>Manual</i> , 1864.	
THE SITE OF THE FLATIRON BUILDING	235
MADISON SQUARE PARK AND GARDEN	237
FRANCONI'S HIPPODROME, TWENTY-THIRD STREET AND BROADWAY	239
THE CORNER OF FIFTH AVENUE AND TWENTY-THIRD STREET, 1852	240
On this site now stands the Fifth Avenue Building.	
FIFTH AVENUE HOTEL AT TWENTY-THIRD STREET	241
From a photograph.	

	PAGE
THE WEST SIDE OF MADISON SQUARE SHOWING THE WORTH MONUMENT	245
THE NAVAL MEMORIAL ARCH AND COLONNADE, 1899, BROADWAY AND FIFTH AVENUE	246
THE VARIAN TREE IN BROADWAY BETWEEN TWENTY- SIXTH AND TWENTY-SEVENTH STREETS, 1864	247
From Valentine's <i>Manual</i> , 1864.	
THE OLD VARIAN HOUSE, BLOOMINGDALE ROAD	249
From Valentine's <i>Manual</i> , 1856.	
HERALD SQUARE AT THE JUNCTION OF BROADWAY AND SIXTH AVENUE, SHOWING THE HERALD BUILDING IN THE CENTRE	253
Photo by Geo. P. Hall & Son.	
NIGHT SCENE ON THE "GREAT WHITE WAY," LOOKING TOWARD THE TIMES BUILDING FROM HOTEL ASTOR	257
Photo by Geo. P. Hall & Son.	
THE TIMES BUILDING AT FORTY-SECOND STREET	263
Photo by Geo. P. Hall & Son.	
HAVEMEYER MANSION IN 1861, BETWEEN FIFTY-EIGHTH AND FIFTY-NINTH STREETS AND EIGHTH AND NINTH AVENUES	265
Valentine's <i>Manual</i> for 1861.	
THE HOPPER HOUSE AT BROADWAY AND FIFTIETH STREET	267
From an etching by Eliza Greatorox.	
THE NEW BROADWAY TABERNACLE	271
THE OLD HALFWAY HOUSE AT THE JUNCTION OF BROAD- WAY, EIGHTH AVENUE, AND FIFTY-NINTH STREET	273
From Valentine's <i>Manual</i> , 1864.	

Illustrations

xvii

	PAGE
THE COLUMBUS MONUMENT AT FIFTY-NINTH STREET	275
SQUATTER SETTLEMENT—1858	277
Redrawn by William J. Wilson from an old lithograph.	
AT THE JUNCTION OF BROADWAY AND SIXTY-SIXTH STREET	281
Photo by Geo. P. Hall & Son.	
THE SOMERINDYKE ESTATE ON BLOOMINGDALE ROAD, NEAR SEVENTY-FIFTH STREET	284
From Valentine's <i>Manual</i> , 1863.	
THE APTHORPE MANSION, BLOOMINGDALE	285
THE CHURCH AT BLOOMINGDALE	289
Drawn by Eliza Greatorox.	
BURNHAM'S MANSION HOUSE, 1835	293
Redrawn from Valentine print.	
THE OLD ABBEY HOTEL ON BLOOMINGDALE ROAD, 1847	296
From Valentine's <i>Manual</i> , 1864.	
RESIDENCE OF THE POST FAMILY, NOW CLAREMONT HOTEL, BLOOMINGDALE ROAD, NEAR MANHATTANVILLE, 1860	299
From Valentine's <i>Manual</i> , 1861.	
GRANT'S TOMB, RIVERSIDE DRIVE	301
COLUMBIA LIBRARY AND CAMPUS	303
Photo by Geo. P. Hall & Son.	
TABLET IN WALL OF ENGINEERING BUILDING, COLUMBIA UNIVERSITY	304
THE SUSPENSION BRIDGE AT TRINITY CEMETERY, BROADWAY AND ONE HUNDRED AND FIFTY-FIFTH STREET	311

	PAGE
THE AUDUBON ESTATE ON THE BANKS OF THE HUDSON, FOOT OF ONE HUNDRED AND FIFTY-SIXTH STREET AT CARMANSVILLE	313
From Valentine's <i>Manual</i> , 1865.	
THE ROGER MORRIS, OR JUMEL, MANSION	318
TREES AND STONE WALL MARKING THE WEST SIDE OF OLD BLOOMINGDALE ROAD, 1906. LOOKING SOUTH- WEST FROM BROADWAY AT 124TH STREET. GRANT'S TOMB IN DISTANCE	320
THE CROSSED KEYS TAVERN	322
Drawn by Eliza Greathouse.	
NORTHWEST CORNER OF BROADWAY AND ONE HUNDRED AND EIGHTY-FIRST STREET, OPPOSITE HOLYROOD CHAPEL	325
From a photograph.	
BROADWAY AT DYCKMAN STREET, INWOOD, SHOWING THE PALISADES IN THE DISTANCE	327
From a photograph.	
FARMERS' BRIDGE	329
Courtesy of the Department of Bridges, New York City.	
STRANG HOUSE, OLD DYCKMAN HOME, BROADWAY AND TWO HUNDRED AND NINTH STREET	330
THE BLUE BELL TAVERN	333
OLD KING'S BRIDGE	335
Courtesy of the Department of Bridges, New York City.	
KINGSBRIDGE AND SPUYTEN DUYVIL CREEK BEFORE IT WAS FILLED IN	338
CENTURY HOUSE, NEAR SPUYTEN DUYVIL CREEK, HARLEM RIVER, 1861	340

Illustrations

xix

	PAGE
OLD KINGSBRIDGE HOTEL. A POPULAR ROAD-HOUSE OF FORMER DAYS	342
THE GODWIN, FORMERLY THE MACOMB HOUSE, KINGS- BRIDGE	347
From a photograph.	
VAN CORTLANDT MANSION IN VAN CORTLANDT PARK .	349
VAN CORTLANDT PARK. THE DAM AND MILL . . .	351
VAN CORTLANDT PARK. RUINS OF OLD MILL. REMOVED IN 1903	352
MONUMENT ON INDIAN FIELD, VAN CORTLANDT PARK .	354
YONKERS, GETTY SQUARE, HOLLYWOOD INN, AND ST. JOHN'S CHURCH	356
PHILIPSE MANOR-HOUSE, YONKERS	358
From a photograph.	
PHILIP VAN BRUGH LIVINGSTON HOUSE, HEADQUARTERS OF WASHINGTON, DOBBS FERRY	362
From a photograph.	
WASHINGTON IRVING	365
From the etching by J. D. Smillie.	
"SUNNYSIDE," IRVINGTON	367
LYNDEHURST, HOME OF MISS HELEN M. GOULD .	370
HISTORICAL SKETCH MAP OF KING'S BRIDGE, 1645-1783	372
Compiled by Thomas Henry Edsall.	
MONUMENT TO THE CAPTORS OF ANDRÉ	374
From a photograph by F. Ahrens.	
THE CAPTURE OF ANDRÉ	379
From a print in the possession of Dr. Coutant.	

	PAGE
UPPER MILLS OF FREDERICK PHILIPSE (1682), NORTH TARRYTOWN	380
PHILIPSE'S CASTLE, NORTH TARRYTOWN	382
SLEEPY HOLLOW CHURCH AT NORTH TARRYTOWN	383
VAN CORTLANDT MANOR-HOUSE, CROTON-ON-HUDSON	389
PEEKSKILL BAY	391
ROA HOOK, STATE CAMP	393
Photo by H. H. Pierce.	
THE SETH POMEROY MONUMENT AT CORTLANDTVILLE	396
ST. PETER'S CHURCH AND PAULDING MONUMENT AT CORTLANDTVILLE	398
DUSENBERRY'S TAVERN, CORTLANDTVILLE, N. Y.	400
ANNSVILLE CREEK—WHERE BROADWAY ENTERS THE HIGHLANDS	402
ANTHONY'S NOSE, FROM SOUTH, LOOKING FROM IONA ISLAND	403
DIVISION MAP OF THE HIGHLAND PATENT OF ADOLPHUS PHILIPSE	406
THE BEVERLY HOUSE	408
Courtesy of Putnam County Historical Society.	
UNDERCLIFF, THE HOME OF THE POET MORRIS	413
From an old print.	
TRINITY EPISCOPAL CHURCH, ERECTED 1769, AT FISHKILL	414
THE FIRST REFORMED DUTCH CHURCH, FISHKILL	416

Illustrations

xxi

	PAGE
THE OLD GRIST-MILL AT BRINCKERHOFF NEAR FISHKILL, OVER ONE HUNDRED AND THIRTY YEARS OLD. ERECTED BY SOLDIERS DURING THE REVOLUTION AND STILL IN USE	417
THE WHARTON HOUSE, FISHKILL	419
THE TELLER HOUSE, MATTEAWAN	420
THE VERPLANCK MANSION AT FISHKILL LANDING	421
WAPPINGERS FALLS	422
COLLEGE HILL, POUGHKEEPSIE	423
THE VAN KLEECK HOUSE	424
THOMPSON MEMORIAL LIBRARY, VASSAR COLLEGE, POUGHKEEPSIE	426
MAIN BUILDING, VASSAR COLLEGE	427
THE CANTILEVER BRIDGE OVER THE HUDSON RIVER AT POUGHKEEPSIE	429
HOUSE BUILT BY WILLIAM K. LUDLOW, 1786, NOW IN POSSESSION OF HIS GREAT-GRANDSON, R. FULTON LUDLOW, CLAVERACK, N. Y.	443
BLUE STORE	446
CITY OF NIEU ORANGE AS SKETCHED IN 1673	447
REFORMED CHURCH, CLAVERACK. ERECTED A.D. 1767	448
LINDENWALD, THE MARTIN VAN BUREN MANSION	449
THE VAN BUREN MONUMENT, KINDERHOOK	451
THE OLD CENTENNIAL HOUSE, OR VAN SCHAACK MANSION	453

	PAGE
THE MODERN FLYING DUTCHMAN—"THE ALBANY "	455
STUYVESANT FALLS	456
TOLL-GATE, HUDSON, N. Y.	457
THE OLD COURT HOUSE, CLAVERACK, N. Y.	460
FORT CRALO MANSION, RENSSELAER	462
PLAN OF ALBANY, 1695	463
A VIEW OF ALBANY FROM THE BRIDGE	464
THE GOVERNOR'S HOUSE, ALBANY	465
THE CITY HALL, ALBANY	467
SKETCH MAP SHOWING BROADWAY FROM THE BATTERY TO ALBANY	<i>at end</i>
Drawn by William J. Wilson.	

The Greatest Street in the World

THE GREATEST STREET IN THE WORLD

CHAPTER I

THE DUTCH HEERE STRAAT*



ON the fourth of October, 1609, Henry Hudson, having finished the exploration of the river which bears his name, set sail for Europe and wintered in the port of Dartmouth, England. From this point, he sent accounts of his voyage to his employers, in which he named the newly explored river the Mauritius, in honor of Prince Maurice of Orange. Several merchants at once began the fitting out of a vessel to take advantage of Hudson's discoveries. This vessel sailed in the following year (1610), and it is said that it was commanded by Juet, Hudson's mate on the *Half-Moon*.

This voyage must have been of advantage to its

* Between the Bowling Green and Vesey Street, Broadway has been called at various times in old documents *De Heere Wagh Wegh*, the Broad Wagon Way, the Common Highway, and the Great Public Road.

backers, for we find that the United Netherlands Company was formed for the purposes of trade with this new land. From this time forth, a succession of voyages followed under such commanders as Christensen, May, Block, De Witt, and Volckertsen. While these expeditions ascended the river as far as the influx of the Mohawk—the heart of the fur trade with the Indians—Manhattan Island was made the chief depot of the trade, and Christensen was made the agent of the Company for the traffic in furs. A small fort was built on Castle Island in the river near Albany, and another on Manhattan Island with a few rough, bark huts near it. This fort was a small block-house surrounded by a stockade. It stood at the junction of *Tuyn*, or Garden Street (Exchange Place) and the present Broadway—approximately, at 39 Broadway.

In the fall of 1613, Adrian Block lost one of his vessels, the *Tiger*, by fire; and he and Christensen built several huts for the accommodation of their crews and spent the winter of 1613-14 upon the island of Manhattan. The site of these huts is marked by a tablet erected by the Holland Society upon the front of the building occupied by the Hamburg-American Line at 41-45 Broadway. These habitations are said to have been the first erected by Europeans upon the island of Manhattan, and the date is that usually given for the first settlement of New York. They were probably the huts of 1612 repaired for winter use, being contiguous to the small fort, or block-house, mentioned above. The crews were engaged during the winter in building a vessel to replace the one lost by fire. The new vessel was called the *Onrest*, or *Restless*. In it Block made explorations through Long Island Sound as far as the island which bears his name, whence he crossed to the northern shore and explored Narragansett Bay.

These earlier voyages were conducted by traders, who, having bartered with the Indians for furs and pelts, returned each year to Holland; unless through some accident, as with Block and Christiensen, they were obliged to stay through the winter.

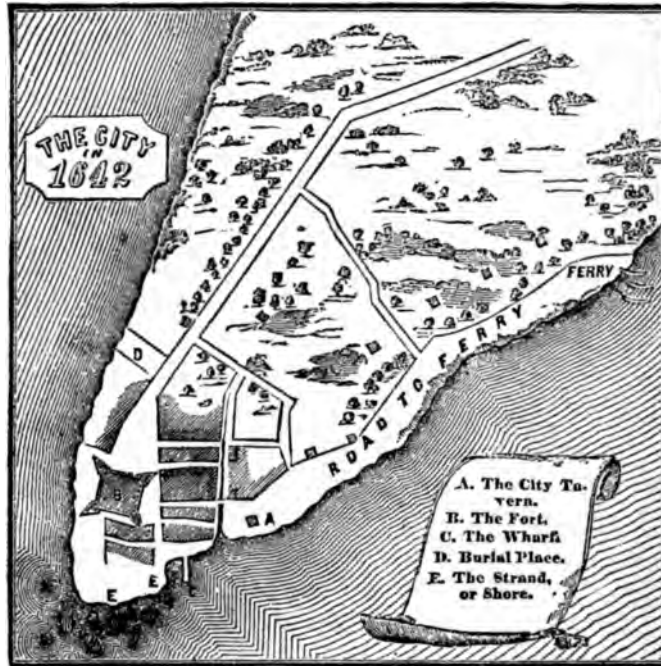
The charter of the United Netherlands Company expired January 1, 1618; but special licenses to trade were granted by the States-General until the formation of the West India Company, June 3, 1621. This company was formed principally through the efforts of Willem Usselinx, a far-sighted patriot and statesman, who had been urging the colonization of the newly explored lands ever since Hudson's report of his voyage had reached Holland, with its description of the richness and productiveness of the country. The formation of the West India Company had three objects primarily in view: first, an immediate source of revenue to the State to aid in supporting the war then waging with Spain; second, to colonize the lands which held out so many prospective rewards to the colonizers; third, to establish a permanent colony in America as an offset to the Spanish colonies, and as a base at which the Dutch vessels could fit out and from which they could sail to pounce upon the richly laden galleons of Spain on their homeward voyages from Mexico, South America, and the West Indies.

In pursuance of these plans, a number of colonists, provided with tools, cattle, and other requisites, were sent out in several vessels and settled near the site of Albany in the first half of May, 1624. It was not until the spring of 1626 that a permanent, agricultural colony under Director Peter Minuits was established upon Manhattan Island; though it must not be forgotten that the island had been occupied as a trading post for several years before this.

In 1841, Dr. Brodhead visited Holland on behalf of the State of New York for the purpose of examining and codifying the ancient records relating to the Dutch occupation of New Netherland. He found that a great mass of the earliest documents and archives had been sold at auction as worthless lumber twenty years before his visit; and these priceless papers have probably disappeared forever. From the year 1638 onwards, however, there are pretty full records, as the correspondence between the West India Company and its agents was very voluminous; and the reports of the directors-general and the petitions of the inhabitants of New Netherland against the tyranny and exactions of the company's representatives to their "Illustrious High-Mightinesses," the States-General, and other matters relating to the colony had been preserved. All of these, as well as similar papers in the possession of the State of New York, have been translated and codified by Brodhead, O'Callaghan, and their successors in the offices of state archivist and state historian; and the work is still in progress. The very earliest history of Manhattan is, therefore, largely traditional and conjectural.

The Company built a fort at the lower end of the island, and about this clustered the houses of the first settlers; these were rude affairs of bark. Later, there was expansion along the shore of the East River as the settlers began to cultivate their *bouweries*, or farms. When Director-General Kieft massacred Indians at Pavonia and on Long Island and brought about the Indian wars of 1641, and later, the people were obliged to flee from the outlying farms to the protection of the fort in order to escape death or bondage at the hands of the redskins. As it was, their cattle were killed, and their houses destroyed, while many of the men were tomahawked,

and the women and children carried into captivity. The annals of these Indian wars teem with horrors—of the two belligerents, it appears that the Dutch were the more savage.

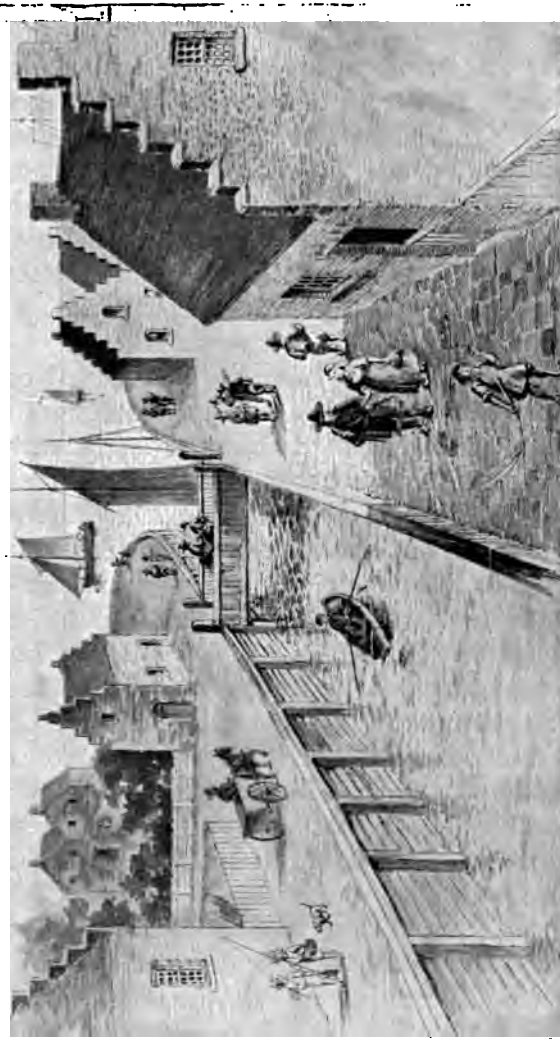


MAP OF NEW YORK IN 1642, DRAWN "FROM THE BEST DATA IN HIS POSSESSION" BY D. T. VALENTINE

There was at first no order in which the houses were built. Each settler "squatted" wherever he pleased, his one desire being to get as close to the fort as possible. He built his house and cultivated his garden; and after a period of occupancy, usually six years, received from the Company the *grond brief*, or patent, for his land. The first grant of land was probably that made in 1636 or 1637

to Roelof Jansen of a tract of sixty-two acres on the west side of Broadway, extending from Warren Street to Christopher. It was not until 1642 that any grants were made of town lots; and it was not until the following year that such grants were made on the Heere Straat. These were principally on the east side, as the west side was taken up with the burying-ground (Morris Street), the garden, and the orchard of the Company, the Company's *bouwerie*, and the country places of Vandergrift and Van Dyke. In 1631, a windmill for the use of the town was erected on the Heere Straat between the present Liberty and Cortlandt streets.

On account of this "squatting" of the first settlers, there grew up that irregularity of streets which distinguishes to-day the lower parts of the city of New York. Streets were unknown in those early days; but about the time of the first grants two streets leading from the fort seem to have formed themselves by common consent; one, the Heere Straat, which followed a ridge of land northward through the Company's farms and fields, the other, a street leading along the shore of the East River, which became the Great Queen Street of the English and the Pearl Street of the present. It was along this latter street that the settlement grew away from the fort, having its greatest density of houses and population in Blommaert's Vly, through which flowed a sluggish stream that drained the swamp near the Heere Straat. As early as 1638, it appears that measures were taken to drain this marsh, but it was not until 1643 that an artificial ditch was constructed to carry off the swamp water. At first, a roadway twenty-five or thirty feet wide was left on the west side only; but in 1657-59, arrangements were made with the landholders on the eastern side, and a similar width of roadway was secured on that side also.



BROAD STREET CANAL

At the same time, the ditch was deepened and widened and its sides sheathed with planks, so that it became a canal through which the tide ebbed and flowed almost to Beaver Street. Here were conditions and surroundings with which the Dutchman was familiar; he was reminded of *home*, and this section became the most desirable and thickly settled on the island. The street was called *De Heere Graft*; in English days and our own, Broad Street. By 1676 the ditch had become so unsanitary that Governor Andros ordered that the street be filled up, and the ditch became a covered sewer as far south as the bridge (Bridge Street).

From the very beginning of the Dutch occupation, differences arose between them and the English as to the ownership of the land. It is stated that as early as 1614, Captain Argall, while returning from his eastern explorations, stopped at Manhattan Island, and made the traders whom he found there acknowledge the supremacy of Virginia and pay quit-rent for the privilege of trading in the valley of the Hudson; and Captain Thomas Dermer, the first Englishman to sail through Long Island Sound is known to have stopped at the Manhadoes in 1619. There were constant disputes with Connecticut over the boundary line between the two colonies—a dispute that was handed down to our own time, for it was not until 1879 that the two States interested finally came to an agreement which was ratified by the Congress of 1880–81.

In 1654, some English from Connecticut, probably in furtherance of that colony's claim to all the land as far as the ocean, settled on Westchester Creek, in what is now the Borough of the Bronx. Director Stuyvesant, and his council, fearing further encroachments by the English upon the land of New Netherland, and even upon

New Amsterdam itself, sent an expedition to arrest the audacious intruders, and also during the same year, caused a palisade to be built from the East River to the Hudson. This palisade, or wall, was regularly patrolled by the soldiers of the Company, and several falcons were distributed along its length. Two gates gave egress and ingress; one being located at the upper end of the Heere Straat, called *De Landt Poorte*, or land gate; the other, the more important of the two, called the water gate, at the shore of the East River. The land gate was opposite where Trinity Church now stands and gave access to the *Vlacte*, or pasture; the water gate gave access to the ferry to Brooklyn, to Allerton's warehouse, and to the other houses along the river road. In the morning men went through the streets blowing horns, and the cattle of the different inhabitants were put in their charge to be driven through the two gates to the common for pasture; at night the cattle were driven back again through the gates, but distributed themselves to their own quarters.

This palisade, or wall, gave its name to the street which was afterwards laid out along its length and which has become the financial centre of New York—Wall Street. The wall was, therefore, the upper limit of the town of New Amsterdam. If we measure the extent of the town from north to south by the scale on the "Duke's Plan" of 1664, we shall find that it did not exceed five hundred and fifty yards from the southern extremity to the wall. The palisade was allowed to decay, but was repaired from time to time as the danger of invasion arose during both Dutch and English days. In 1692, during the alarm of King William's War with the French, fears were entertained of an invasion from Canada, and two stone bastions were erected, one of which, called "Zea-

landia," stood at the land gate. The wall was finally demolished in 1699. When the workmen were digging up Broadway in 1799 to lay the water pipes of the Manhattan Company, they came upon the foundations and posts of the old city gate at Wall Street.

In 1652, upon petition of the inhabitants, the Company granted them a burgher government;—this constituted the first incorporation of the city. In 1656, the first map of the city was drawn, showing seventeen streets, "to remain from this time forward, without alteration." In 1657, the average price of the best city lots was fifty dollars, and these were not on the Heere Straat. The rent of an average good house was fourteen dollars a year. In 1658, contracts were awarded to some of the city shoemakers to make leather fire-buckets; and a few months later, these buckets were distributed to several houses in the town, eleven being assigned to Heer Paulus Leendersen Vandergrift, whose house was on the Heere Straat nearly opposite Exchange Place.

In 1664, at the time of the surrender of the province to the English under Colonel Nicolls, in addition to the tracts of land on the west side of the street already mentioned, were the farms of Nicholas William Stuyvesant and Balthasar Stuyvesant, sons of the governor. Outside the city gate, the Heere Straat did not extend as far as Fulton Street. This section had been granted in 1644 to Jan Jansen Damen, whose property extended, with some slight variations, from river to river, and was now rented by his heirs to five tenants.

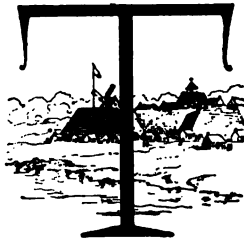
On the east side of the street, was a grant taken in 1643 by Govert Loockermans and Isaac Allerton, an Englishman who had come over in the *Mayflower* to Plymouth. The property extended one hundred feet above Beaver Street on the Heere Straat, and two hundred and fifty



feet back to the swamp on Broad Street. Above this, was another farm of Jan Jansen Damen, which had been used formerly by the negro slaves of the Company to cultivate for their own use. Damen cultivated part of it, and used part of it for a sheep pasture. The next property was that belonging to Secretary Cornelis Van Tienhoven, which he had acquired in 1644. The few houses on the east side of the road were of a mean character, little better than hovels, with one room and a fireplace, being occupied by mechanics and laborers. This was due to the fact that the Heere Straat was remote from the business parts of the town.

CHAPTER II

THE FORT AND THE BOWLING GREEN



THE fort at Garden Street (1612) was a block-house surrounded by palisades, or, in the language of the times, "stockadoes." The fort erected by the West India Company under Kieft at the lower end of the island was of similar description; but it was the first building intended to be permanent. It was called Fort Amsterdam, and the settlement which grew up about it, New Amsterdam. In 1633, a more pretentious fortification was begun by Van Twiller. This was planned to be three hundred feet long and two hundred and fifty feet wide, with four corner bastions built of stone, the ramparts between being of earth. It was finished in 1635 at an expense of \$1688, and contained the governor's house, barracks for the garrison, secretary's office, etc. The stone church, seventy-two feet long, fifty-two feet wide, and sixteen feet over the ground, was begun by Kieft in 1641 and finished the following year. The roof was of split shingles; and upon the front was placed a tablet stating in Dutch: "Anno Domini, 1642, Wilhelm Kieft, Director-General, hath the Commonalty caused to build this Temple." The cost of the church,



SOUTHWEST VIEW OF THE CITY OF NEW YORK

(From William Russell's *History of America*, vol. ii, London, 1778, opposite p. 270. Also a copy on a smaller scale engraved by J. Carwitham (between 1737 and 1741). Carwitham was in his prime about 1740. Reproduced in Valentine's *Manual* for 1858 by Hayward of New York.

one thousand dollars, was raised by subscription, advantage being taken of a wedding party to get the merry guests to subscribe sums at which in the "cold, gray light of the morning after," they opened their eyes. The church was named Saint Nicholas in honor of the patron saint of Holland; but later it was also known as "The Dutch Church within the Fort." The contractors were John and Richard Ogden of Stamford, in Connecticut.

During colonial and provincial times, the fort was the centre of political action, and, to a great extent, owing to its being the official residence of the governor, of the social life as well. Its site was on the plot of ground bounded by Whitehall, Bridge, and State streets, and the Bowling Green. The last named was on a hill outside the fort—it is there that Broadway begins. Whitehall Street was so called because it led down to a white building erected by Governor Stuyvesant, afterwards used by the English Governor Dongan, and later as a custom-house. J. H. Innes* suggests that it may have been so called by the English in derision, as the building was not an imposing one and may have recalled to them the dilapidated appearance of their own Whitehall Palace in London. Bridge Street led to the "long bridge" across the canal in Broad Street. State Street, afterwards the locality of some of the finest mansions in the city, was named in honor of the State.

The Bowling Green was the open space north of the fort, originally called *'t Marckveldt* (the Marketfield) or "The Plaine." A lane led to it from Broad Street, called *'t Marckveldt steegie*, popularly known in English days as Petticoat Lane. A portion of the ancient lane is still hidden away between the Produce Exchange and the American Bank Note Company's building at Broad

* *New Amsterdam and its People.*

and Beaver streets. Beaver Street also led into the Marketfield; and on the west, leading to the Hudson, and the landing-place of the Jersey farmers, was the Beaver path, an extension of Beaver Street, but closed as a highway and granted to private parties before 1650.

In 1641, Director Kieft ordered that an annual fair for the sale of hogs should be held in the Marketfield on the first of November. In 1658, a meat market, the first in the city, was established in the same place, and a shed was erected for the purpose. In the following year (1659) a great, annual, cattle fair was established in front of the fort between October twentieth and the last week in November, during which time no one could be arrested for debt. This, no doubt, added materially to its popularity, for it lasted for thirty years. The cattle to be sold were ranged along the west side of Broadway and fastened to stakes driven for the purpose in front of the burying-ground (Morris Street).

The open place served not only as a market, but also as a parade for the soldiers, for a common out-door meeting-place of the inhabitants, and for bonfires, Maypole dances, and similar celebrations. The old parade also saw the departure and return of many a warlike expedition. In 1691 a shambles was established on the Marketfield, where meat only was to be sold.

The first Indian war of Kieft's administration was ended here on August 30, 1645, when the chiefs and sachems of the hostile tribes assembled on "The Plaine," smoked the peace pipe, and buried the tomahawk in sign of amity, at the same time marking their totems in sign of acquiescence upon the treaty which the Dutch had prepared for them. In 1655, Stuyvesant marshalled his army in front of the fort before starting on his successful expedition against the Fort Christina of the usurping

Swedes upon the Delaware; and "The Plaine" also beheld the triumphant return of his (according to Diedrich Knickerbocker) motley army. For the last time Stuyvesant marched his little army out of the fort with the honors of war, August 26, 1664, while the tri-colored flag of Holland fluttered to the ground and the standard of Great Britain rose in its place.

Under Colonel Nicolls, New Amsterdam became New York, and the fort became Fort James in honor of the lord-proprietor, James, Duke of York and Albany (afterwards King James II.). For nine years, the English remained undisturbed; then, England and Holland being at war, a Dutch fleet of five vessels under command of Admirals Benckes and Evertsen appeared off New York, and the province became once more Dutch, with Captain Colve, commanding one of the vessels, as governor. The city was called New Orange, and the fort, Fort William Hendrick, August, 1673. In November, 1674, the Dutch, by the treaty of Westminster, ceded the colony to the English, and the fort and city became again English, to remain so until the Revolution.

As stated above, the fort was the centre of the political and social life of the city. Here the governors resided, here the taxes and quit-rents for land grants were payable, and here was quartered the garrison, consisting usually of a regiment of foot and a company of artillery. It is not necessary to give a list of these governors, most of them bad, some indifferent and a few, good. Probably the worst from a moral point of view was my Lord Cornbury, a dissolute profligate, who amused himself and shocked the worthy citizens by parading about the fort dressed in women's clothes—his only title to consideration being that he was a cousin of Queen Anne and that

he needed all the money that he could force or beguile from the inhabitants.

When, in August, 1689, the news of the abdication of James II. reached the city, the great mass of the citizens determined to get rid of the obnoxious Governor Nicholson and declared for William and Mary; but there was far from being unanimity of opinion. A committee of safety was formed, and Jacob Leisler, one of the wealthiest merchants of the city and a captain of the militia, was declared commander-in-chief until such time as instructions could be received from England. The five trainbands of the city and one from Eastchester paraded in front of the fort and refused to obey the orders of their colonel, Nicholas Bayard, but declared instead for Leisler, who then took possession of the fort and became the actual governor. When on March 19, 1691, Governor Sloughter arrived under appointment of William and Mary, the fort was, after some delay, surrendered, and Leisler was arrested and accused of high treason. A court of eight judges was appointed by Sloughter, and Leisler and his son-in-law, Jacob Milborne, were convicted of treason and sentenced to death.

Sloughter, who appears to have been a well-meaning man when not under the influence of drink, would not sign the death warrant, probably believing that, while Leisler might be technically guilty, he had, in fact, saved the colony from anarchy and been loyal to the king, under whose orders he claimed, and rightly, always to have acted. There was also fear on the governor's part that he might incur the displeasure of the king by summarily executing the man who had been the first to raise the standard of William and Mary in New York. However, Leisler's enemies were determined upon his death and took advantage of the governor's weakness to accomplish

their purpose. They invited Slougher to a banquet, got him drunk, and, while he was in that condition, induced him to sign the death warrant. Before he became sober, Leisler and Milborne had been executed. On July 23, 1691, two months afterwards, Slougher died suddenly while in a drunken state. It is to be hoped that remorse helped him on to his untimely end. Four years later, Parliament reversed the attainder, the confiscated property of the two victims was restored to their heirs, and the bodies of Leisler and Milborne were disinterred and buried with high honors in the Dutch church in Garden Street. For a quarter of a century afterwards, the politics of the city were swayed by the Leislerians and the anti-Leislerians.

In 1691, Abraham De Peyster, captain of one of the train-bands and a friend of Leisler, became mayor of the city, which office he held for three years. His statue is in the Bowling Green, facing the custom-house.

South of the fort was a point of land, anciently called *Schreyers' Hoek*, or Weepers' Point, after a similar point in old Amsterdam, where people saw the last of departing vessels, carrying away those who were near and dear to them. A number of rocks, called *Capske*, projected their heads above the water. In 1693, during the progress of a war between France and England, the governor, fearing an attack by the French fleet, caused the edge of the point to be filled in and erected a platform upon which was placed a number of guns to command both rivers. The works extended from the present Whitehall Street westward about three hundred feet and were commonly known as the Whitehall Battery. This was the beginning of the present Battery; but much more land was subsequently filled in, making here one of the most delightful spots in the city. When fashion ruled in this

The Fort and the Bowling Green 19

neighborhood, the Battery park was the favorite resort of the citizens. No disfiguring railroad structure then intercepted the view, nor was conversation interrupted by the thunder of passing trains. Even now, one can travel to many places before he will see a view equal to that he gets from the Battery of the beautiful harbor of New York, with Bartholdi's grand statue of Liberty, and the constantly passing vessels lending animation to the scene.

In 1732, the city council:

"Resolved, that this corporation will lease a piece of land lying at the lower end of Broadway, fronting the fort, to some of the inhabitants of the said Broadway, in order to be enclosed to make a Bowling-Green thereof, with walks therein, for the beauty and ornament of said street, as well as for the recreation and delight of the inhabitants of the city, leaving the street on each side thereof fifty feet in breadth."

By this act, the first, and oldest, public park in New York city came into being. The section adjacent to the Marketfield had become the wealthy and fashionable quarter of the city, and the residents did not like the open market in front of the fort and so near to their own habitations. The lessees under the act were John Chambers, Peter Bayard, and Peter Jay; the rent was one peppercorn a year, and the lease was for eleven years. There was no golf in those days and the sport of bowling was popular; for at the expiration of the first lease, it was renewed for eleven years more at a rental of twenty shillings a year to John Chambers, Colonel Frederick Philipse, and John Roosevelt.

In the year 1746, a party of Oneidas and Mohawks with their squaws and papooses, amounting in all to several hundred, came in canoes down the Hudson River

to hold a conference with the British Governor Clinton. They encamped upon the shore of the river where the N. Y. C. & H. R. R. freight house is now located in the former St. John's Park, and marched down Broadway to Fort George in single file carrying long poles ornamented with French scalps. The conference was held in the fort; and the whole proceeding was of great



FIREMEN AT WORK IN 1800
(From Valentine's *Manual*)

interest to the inhabitants, as subsequently all such conferences were held in Albany.

The German, Professor Kalm, in a visit to the city in 1748 describes the fort as "a square with four bastions," situated upon the southwest point of the city and containing the governor's residence, three stories in height. This house, which was called the Province House, was destroyed by fire during Governor Tryon's time, December 17, 1773, with the loss of one life, that of his daughter's maid. Kalm states also that the chapel within the fort was destroyed by fire during the negro plot of

The Fort and the Bowling Green 21

1741; and further, "According to Governor Burnet's observation, this fort stands in the latitude of $42^{\circ} 12'$ north."

On the first of January, 1672, Governor Lovelace started a post-rider from the fort to carry the mails to Boston; but only a few trips were made. The Boston post was successfully established a few years later. In 1753 there appeared the following in the *New York Gazette*: "The Post-Office, at the Bowling Green, Broadway, will be open every day, save Saturday afternoons and Sundays, from 8 to 12 A.M., and from 2 to 4 P.M., except on post nights, when attendance will be given until ten at night, by A. Colden, deputy postmaster. N. B. No credit in future." From this it would appear that the Saturday half-holiday was one of the early institutions of the city. In 1772 it was enacted by the provincial assembly that: "The mail be sent weekly from New York to Albany, up one side of the River and down the other, for which an extra one hundred pounds be allowed." The mail was carried on horseback, and the post-rider would sometimes carry a woman passenger on a pillion behind him.

In 1765, the British Parliament enacted the Stamp Act. A meeting of the merchants of the city was called at Burns's Coffee House on Broadway, and the first non-importation agreement was signed, October 31, 1765. On the evening of the next day, two companies of the Sons of Liberty appeared on the streets. One company marched to the Commons where they hanged in effigy Lieutenant-Governor Cadwalader Colden; the other company broke into Colden's stable and took out his chariot, in which they placed a copy of the obnoxious act and an effigy of the lieutenant-governor. Both companies then united and marched in silence to the Bowling Green,

where they found the soldiers drawn up on the ramparts of the fort ready to receive them. General Gage, the British commander, thought it prudent not to fire upon the rioters; and, as they were refused admission to the fort, they turned their attention to the wooden railing which surrounded the little park. This they tore down for fuel; and, having burnt railing, carriage, act, and effigy, they dispersed to their homes.

The Stamp Act stirred up a hornet's nest from Georgia to Massachusetts; and in order to allay the excitement, Parliament, on February 20, 1766, repealed the hateful act. When the news of the repeal reached New York, the inhabitants went wild with delight, the city was illuminated, and special bonfires were lighted in the Bowling Green. In a burst of loyalty, the citizens determined to erect an equestrian statue of George III. in the Bowling Green, and one of Pitt in Wall Street. The gilt statue of the king was erected August 21, 1770, amid the roar of artillery and the plaudits of the enthusiastic and loyal people.

The wooden fence was replaced temporarily in November of the same year; but the general assembly of the province feared: "That unless the said Green be fenced in, the same will soon become a receptacle for all the filth and dirt of the neighborhood, in order to prevent which, it is ordered that the same be fenced with iron rails, at an expense of £800." It is generally stated that this fence and the original stones still surround the park; but the royal crowns and the leaden balls which ornamented the pillars were broken off, to be used as missiles to be fired at the *Asia* man-of-war, in case she bombarded the town.

On the tenth of July, 1776, the news reached the city from Philadelphia that the Congress had declared that "these Colonies are, and of right ought to be, free and

The Fort and the Bowling Green 23

independent States." The enthusiastic populace tore the picture of George III. from its frame in the city hall in Wall Street, and then proceeded to the Bowling Green, where willing hands soon had ropes around the figures of the king and his horse. "With a long pull, a strong pull, and a pull altogether," the leaden horse and his



PULLING DOWN THE STATUE OF GEORGE III.

(From an old print)

leaden rider came tumbling to the earth. At the same time the railing was stripped of its royal ornaments. The pedestal was left standing until after the Revolution. The lead figures were broken up and sent to Litchfield in Connecticut, the home of Oliver Wolcott, later governor of the State, by whose wife and daughter they were melted and run into 42,000 bullets, which the American patriots used later against the royal troops.

Upon two occasions, one as late as the spring of 1909, pieces of the statue have been found in Litchfield while excavating for foundations for new buildings. It is supposed that these pieces fell into the hands of Tories, who had buried them for safe keeping; but who were compelled to leave the relics when they, themselves, were obliged to flee from the wrath of their neighbors. The pedestal upon which the horse stood and a portion of the mane have for many years been in the possession of the New York Historical Society.

On August 27, 1776, was fought the battle of Long Island; and on the twelfth of September, a council of war was called by Washington which decided that the city was untenable and should be evacuated. The fort was dismantled, and on the fifteenth, the British occupied the city. Once more the banner of Great Britain flew over the ramparts of the fort, while the Parade was trodden by men in the red coats of the English, the kilts of the Highlanders, and the green coats of the German yagers. They all departed forever on November 25, 1783, when the American army of occupation resumed possession of the city and fort and flung the starry banner to the breeze amid the roar of cannon and the cheers of the multitude.

In the year 1786, Daniel Ludlow and Chancellor Livingston asked individually and separately permission to have "the care and use of the Bowling Green," which they agreed to beautify and keep in order without expense to the corporation. The chancellor had the bigger "pull" with the city authorities, and his request was granted *on the terms first proposed by Mr. Ludlow*.

On July 23, 1788, three days before the State convention ratified the Federal Constitution, the New York merchants, mechanics, and others all friends and ad-

The Fort and the Bowling Green 25

mirers of Alexander Hamilton—arranged a great procession in his honor, the first thing of its kind in the city. There were several floats manned by artisans of the various trades; but the most striking feature of the parade was a float drawn by six horses, carrying the replica of a 32-gun frigate, named the *Federal Ship Hamilton*, twenty-seven feet long, manned by Commodore Nicholson and thirty sailors and marines. The procession started from the Bowling Green and went to Bayard's farm in the vicinity of Grand Street, where a plentiful dinner was served to over four thousand persons. The ship must have been returned to the starting point and left there, as in the records of 1789, there appears the appointment of a committee "to remove the Federal Ship out of the Bowling Green, to have the fence repaired, and to let out the Bowling Green."

When the fort was demolished in 1787 and 1788 to make way for the Government House to be erected on its site, a number of interesting objects was disclosed; among others, the stone tablet of 1642, which had been placed upon the front of the church to commemorate its building by Director-General Kieft, and the vault containing the leaden coffins of Lord Bellomont, and his wife, which were identified by the silver plates. The bodies were removed to unmarked graves in St. Paul's churchyard, while the silver plates, at first intended for exhibition in a museum, went at last into the melting-pot, and were converted into spoons. (From the grave to the gravy, as it were.) The stone from the fort was used for the foundations of the Government House, while the earth was used for filling in the adjoining Battery Park.

It was intended that the Government House should be the residence of President Washington, but it was not

ready for his occupancy before the removal of the seat of government to Philadelphia. It was occupied by Governors Clinton and Jay; and later, when the State capital was removed to Albany in 1799, it was used as a custom-house. It is described as being two stories high with a portico before it covered by a pediment upon which were carved the arms of the State—the pediment being supported by four white Ionic columns. The house stood upon an elevation fronting Broadway, “having be-



GOVERNMENT HOUSE

fore it an elegant, elliptical approach, around an area of near an acre of ground, enclosed by an iron railing.”

In 1791, the street committee reported that the Bowling Green should be preserved and “that the fence should be raised in proportion to the regulating of Broadway.” In 1795, the park was set aside for the garden of the governor for the time being. On July eighteenth of the same year, its sanctity was invaded by a howling mob of indignant citizens, who there burned, to the strains of *The Carmagnole* the treaty with England, and the

The Fort and the Bowling Green 27

effigy of its negotiator, John Jay. Our people were at that time very French in their sympathies. In 1798, John Rogers was granted the use of the Bowling Green "on condition that he keep it in order and suffer no creatures to ruin it." It seems, therefore, that for some reasons the park was not a success as a garden for the governor's private use.

The State legislature of 1812 authorized the comptroller of the State to sell in fee simple the Government House and the adjoining grounds to the city of New York for not less than fifty thousand dollars. There was a proviso that the grounds should not be sold for the erection of private buildings or for other individual purposes; but the proviso was repealed, and the city's option to buy was limited to November 1, 1813. How and when the State obtained possession of this city property are not known; except, perhaps, as the inheritor of the province and by claiming that the fort and its appurtenances were *provincial* property, and not municipal. However, the city received a deed from the state on August 2, 1813, subject to a lease of the property to DeWitt Clinton and others, expiring on May 1, 1815. Some time during 1815, the Government House is said to have burned down.

The city divided the property into seven parcels, or lots, and these were sold on June 19, 1815. The purchasers probably bought on speculation, as all but one of the lots did not long remain in their possession but were transferred to others. This section was then the most fashionable in the city; and as the lots, with one exception, were thirty feet wide, and one hundred and thirty feet deep, it was not long before a row of elegant mansions occupied the site. The grandmother of one of the author's friends used to live in one of these houses, and she

used to tell how as a girl she went with the rest of her family to their summer house near Broadway and Fourteenth Street, and of the preparations made for weeks ahead for this summer flitting into the country.

When the Croton water was introduced into the city, the occupants of the houses fronting on the Bowling Green erected a fountain, consisting of a rough stone structure, over which the water was conducted by means of a pipe. The design was not one of beauty and called forth considerable adverse criticism from visitors from abroad.

And now Mr. Brown
Was fairly in town,
In that part of the city they used to call "down,"
Not far from the spot of ancient renown
As being the scene
Of the Bowling Green,
A fountain that looked like a huge tureen
Piled up with rocks, and a squirt between.

.

And he stopped at an Inn that's known very well,
"Delmonico's" once—now "Steven's Hotel";
(And to venture a pun which I think rather witty,
There's no better Inn in this Inn-famous city!)

JOHN GODFREY SAXE.

By 1850, fashion had left this neighborhood and business had crept in; and these mansions became the offices of several of the foreign consulates and of the great steamship companies, so that they became popularly known as "Steamship Row." These are within the recollection of some of our younger citizens. The national govern-

The Fort and the Bowling Green 29

ment bought the site for a custom-house, and held it for several years before beginning the work of demolition of the old mansions. The corner-stone of the building



"STEAMSHIP ROW" AND THE BOWLING GREEN

was laid October 2, 1902, and the building was opened for business in November, 1907. This beautiful and imposing building, designed by Cass Gilbert, cost the government about seven millions of dollars. Its front

is ornamented by a number of statues of famous individuals, and by four symbolic groups, the work of Daniel French, representing in marble, Europe, Asia, Africa, and America.

;

30

is of
uals
Fre:
Am

CHAPTER III

BROADWAY TO WALL STREET



FOLLOWING the custom of renaming which was introduced by the English, the Heere Straat of the Dutch became Broadway, even the Dutch calling it in their own tongue, *Breedeweg*. Many of the grantees of lots on both sides of the street were imbued by the spirit of land speculation which has distinguished the city ever since, and the constant changes in ownership of the lots show this speculative spirit. The authorities tried in 1676 to increase the occupancy of the vacant lots of the city by directing all owners of vacant lots or ruinous buildings to build upon the lots or improve them under penalty of seeing them sold at public auction. This was an exercise of the right of eminent domain which would have satisfied Henry George two centuries later.

At the time of the English occupation in 1664, the highway extended only as far as the wall; it took nearly a century more before it was extended to the Commons, and this upper section was called Great George Street. The surface of Manhattan was naturally rolling, and this early Broadway followed the inequalities of the surface at the top of the ridge which sloped to both rivers. The two

principal streets of the Dutch already mentioned were in fact, nothing but cow-paths over which the cattle were driven to and from pasture; this was pre-eminently so with Pearl Street, which was called *the* Cowpath.

BROADWAY

A cow-path only; yet in its birth,
It had the promise of its present worth:
For Nature had its course prescribed
Between the eastern and the western tide,
And man has learned, despite his bold persistence,
That Nature's law is best—"the line of least resistance."

In 1658, the inhabitants of Brower Street were directed to pave their street in order to facilitate traffic, as the street was almost impassable. This was the first street in the city that was paved, and in consequence it became known as Stone Street. Broadway was not paved until 1707, and then only from Trinity Church to the Bowling Green; at the same time the residents were permitted to plant trees in front of their lots. In 1709, the street was levelled as far as Maiden Lane. In 1691, an order was made concerning the paving of certain streets, among which we find: "Broadway, on both sides, ten feet, down to Mr. Smith's (opposite the Bowling Green) on the west side, and to Lucas Kiersted's on the other." Yet it is probable that the vicinity of the Bowling Green was not paved until 1747, when a committee was appointed to have so much of the street around the Bowling Green and the fence along the fort paved as they might see proper. The paving consisted of cobblestones, and extended only ten feet in front of the houses, the middle of the street serving as a gutter and probably being a quagmire in wet weather. The work fell upon the owners of

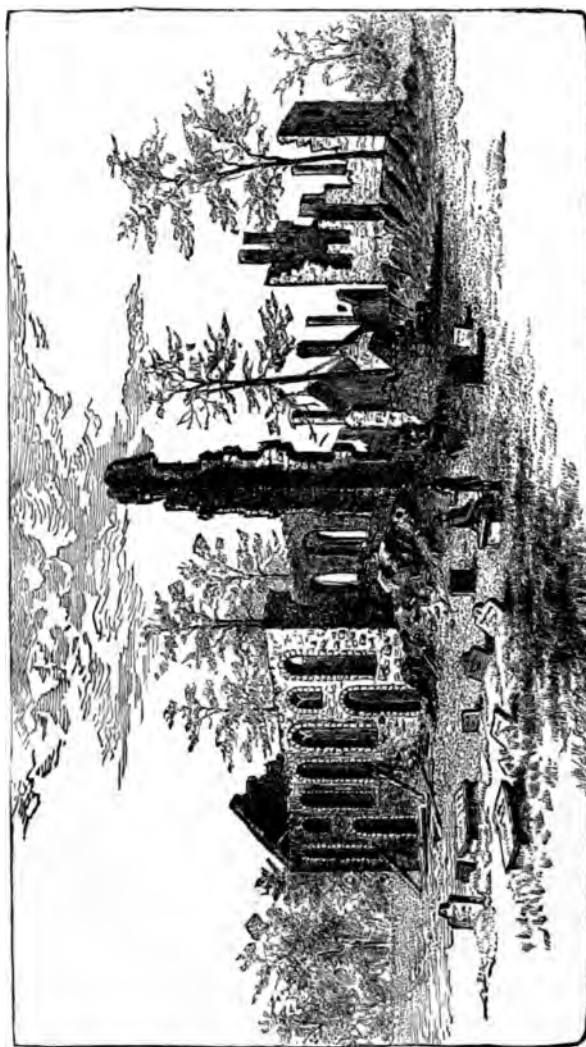


BROADWAY AND THE BOWLING GREEN IN 1835, SHOWING KENNEDY, WATTS, LIVINGSTON, AND VAN
CORTLANDT HOUSES

the lots, and in case of default in complying with the ordinance there was a fine of twenty shillings to be levied upon the recalcitrant householder.

Anything in the way of sidewalks was at first voluntary on the part of the property owners; they were called *strookes* by the Dutch. Sidewalks did not come in until 1790, and then were made of brick. New York was far behind the Quaker City in this respect, as shown by a remark of Dr. Franklin to the effect that a New Yorker could be known by his gait, in shuffling over a Philadelphia fine pavement like a parrot upon a mahogany table. A Philadelphia visitor about 1835 remarks then that New York's large flagstones and wide foot pavements surpass Philadelphia even for ease of walking, and the unusual width of the flagstone footways across the pebbled streets at the corners is very superior. It must have been a pleasure to him to get away from the possibility of stepping on a loose brick on a rainy day.

There seems to have been some difficulty in getting rid of the water on Broadway after a heavy rain on account of the configuration of the land. An early engineer proposed a scheme for lowering Broadway and diverting the surplus water into Blommaert's Vly and the Broad Street ditch; but the project did not meet with approval. In 1712, Broadway was levelled between Maiden Lane and the Commons. It is probable that the street had been regulated in the vicinity of the Bowling Green before this, possibly by the ordinance of 1691, quoted above. That the street had been cut down some six or eight feet was shown by an ancient house which formerly stood at Beaver Street and Broadway, whose foundations were left standing above the street after the cutting down. In 1760, a committee was appointed to regulate and pave Broadway between Dey and Divi-



TRINITY CHURCH AFTER THE GREAT FIRE.

sion (Fulton) streets; and after the Revolution, there were ordered surveys from Rector Street north preparatory to regulating and paving. In 1718 the first rope-walk in the city was established on the line of Great George Street, abreast of the Commons, between Park Place and Barclay Street; it is shown on the Montgomerie map of 1728.

In 1677, public wells, two of which were in the middle of Broadway, were established for the better protection of the city in case of fire. One of these wells, called "Mr. Rombout's Well," was situated near Exchange Place, the other, not far from it. The care of these wells was placed with a committee of the inhabitants of the vicinity, who were assessed for one half of their cost and maintenance. The water in the city was generally bad and scarce; though occasionally good sweet water was found, as at the famous "Tea Water Pump" at Pearl Street and the Bowery. Potable water from some of these good sources of supply was hawked about the streets, and sold to the inhabitants. The wells were abolished from Broadway in 1806.

The question of an adequate supply of good water arose as early as 1774, when Christopher Colles constructed a reservoir at public expense on the east side of Great George Street, between Pearl and White, then far out of town. Water was obtained from sunk wells and from the Collect, or Freshwater pond, on the site of the present city prison on Centre Street. The water was distributed through wooden pipes in 1776, but the supply was insufficient and the quality poor. The British took possession of the city immediately afterward, the plant fell into disuse, and the people returned to the ancient pumps and wells. In 1798, the question of getting a supply of water from the mainland of Westchester County was agitated, but the corporation was deterred

by the expense. Alexander Hamilton did not believe that the matter of water supply came within the province of the municipality so far as ownership and maintenance were concerned. Then the Manhattan Company was formed by Aaron Burr, whose charter gave the right of supplying the city with water and the further right to engage in the banking business. Colles's reservoir was utilized, and the old plan of wooden pipes was resumed; but water was both scarce and bad, and the company paid more attention to banking than it did to water and thus lost the confidence of the community, which soon voted the new plan a failure. When, in 1894, the excavations were in progress for the cable road of Jacob Sharp, some of the old wooden pipes were exhumed in Broadway. The great fire of 1835, entailing a loss upon the city of 648 houses and over eighteen millions of dollars, quickened the public interest in the water question upon which the citizens had voted "yes" at the previous spring election. Croton water was admitted into the city on July 4, 1842, and the event was celebrated on the fourteenth of October with the most imposing celebration which had yet graced the streets of the city.

In the Dutch days, no attempt was made at lighting the streets of the town at night; but in 1679 every seventh house was obliged to hang out a pole with a lantern and lighted candle on the nights when there was no moon; and at the same time a night watch was formed. The expense of the lights was divided among the seven householders adjacent to the lantern. In 1762, an act of the assembly gave authority to provide means of lighting the city, and in that year the first lamps and posts were purchased. In 1774, sixteen lamplighters were employed. In 1823, the Manhattan Gaslight Company was incorporated and permitted to light the city below Canal

Street. The gas pipes were laid on both sides of Broadway in 1825, and the lamps were lighted shortly afterward. This system still prevails throughout the city, though electric lighting has superseded gas in most of the important thoroughfares. Broadway, between Fourteenth and Twenty-sixth streets, was the first section of the city to be lighted with arc lights, December 20, 1880. About the same time, a high mast was erected in the middle of Union Square at the top of which was a cluster of electric lamps; but this plan of lighting the square was not a success.

The establishment of a meat market in the Bowling Green has already been described. It was still in use in 1702, as it was rented then for five years. About the end of the seventeenth century, a new plan was adopted by which the city was spared the expense of erecting the necessary market buildings. This was by the residents of a neighborhood petitioning for a market, for which they paid the cost of erection and maintenance and a rental to the city, which became the owner at the expiration of the lease.

In 1738, the inhabitants of the West Ward between Broadway and the Hudson petitioned for the erection of a market in Broadway, as they were so distant from the markets already established, and for the convenience of farmers and others who came from New Jersey and from up the Hudson. Upon permission being granted, they erected (1739) a market-house forty-two feet long and twenty-six feet wide in the middle of Broadway, "fronting the street in which the chief justice lives (probably Maiden Lane), and opposite to Crown (Liberty) Street." Mention is also made of a market having occupied this site in 1729. The market was called the "Oswego Market." In 1746, twenty-six feet were added to the south end of the building, and other additions were made later.

It enjoyed a prosperous existence for over thirty years, by which time Broadway had grown up and become one of the principal streets of the city. Many attempts were made to get the corporation to remove the market, taking up, as it did, so much of the highway that it interfered with traffic; but the corporation refused to act. At last the building was, in 1771, declared a public nuisance by the grand jury. They describe it as being one hundred and fifty-six feet long and twenty feet, three and one half inches wide.

The Common Council decided to defend the indictment and consulted two of the leading lawyers of the city, James Duane and Samuel Jones. The former declined to act as counsel and the latter gave it as his opinion that the city should submit. This the city at first declined to do, resolving to let the matter be decided by the court; but further reflection made them think differently, and they decided to move the market to another site. Several localities were suggested,—among others, the Commons,—and the Council finally settled upon the shore of the North River at the foot of Dey Street, where a new market-house was erected which subsequently became Washington Market (1812). At the time that the Oswego Market was removed from Broadway, the street was paved in that locality.

The market received its odd name from the fact that during the French and Indian War, Fort Oswego was considered the most important place within control of the English to withstand the encroachments of the French from Canada. The troops, provisions, and other supplies for the fort were all shipped from the river front near the foot of the present Cortlandt Street, a point which became known as the "Oswego Landing." The lane from the landing led up to the market, which thus adopted the

name of Oswego. It was also called the "Broadway Market," and the "Crown Market" from being abreast of Crown Street. After the removal of the market from the middle of Broadway in 1771, the residents of the vicinity felt the inconvenience of having no market near by, and so petitioned for the establishment of one on the corner of Broadway and Maiden Lane; their petition was granted, and the market established shortly afterward. It took the name of Oswego, but is better known as "Old Swago." It stood until 1811, when it was removed by aldermanic resolution, adopted May 6th of the same year.

The first attempt to clean the streets was made in 1696, when a contract was made at thirty pounds sterling a year. Before this, every householder had been obliged to keep the street clean in front of his own residence. These ordinances failed of effect; and in 1702, all the inhabitants were required to sweep the dirt into heaps in front of their doors on Friday morning and to have it removed before Saturday night under penalty of a fine of six shillings. The cartmen were obliged to carry away the dirt at three cents a load, or, if they loaded their own carts, at six cents; in the event of a refusal, they were subject to heavy fines. As late as 1800, the chimneys were swept by small negro boys who went their rounds at daybreak, crying: "Sweep, ho! sweep, ho! from the bottom to the top, without a ladder or a rope, sweep, ho!" with numerous variations. It was not until the days of Colonel Waring subsequent to January, 1895, that New York learned that its streets could be *cleaned* thoroughly and economically.

From the Dutch days down to 1825, there were no methods employed for removing the refuse and garbage from the houses. All such matter was thrown into the streets where it was disposed of by the hogs, which were

allowed to range the streets for that purpose, as the dogs used to do in Constantinople. It was estimated as late as 1820 that thirty thousand hogs roamed the streets of the city, and in Boston, Philadelphia, and other places, New York was a byword for filthiness. Notwithstanding the fatal visitations of the yellow fever and other diseases,—directly traceable to the festering masses of putrefying refuse in the city streets,—it was not until 1823 that the Common Council listened to the protests of the best citizens and directed that carts should be used to remove the garbage and that the swine should be captured and sent to the public pound. The men and boys of the streets offered such forcible resistance to the carts and to the attempt to arrest the hogs that the ordinance became a dead letter until several years later, when a proper public spirit of indignation against such antiquated methods was aroused, and the hogs were driven from the streets and the carts permitted to go unmolested.

Within the quarter century following the English occupation, the character of Broadway, at least on the west side and in the neighborhood of the Bowling Green, began to change; for several of the wealthy merchants erected their houses on Broadway, and it began to become a fashionable part of the city. It was customary in the old days for a merchant to live over his shop; but this was not so much the case in Broadway, of which it has already been said that it was remote from business. Both before and after the Revolution, William Street was the great dry-goods section, where the belles of those days purchased their materials, whose names and meanings are unknown to the present generation. There were amens, cordurets, camblets, callimancos, casserillias, durants, osnaburgs, platillas, ribdelurs, shalloons, ticklenburgs, weldbores, and half a dozen others. It was

not until about 1840 that Broadway got its share of this trade, due to the great fire of 1835, which swept away the whole business section east of Broadway and south of Wall Street—a trade that it kept for many years afterwards. But even as late as 1845, Broadway was not by any means the sole business street of the city, though rapidly becoming the fashionable one.

Of the character and number of the houses that stood on the west side of Broadway at the time of the Revolution, we have no positive knowledge; as everything, with three or four exceptions, was swept away by the great fire which obliterated that section immediately after the British occupation, September 21, 1776. An enumeration of the houses in 1744 shows there were 1141 in the whole city, of which 129 were on the west side of Broadway; but it must be remembered that even as late as the British evacuation in 1783, the street did not go much above St. Paul's. The lots on the west side all sloped down to the river, which at that time was about on the line of the present Greenwich Street. On the east side of the highway, the houses still continued to be of a meaner description.

At the end of the Dutch days, on the west side of the Bowling Green, were two taverns, one kept by Pieter Kocks, later, by his widow Annetje,—the other, by Martin Krigier. Both of them had been soldiers; and as their taverns were near the fort, their houses became very popular with the members of the garrison and also with the people who crossed the Hudson to attend to business on the Marketfield. North of these taverns were the house of Dominie Megapolensis, the house of the secretary of the Company, and the burial ground near the present Morris Street.

During the seventeenth century it was customary for

the European nations to allow citizens to fit out private armed vessels to prey upon the commerce of any nation with whom they might be at war. These privateers did not confine their attentions to the enemy's vessels; but as time passed, they became so bold that they attacked, captured, or destroyed any vessel that they thought worth while, no matter what flag it carried. If there were sufficient monetary or political influence, the letters of marque were easily obtained; so that privateers were soon numerous, and not a few became out and out buccaneers. The whole American coast was infested by them, and legitimate commerce was almost entirely wiped out. Many of the wealthy New Yorkers were backers of these enterprises, and even Governor Fletcher was so deeply interested as to call forth the denunciations of the better class of merchants. These had their effect upon the home government, and Fletcher was recalled in 1695. He was succeeded by Lord Bellomont, who came in 1698 with the avowed intention of suppressing piracy. New York was the rendezvous of these gentry; and it was no unusual thing to see them swaggering about the streets of the little town, armed with cutlass and pistol, resorting to the taverns and terrorizing the inhabitants. "Easy come, easy go," is a saying particularly applicable to money, and these privateersmen were liberal spenders; so that most of the gold and silver coin in circulation came from them. Much of this was of Arabian mintage, which the pirates obtained from their outrages in the Indian Ocean, where their headquarters were on the island of Madagascar. In fact, so supine were the governor and authorities that the town was at the mercy of these sea-robbers until Bellomont took vigorous measures to suppress them.

The plot of ground formerly occupied by the Kocks

tavern came into the possession of Admiral Sir Peter Warren, who erected upon it an elegant mansion, which passed later into the ownership of the Watts family. Captain Archibald Kennedy of the royal navy, at one time collector of the port, and later, Earl of Cassilas in the Scotch peerage, married Mary Watts, and thus came into possession of Number 1, Broadway, which, in consequence, became known as the "Kennedy house." Kennedy gave this house to his son; and during the ownership of both, it became the centre of the fashionable life of the city. General Charles Lee made it his headquarters in 1776, before his departure for Charleston, S. C.; Israel Putnam occupied it until the Americans were driven from the city, and Washington also made use of it during the same period. It escaped the great fire of September, 1776, and was occupied successively by Sir William Howe, Sir Henry Clinton, and Sir Guy Carleton as their city headquarters during the time they were British commanders-in-chief in America. It was from this house that the unfortunate André carried on his correspondence with Arnold, and it was here that he had his last interview with Clinton and received his final instructions before departing on his fatal journey to meet Arnold in September, 1780. One matter particularly impressed upon him by Clinton was that under no circumstances was he to go within the American lines; and it was the violation of this order by André that brought about his capture and death.

After the Revolution, the house was occupied by several leading citizens, among whom was Isaac Sears, the famous leader of the Sons of Liberty, who was popularly known as "King" Sears, and whose daughters were styled the "Princesses." While New York was the Federal capital, the Kennedy house was the residence of Don

Diego de Gardoqui, the Spanish minister. It then became a fashionable boarding-school for young ladies, to which the daughters of the city's best families were sent. It then passed into the possession of the wealthy banker, Nathaniel Prime; and after his death, it became the Washington Hotel, one of its guests being the great minister of Napoleon, Talleyrand, who, during his exile from France, sojourned here while in the city. The famous mansion was demolished in 1882 to make way for the Washington office building, erected by Cyrus W. Field, the layer of the Atlantic cable. Number 1, Broadway is remarkable in the fact that since the first grant of land was made of this plot in 1643, only three buildings have occupied it. The spot has been appropriately marked by a bronze tablet placed upon the building by the Holland Society.

At Number 3, lived John Watts, a member of the governor's council, a colonial judge, and the father-in-law of Archibald Kennedy. The site of Martin Krigier's tavern is at Number 9. It seems that about the year 1700, or a little earlier, John Hutchins erected a tavern on this site, moving from his place opposite the City Hall at Wall Street, corner of Broad, where he had conducted a most fashionable public house, the headquarters of the anti-Leislerians, for several years previously. In 1763, Mr. Steel advertises that he "has moved the King's Arms Tavern from opposite the Exchange [Broad and Pearl streets] to the Broadway, at the lower end, opposite the fort." The innkeepers of that time were in the habit of carrying with them the signs of their taverns if they had been popular ones. This practice has sometimes caused difficulty in identifying the sites of the old taverns and their owners. In 1766, we find in an advertisement that: "Concerts of Music are given by

Edward Bardin, innkeeper, at the King's Arms garden in the Broadway, three times a week in the evening, in a neat and commodious room in the garden; tickets 1s." The King's Arms, being so close to the fort, enjoyed great popularity during the Revolution and the days



THE KING'S ARMS, ATLANTIC GARDEN, IN 1765
(From Valentine's *Manual* for 1856)

preceding it, and was the headquarters of General Gage during the time he was commander-in-chief. It escaped the fire of 1776 and was continued as a hotel for many years afterwards, becoming the Atlantic Garden toward the end of its career, which terminated about 1860, when the property became a place for the storage of cars for one of the city lines.

The King's Arms is of special interest in connection with Benedict Arnold, whose quarters were in this building after his desertion of the American cause. The

patriots were very anxious to get possession of the traitor, and many schemes were proposed to accomplish this purpose. The most famous is that of Sergeant Champe of "Light Horse Harry Lee's" squadron of dragoons. Champe came to an understanding with his commander, and then deliberately deserted his colors in New Jersey, and made tracks for the nearest British outpost. His companions-in-arms were unaware of his project, and so pursued him with all the energy and rancor that could be displayed against a deserter, firing upon him, but luckily not hitting him. Thus pursued, he came well recommended into the enemy's lines, where he stated he wished to join Arnold's American Legion. He had an interview with Arnold, who enlisted him.

The watchful Champe noticed that Arnold was in the habit of walking in the garden of the King's Arms during the evening. The land sloped down to the shore of the Hudson, and a lane ran along the edge of the garden. Champe made his plans with his confederates, who were to come from the Jersey shore in the darkness, seize Arnold during his evening walk, and carry him by way of the lane to the waiting boat. The night for the enterprise arrived, and everything was in readiness; but Arnold did not come. The next day he sailed for Virginia on his ravaging expedition against Norfolk and Portsmouth, and Champe was obliged to go with him. The sergeant realized that his plan had failed and so took the first opportunity to desert the British colors and find his way back to his own. Lee brought him before the commander-in-chief who was cognizant of the scheme. Washington offered Champe a commission in the army, but at the same time advised him of the danger of accepting it and of being taken prisoner by the British, and the surety of his being summarily shot as a deserter

under such circumstances. He recommended Champe to move with his family from Virginia to Tennessee, promising to clear his name of the charge of desertion. Champe found the advice good, as the British under Cornwallis were then working their way up toward Yorktown, and the partisan Tarleton was appearing in the most unexpected places and at the most unlooked for times and making it exceedingly dangerous for any one in Virginia not well affected to the royal cause; so Champe migrated over the mountains into Tennessee, where his descendants may be found to this day.

In 1744, an ordinance was passed permitting the owners of property between Battery Place and Morris Street (though the streets are not named) "to range their fronts in such manner as the Alderman and Assistant [alderman] of the West Ward may think proper." The following year, it was ordered that a straight line be drawn between

"the house of Mr. Augustus Jay, now in the occupation of Peter Warren, Esq., to the north corner of the house of Archibald Kennedy, fronting the Bowling Green in the Broad Way, and that Mr. William Smith, who is now about to build a house (and all other persons who shall build between the two houses) lay their foundations and build conformably to the aforesaid straight line."

It is apparent that the owners of the property preferred to have their houses with fronts square to the side walls instead of on the slant, as compliance with this straight line ordinance required, and that they found complaisant advisers in the aldermen from that day to this. And how could aldermen fail to be obliging to such persons as owned property and lived here from the beginning of the eighteenth century well on toward the first quarter



BROADWAY AND BOWLING GREEN IN 1910
(Photo by Geo. P. Hall & Son)

of the nineteenth—Jays, De Peysters, Van Cortlandts, and others of the great names in our city history? Stand at the Bowling Green to-day and look along the west side of Broadway, and you will see a jog between each house and its next neighbor all the way up to the Stevens House at Morris Street; for the great engineering family lived here on Broadway, too, though their mansion has been a hotel this many a year.

In 1840, just after the great panic of 1837, the house and lot at Number 11, Broadway, sold for \$15,000, which was considered a low price, the lot being thirty-nine feet on Broadway, two hundred feet deep, and twenty-seven feet on Greenwich Street. At Number 19 was a boarding-house at which Daniel Webster often stopped during his visits to the city. Contiguous to Morris Street was the ancient Dutch burial ground, which was cut up into four lots, each twenty-five by a hundred, and sold in 1676 or 1677. The first builders dug up the bones from the unmarked graves. Number 39 was the McComb mansion, six stories in height, where Washington lived as president after his removal from Cherry Street. The rental was \$2500 a year.

We can imagine the great man strolling down Broadway for a breath of sea air from the Battery. On one of these occasions he was stopped at the corner of Broadway and Wall Street by an old Scotch nurse who presented to the president her infant charge, and asked him to bless the bairn, who had been named after him. Washington patted the boy on the head, asked his name, and passed on; but the youngster, who was Washington Irving, was proud of the fact and delighted in telling it in later years. Shortly before his death, Irving told the story to George Haven Putnam, then a small boy, and ended with a quizzical smile: "But you can't see now the spot on my head

that the president touched." Young Putnam went home with the story, and puzzled over its explanation until his father enlightened him with the remark that "Irving wore a wig." If Irving placed his hands on young Putnam's head, we have a line of apostolic suc-



THE BUNKER MANSION ON BROADWAY, 1830
(From Valentine's *Manual*)

cession by the "the laying on of hands" from the Father of his Country to the present.*

Number 39, and the adjoining house later became the Bunker Mansion House, which acquired considerable popularity for many years. At the corner of Rector Street, within the present grounds of Trinity, François Rombout, who was mayor in 1678, had a fine mansion with

* I had this story from Mr. Putnam himself.

grounds sloping down to the river. It was during his administration that Governor Andros granted to the city the monopoly of bolting flour and the exclusive right to export it, and forbade all other towns to engage in the trade under penalty of forfeiture of the flour.

Rector Street received its name from the fact that the first rector of Trinity, the Rev. William Vesey, used to live on this street; his name is also commemorated in Vesey Street on the north side of St. Paul's.

The houses on the east side of Broadway continued to be of an inferior character for many years, even after the city came back to the possession of the Americans. We have inherited a good many customs from the Dutch, and it may be worth while speculating whether our preference for the west side of thoroughfares running north and south, both for residence and business, is not one of them. The only building on the east of any consequence seems to have been a tavern erected by John Corbett in English days below Exchange Place. During the fire of 1776, a number of the houses were burned; they were replaced by others of an equally poor, or poorer, quality. The prices for which the properties sold are fair criteria of their quality; thus, the highest price is for a house on a lot fifty-five by one hundred and fifty feet, which sold in colonial days for £320.

After 1790, fine residences began to line this side of the street as well as the other, occupied by many of the leading merchants and professional men, among whom may be mentioned Alexander Hamilton and Dr. Charlton. In 1827, the Adelphi Hotel, six stories in height, was erected at the corner of Beaver Street. By 1825, like the opposite side of the street, many of these fine residences were given over to hotels, inns, and boarding-houses.

The most noted of all these boarding-houses in the

thirties was located at 61 Broadway and was presided over by Miss Margaret Mann, who was called familiarly "Aunt" Margaret. It was patronized largely by ladies, a sign of its eminent respectability, and it was also the stopping place in New York of such actors as Sinclair, the father of Mrs. Edwin Forrest, and Tyrone Power.

At one time Washington Irving lived at Number 16 Broadway with his friend Henry Brevoort at the house of Mrs. Ryckman. He often strolled up Broadway to visit his friend, the Widow Jane Renwick, who lived at the corner of Cortlandt Street, and whose son afterwards became a professor at Columbia College. Mrs. Renwick was "The Blue-Eyed Lassie" of Robert Burns's poem. When Irving returned from his diplomatic post in Spain in 1848, he was not very well off, and he took a desk in the office of his brother, John Treat Irving, a well-known lawyer. Mr. George P. Putnam wrote to Irving making him a generous offer in the matter of publication of his past and future works. Washington read the letter to his brother John, and in his pleasurable excitement kicked over the desk in front of him and cried: "There is no necessity, John, of my bothering further with the law. Here is a fool of a publisher going to give me a thousand dollars a year for doing nothing." Putnam remained Irving's publisher until the latter's death in 1859, during which time Irving received much more than the thousand dollars a year.

Among the other hotels which have enjoyed good reputations were Barnum's, called the Howard House in 1851, and the Tremont Temperance House at Number 110. In 1906, the small plot of ground 40 feet by 30, at the southeast corner of Wall Street, sold for six hundred dollars a square foot, the highest price ever paid up to this date (1910) for land upon the island of Manhattan.

In the thirties, each of the Wall Street corners was occupied by a fashionable tailor shop, the firms being Howard, Keeler & Scofield, and St. John & Toucey. Here were built clothes for the fashionable Knickerbocker youth and for their more sedate sires, which were of such excellent materials, and so well made that they lasted their wearers almost a life time. They were made pretty much on the same pattern so that there was a similarity of dress that became in time monotonous. An English visitor of 1905 remarked to me that, while the American men are, as a rule, well-dressed, their clothes look as if they had all been copied from the same model; and he more than hinted that we are all slaves of the prevailing fashion, as he observed it while walking with me on the great thoroughfare. This he thought strange in such a democratic and independent people.

Let us see what a contemporaneous writer says of Broadway in a mock series of notes for a longer article. It is headed:

THE STRANGER AT HOME; OR A TOUR OF BROADWAY

BY JEREMY COCKLOFT, THE YOUNGER*

Battery—flag-staff kept by Louis Keaffee—Keaffee maintains two spy-glasses by subscriptions—merchants pay two shillings a year to look through them at the signal poles on Staten Island—a very pleasant prospect. Young seniors go down to the flag-staff to buy peanuts and beer [not lager beer, but spruce beer] after the fatigue of their morning studies, and sometimes to play ball, or some other innocent amusement. —Return to the Battery—delightful place to indulge in the luxury of sentiment. How various are the mutations of the world! but a few days, a few hours—at least not above two

* *Salmagundi* Papers, No. xii.—Saturday, June 27, 1807. We omit the various digressions.

hundred years ago, this spot was inhabited by a race of aborigines, who dwelt in bark huts, lived upon oysters and Indian corn, danced buffalo dances, and were "lords of the fowl and the brute"; but the spirit of time and the spirit of brandy have swept them from their ancient inheritance.—mem. Battery a very pleasant place to walk on a Sunday evening—not quite genteel enough though—everybody walks there, and a pleasure, however genuine, is spoiled by general participation—the fashionable ladies of New York turn up their noses if you ask them to walk on the Battery on Sunday—quere, have they scruples of conscience, or scruples of delicacy? Neither—they have only scruples of gentility, which are quite different things.

Custom-house*—this place much frequented by merchants—and why?—different classes of merchants—importers—a kind of nobility—wholesale merchants—have the privilege of going to the city assembly!—Retail traders cannot go to the assembly.—Some curious speculations on the vast distinction betwixt selling tape by the piece or by the yard.—Wholesale merchants look down upon the retailers, who in return look down upon the green-grocers, who look down upon the market-women, who don't care a straw about any of them.—Custom-house partly used as a lodging-house for pictures belonging to the academy of Arts.

Bowling Green—fine place for pasturing cows—a perquisite of the late corporation—formerly ornamented with a statue of George the Third—people pulled it down in the war to make bullets—great pity; it might have been given to the academy.—Broadway—great difference in the gentility of streets—a man who resides in Pearl street, or Chatham Row, derives no kind of dignity from his domicil; but place him in a certain part of Broadway, anywhere between the Battery and Wall

* The old government-house facing Bowling Green, built for President Washington, afterwards the residence of Governors George Clinton and John Jay. See text.

Street, and he straightway becomes entitled to figure in the beau monde, and strut as a person of prodigious consequence!—Quere, whether there is a degree of purity in the air of that quarter which changes the gross particles of vulgarity into gems of refinement and polish? A question to be asked, but not to be answered¹.—New brick church!—What a pity it is the corporation of Trinity Church are so poor!—if they could not afford to build a better place of worship, why did they not go about with a subscription?—Even I would have given them a few shillings rather than our city should have been disgraced by such a pitiful specimen of economy.

Barber's pole; three different orders of *shavers* in New York—those who shave *pigs*;—N.B.—freshmen and sophomores,—those who cut beards, and those who *shave notes of hand*; the last the most respectable . . . and call themselves gentlemen; yea, men of honor!—Lottery offices—another set of capital shavers!—licensed gambling houses! good things enough, as they enable a few *honest industrious gentlemen* to humbug the people—according to law.—Messrs. Paff—beg pardon for putting them in such bad company, because they are a couple of fine fellows—mem. to recommend Michael's antique snuff-box to all amateurs *in the art*.—Eagle singing Yankee-doodle—N.B.—Buffon, Pennant and the rest of the naturalists all *naturalists* not to know the eagle was a singing bird.²

Cortlandt Street corner—famous place to see belles go by—

¹ The same idea is given in Halleck's poem *Fanny*.

He woke in strength, like Samson from his slumber,
And walked Broadway, enraptured the next day;
Purchased a house there—I've forgot the number—
And signed a mortgage and a bond, for pay.

The last removal fixed him: every stain
Was blotted from his "household coat," and he
Now "showed the world he was a gentleman,"
And what was better could afford to be.

² The reference is to the sign of the Paffs, which was the picture of an eagle hanging from a tree in front of their door.

quere, ever been shopping with a lady?—Oswego Market—looks very much like a triumphal arch—Saw a cartman driving full tilt through Broadway—run over a child—good enough for it—what business had it to be in the way?—Hint concerning the law against pigs, goats, dogs, and cartmen—inquiry into the utility of making laws that are broken a hundred times in a day with impunity;—my Lord Coke's opinion on the subject; my Lord a very great man—so was Lord Bacon: a good story about a criminal named Hog claiming relationship with him.¹—Hogg's porter-house;—a great haunt of Will Wizard.²—Hogg's a capital place for hearing the same stories, the same jokes, and the same songs every night in the year—mem. except Sunday nights; fine school for young politicians, too—some of the longest and thickest heads in the city come there to settle the nation.—Dey Street—ancient Dutch name of it, signifying murderer's valley, formerly the site of a great peach orchard; my grandmother's history of the famous *Peach war*—arose from an Indian stealing peaches out of this orchard; good cause as need be for a war; just as good as the balance of power.—mem.—ran my nose against a lamp-post—conclude in great dudgeon.

¹ The man Hog was convicted of heresy before Judge Bacon during the reign of Queen Elizabeth and was asked if he had anything to say why sentence should not be pronounced against him. "My lord," he answered, "you would not disgrace the family by sentencing me to death; for your name being Bacon and mine Hog, we must be related." "You are mistaken, my good man," returned the learned judge; "you are no relative of mine; for *Hog* does n't become *Bacon* until it is *smoked*"; whereupon he sentenced the unfortunate heretic to the stake at Smithfield.—AUTHOR.

² One of the pseudonyms under which the trio of authors of the *Salmagundi* papers—James Kirke Paulding and Washington and William Irving—wrote.

CHAPTER IV

FROM WALL STREET TO THE COMMONS



IN 1696, the provincial assembly passed a law that each parish in the province should induct a good Protestant minister and pay his salary out of the rates. Governor Benjamin Fletcher, who was an active churchman, construed this to mean that the Established Church of England should become the Established Church of the province; and, notwithstanding considerable opposition succeeded in carrying his point. Thus Trinity came into being in 1696. The church edifice was enlarged in 1737 and destroyed in the fire of 1776. It was not rebuilt until 1791; and the structure of that date stood until 1839-40, when the present beautiful structure was begun. A quarter of a century ago, visitors to New York went to the top of Trinity steeple in order to get a view of the city which lay at their feet; and the most prominent object to any one approaching the city from any direction was the church spire, which stood above all other objects. Now, Trinity has been so dwarfed and surrounded by immensely high buildings that you cannot see the steeple until you are at the church itself.

The church was usually spoken of in colonial days as "the English church;" and it was the fashionable church of

the city which was attended by the government officials and by many of the wealthy merchants, especially those of English birth or descent. The bouwerie of the Dutch West India Company, lying along the Hudson without the wall, had become the king's farm, and this was granted to the church by Queen Anne, a very devout churchwoman to whom so many of our colonial churches were deeply



BROADWAY AND CORTLANDT STREET
(From Valentine's *Manual* for 1859)

indebted. The ringing of Trinity's chimes upon holidays and upon New Year's eve has become one of the customs of the city; though the ringing in of the new year has in late years become something of a farce owing to the noise of the crowds who drown out the music of the bells with discordant blasts of tin horns. The edifice has been the recipient of many beautiful and artistic gifts from its wealthy parishioners—the reredos, the bronze doors, and the stained glass windows being particularly beautiful memorials.

The ground upon which the church and graveyard stand was the plot set aside as a garden for the Dutch Company. The latter has been a burial place ever since the closure of the old Dutch burying-ground in 1676 or 1677; and it has been stated that previous to 1822, 160,000 bodies had been interred within its limits, though there is reason to believe that this number is greatly exaggerated. The yard contains the remains of many of New York's citizens of the olden time; but burials below Canal Street were prohibited in 1813. Of the many prominent names which will attract a visitor to the graveyard, there are three that may be mentioned here. A stone sarcophagus on the left as we enter from Broadway contains the remains of Captain James Lawrence of the United States Frigate *Chesapeake*, which engaged in a fatal duel with the British frigate *Shannon* off Boston harbor on the first of June, 1813, during which Lawrence was mortally wounded. In his delirium, he kept shouting, "*Don't give up the ship!*" Three months later, Oliver Hazard Perry went into battle on Lake Erie with Lawrence's dying words upon his battle flag which he flew at the fore truck of his flagship, the *Lawrence*. When obliged to leave the sinking *Lawrence*, the battle flag went with him to the *Niagara*, from which he continued to direct the fight that ended in the destruction or capture of the British fleet.*

Within a few feet of each other along the southern wall of the graveyard, overlooking Rector Street, are the graves of Robert Fulton, the inventor of the steamboat, and of Alexander Hamilton, "The patriot of incorruptible integrity, the soldier of approved valor, the statesman of consummate wisdom, whose talents and virtues will be

* Perry's battle flag is one of the most cherished relics at the United States Naval Academy at Annapolis.

admired by grateful posterity long after this marble shall have mouldered into dust."

Another grave which attracts the attention of the romantically sentimental is that of Charlotte Temple, the heroine of an unfortunate eighteenth century love affair. In the upper part of the churchyard is a monument to the prison martyrs of the Revolution who died in New York. It is stated that this was erected by Trinity Corporation to prevent the city from cutting Pine Street through the graveyard, there being some law on the State's statute books to prevent the removal or injury of any public monument for purposes of highway improvement.

The southwest corner of Rector Street was occupied at one time by a German Lutheran Church, erected about 1710 by immigrants from the Palatinate who had been driven out of their desolated country by the armies of Louis XIV. The church was burnt in the fire of 1776, but was not rebuilt on this site. In 1809, there were some dissensions within the congregation of Trinity, and a number of the church members withdrew and erected a new church edifice on the site of the "Burnt Lutheran Church." This was Grace Church, which, owing to the upward trend of population, moved to Tenth Street and Broadway in 1846. During the time it was located at Rector Street, it was as fashionable as any church in New York, and its pews commanded higher rents.

The permission granted the inhabitants in 1707 to plant trees in front of their premises had in a few years resulted in the presence on Broadway of many beautiful trees which greatly enhanced the appearance of the street; mention of which is made by many strangers who visited the city. The English officers called the section in front of Trinity "The Mall." This was the place of the parade and the favorite lounging place of the officers and other

fashionables. Here the band played, and spectators of both sexes assembled on the east side of the street to listen to the music and to watch the fashionable world on promenade.

Just above Trinity, between the present Thames and Liberty streets, stood the mansion of Etienne De Lancey, erected about the year 1700. De Lancey was a French Huguenot who had been obliged to leave France at the time of the Revocation of the Edict of Nantes in 1685. He became a wealthy and influential merchant of New York and married into the Van Cortlandt family. One of his sons was James De Lancey, who became chief judge of the province after Morris had been removed by Governor Cosby, and lieutenant-governor under Clinton; another son was Peter, who inherited the mills on the Bronx River at West Farms, and a third was Oliver, who became a brigadier-general of Loyalists during the Revolution.

In 1754, Edward Willett, one of the tavern keepers of the city, was attracted by the commanding position of the house and its fine view of the Hudson and rented it from Lieutenant-Governor James De Lancey, the inheritor from his father Etienne, and opened it as a tavern under the name of the Province Arms. The *New York Mercury* of May 1, 1754, says: "Edward Willet, who lately kept the 'Horse and Cart Inn' in this city, is removed into the house of the Honorable James De Lancey, Esq., Lieutenant-Governor, at the sign of the 'Province Arms,' in the Broadway, near Oswego Market." The first event to start it on its long and brilliant career was a public dinner given in 1755 to the new governor, Sir Charles Hardy. Hardy had been appointed successor to Sir Danvers Osborne, who had committed suicide in the garden of John Murray's house, a short distance away on Broadway. The next public dinner of importance was that given in 1756, when

the lieutenant-governor of the province, the governors and students of the college, and many prominent merchants and others gathered here and marched to the laying of the corner-stone of King's College, the ancestor of Columbia University. At the conclusion of the ceremony, they all returned to the tavern where they partook of "a very elegant dinner."

In May, 1763, Mr. George Burns, another of the city's innkeepers, moved from the King's Head in Whitehall Street to the Province Arms, and the place became known as Burns's Coffee House, though still called the Province Arms and the City Arms. A month after Burns assumed control, a lottery was drawn in the tavern for the construction of a light-house on Sandy Hook. Being so close to the Mall in front of Trinity churchyard, the inn became the favorite resort of the English officers, and of the fashion of the city, sharing its honors, however, with another inn, also in a De Lancey house, the Queen's Head at Broad and Great Queen (Pearl) streets, better known as Fraunce's Tavern, and still in existence under the fostering care of the Sons of the Revolution. But it is as the headquarters of the Sons of Liberty that Burns's secures its historic interest and from the fact that notable meetings were held there marking the progress of revolutionary feeling.

The first of these meetings was on the evening of October 31, 1765, to take measures to controvert the Stamp Act, which was to go into effect the next day. The merchants of the city adopted the following resolutions: 1, To import no goods from England until the Stamp Act be repealed; 2, to countermand all orders already sent for spring goods; 3, to sell no goods from England on commission; 4, to abide by these resolutions until they shall be rescinded at a general meeting called for the purpose.

This constituted the first non-importation agreement; and when the news of it was sent to the other colonies, they lost no time in passing similar resolutions. In addition, a reward of five hundred pounds was offered for the detection of any villain who should make use of the stamped paper.

Another meeting took place on the twenty-fifth of November, when the citizens assembled to renew the non-importation agreement and to frame an address to be presented to the Assembly, complaining of the restrictions on trade, and especially protesting against the appeal from the decision of juries, which Colden was trying hard to introduce. This last, which was so objectionable to the inhabitants of 1765, has become an integral part of our jurisprudence; and he must indeed be a poverty-stricken client who does not in these days, either in a civil or criminal case, appeal from the decision of a jury.

The tavern was used for other purposes than for indignation or political meetings of the inhabitants. It was the meeting place of St. Andrew's and similar societies and of the governors of King's College, who probably found it more comfortable to transact business in its genial atmosphere with a bottle of good wine before them than in the cold halls of education. Musical concerts were also given within the walls of the tavern and in the extensive grounds attached. In 1777, these gardens saw a fatal duel between Captain Tollemache of the Royal Navy and Captain Pennington of the Coldstream Guards. The duel was with swords; and a few days after the hostile meeting, Captain Tollemache was buried in Trinity churchyard.

Burns remained here as host until 1770, when he was succeeded by Bolton, who came from the Queen's Head (Fraunce's); later, Hull assumed charge and had the honor



From a drawing by A. Dick

CITY HOTEL, TRINITY AND GRACE CHURCHES, BROADWAY, IN 1831

of entertaining John Adams and his colleagues, who were on their way to the first meeting of the Continental Congress in Philadelphia in 1775.

When the British left the city in November, 1783, John Cape leased the tavern and changed its name to the State Arms; and on the second of December a great entertainment was given in honor of Washington and the return of peace. It had various hosts until 1792, when the property passed out of the possession of the De Lanceys and into that of the Tontine Association, which demolished the old building and erected the City Hotel on the site, the first building in the city to be roofed with slate.

Dr. Francis says: "So long ago as 1802, I had the pleasure of witnessing the first social gathering of American publishers at the old City Hotel, Broadway, an organization under the auspices of the venerable Matthew Carey." Carey was from Philadelphia and one of the earliest publishers in the country.

Until the opening of the Astor House in 1836, the City Hotel was the most famous in the city; and it did not lose its prestige entirely until 1850, when it was torn down and replaced by a block of stores. In 1828, the building with lots, taking up the whole block between Thames and Liberty streets, was sold at public auction for \$123,000; in 1833 it was damaged by fire. The hotel was famous not only for its excellent fare and service, but more especially for the banquets that were held there and for the distinguished men who were entertained. During the War of 1812, on the twenty-sixth of December of that year, a great banquet, at which five hundred gentlemen sat down, was given to the victorious naval commanders, Decatur, Hull, and Jones. Later, others were similarly honored. On May 30, 1832, upon Irving's return from abroad, he was tendered a banquet with Philip Hone in the

chair. The latter describes it as "a regular Knickerbocker affair." On February 18, 1842, during the first visit of Charles Dickens to this country he was entertained at dinner at the City Hotel, with Washington Irving in the chair as toastmaster. There were no clubs in those early days; but the leading hotels, the City and Washington Hall, had their own coteries of evening visitors who gathered for social intercourse and for discussion of affairs in which they were interested. On June 17, 1836, Colonel "Nick" Saltus as president formed the Union Club, the first organization of its kind in the city, and quarters were engaged at 343 Broadway as a club-house, which was opened June 1, 1837. The Boreel building occupies the site of the old hotel at 115 Broadway, and upon its front an appropriate tablet has been placed by the Holland Society.

The City Hotel was conducted by Willard and Jennings, the former of whom was the general factotum of the establishment, while the latter looked after the provender and liquid refreshments, these latter being of incomparable quality and so famous that when the hotel was dismantled the bottles remaining in the cellar were sold at fabulous prices. Willard was never seen anywhere except in the hotel; he was a man of cheerful disposition and indefatigable energy and was possessed of so wonderful a memory that he remembered every traveller who had ever stopped at the hotel; and if the same guest were to visit the hotel again, Willard could at once greet him by name, tell where he was from, his business, and the room he had occupied. There is a well authenticated anecdote that when Billy Niblo moved from Pine Street and opened his suburban "Garden," many of his old customers were invited to be present at the opening. Willard neither accepted nor declined the invitation; and on the appointed evening a

number of the *bon vivants* of the town waited upon him to escort him to Niblo's. After bustling about and looking into all sorts of places for a while, he announced to his friends that he could not accompany them as *he had no hat*, and that some one had taken an old beaver which had been lying about for years and which he claimed was his. A hat was procured from Charles St. John, the celebrated hatter, whose place was directly opposite, and the party sallied forth with the best-known man in the city, who, strange to relate, would have been compelled to ask his way if he had gone more than a block from the City Hotel.

North of Trinity churchyard is the land formerly belonging to Jan Jansen Damen, two large portions of which came into the possession of Olaff Stevenson Van Cortlandt and Tunis Dey about the time that the English took the colony from the Dutch. The properties were divided up by the heirs of Van Cortlandt and Dey and sold as building lots, the first about 1733, and the latter about ten years later. Broadway was regulated from Dey to Fulton Street in 1760. In 1745, a lot at the southwest corner of Dey Street sold for seventy-five pounds; in 1770, a lot near this sold for three hundred and eighty pounds, which shows that the land in this vicinity was becoming more desirable and increasing in value; yet in 1785, just after the Revolution, Alderman Bayard sold full-sized lots at auction on Broadway below Fulton Street for twenty-five dollars; but the price being so low, the sale was stopped. Of the houses that occupied this land nothing is known, as they were destroyed in the fire of 1776. Those erected in their places at first were of a temporary character; but about 1790 the street began to be lined by elegant brick mansions, occupied by the wealthiest and most fashionable families of the city. Broadway held this character of a select, residential neighborhood until



From a photograph by Geo. P. Hall & Son
THE SINGER BUILDING

about 1840, when business began to creep in and the residents moved farther up the street and to other sections.

What a change has come over Broadway in the past twenty-five years! Where these private mansions of the wealthy once stood now rise those marvels of engineering skill, the great office buildings of the present. Here and there are a few of the more modest buildings still standing, sandwiched in between their huge neighbors and looking to the eyes of the present generation to be sadly out of place. It will not be long before they, too, disappear; and coming generations will scoff at the idea that upon these sites once stood three or four story buildings with extensive grounds sloping gently down to the bank of the Hudson. In this wilderness of brick and stone there still stand the oases of Trinity and St. Paul's churchyards, of such enormous value that the time may come when they, too, may have to go for sacrifice upon the altar of business. May that time be afar off—they are too rich in historic associations to be treated as ordinary land.

About 1874, there was established on the top of the Western Union Telegraph office at the corner of Dey Street, then one of the tallest and most prominent buildings in the city, a time ball, which was dropped at noon by means of telegraphic connection with the Naval Observatory in Washington. This was of inestimable service to the masters of vessels in the harbor, who were thus enabled to compare and adjust their ship chronometers; and the inhabitants of the city set their watches by it. It was no unusual sight to see hundreds of faces turned anxiously upward about twelve o'clock, their owners, with watch in hand, waiting for the signal of noon. The ball is still dropped, but the erection of so many high buildings between the harbor and the Western Union has lessened its value to mariners. In consequence, the Hydrographic

Office has been experimenting for some time with a time light to be placed on the tower of the Metropolitan Life building at Madison Square. As the light will be seven hundred feet above the street and will be visible for twenty miles, it is expected that the old usefulness of the time signal to mariners will be restored.

In 1840, there were still living several people who remembered when the site of St. Paul's, between Fulton and Vesey streets, was a wheat field. The church edifice, or more properly, chapel, was erected by Trinity Corporation upon part of its farm in 1765, and opened the following year when the Rev. Mr. Auchmuty preached the dedication sermon. It is one of the three buildings of a public, or semi-public, character, dating from pre-Revolutionary days that still stand upon the island of Manhattan.* During the great fire of 1776 it was saved by the comparative flatness of its roof which permitted people to stay upon it and extinguish the burning brands which otherwise would have set it on fire.

After his inauguration in 1789 Washington attended the service at St. Paul's given in honor of the occasion; and as Trinity was still in ruins, he continued to attend St. Paul's during the time New York was the capital of the country. Governor George Clinton of New York also attended services at the same place, and the pews occupied by these distinguished men on opposite sides of the church are appropriately marked by mural tablets, one bearing the coat of arms of the United States, and the other, that of New York. Within the churchyard the visitor can find upon the tombstones many of the historic names of the city. This yard is a favorite resort of many

* The others are Fraunce's Tavern at the corner of Broad and Pearl streets, and the Roger Morris, or "Jumel," mansion on Washington Heights.

of the women clerks of the down-town district who come here with book and luncheon on the hot days of summer and pass the noon hour in the shade and coolness of the trees.

Upon the Broadway front of the church is a mural tablet to the memory of that gallant Irishman and soldier, Major-General Richard Montgomery, one of the earliest victims of the Revolution. He was killed in the assault upon Quebec, December 31, 1775. His body was recovered by the British commander, Sir Guy Carleton, and buried with appropriate honors. In 1818, the State of New York caused his remains to be removed to St. Paul's from Quebec with high honors, and the United States erected the tablet. Montgomery had been an officer of the British army and had been at the siege of Quebec under Wolfe. His prospects of advancement being poor, he resigned from the army and came to America, first settling at Kingsbridge. He married Janet Livingston, and thus became allied with one of the most powerful families of the province. At the outbreak of the Revolution he was made a brigadier-general and was ordered as second in command to Schuyler in the Canadian expedition of 1775. Owing to Schuyler's illness, the command devolved upon Montgomery, who was made a major-general before the fatal assault upon the citadel of Quebec. Upon the bold promontory of Cape Diamond, one can read from the river St. Lawrence a sign maintained by the Canadians, "Here Montgomery fell, December 31, 1775."

On the east side of the thoroughfare above Wall Street, the same conditions prevailed as below the latter street. Among the hotels were the Tremont Temperance House at Number 110, the New York Athenæum established in 1824 at the corner of Pine Street, and the National Hotel



From an etching by Eliza Greator

ST. PAUL'S CHAPEL IN 1875

established in 1825 at Number 112, corner of Cedar Street. The name of William Cullen Bryant is attached to the highway in the fact that in his earlier days he edited the *New York Review and Athenæum*, whose office was in the building at the corner of Broadway and Pine Street, and for fifty-two years he was the editor of the *New York Evening Post*, located in its later days and at present at the corner of Fulton Street and Broadway.

The Equitable Life Insurance building, opposite Trinity, may be considered as the pioneer of the modern high office buildings. It was erected in 1870, and for many years afterwards the United States Weather Bureau had its quarters on the roof. In the course of time, the building was over-topped by its neighbors, and the bureau found lodgment in the tower of the Manhattan Life Insurance building at a height of three hundred and fifty-one feet above the street. In 1887, several additional stories were added to the Equitable Building.

The earliest printing-press in the city was set up in Hanover Square, and here Gaines, Weymouth, and Rivington located and issued their journals. Among earlier publishers and booksellers in the thirties was Jonathan Leavitt, in the two story building at the corner of Broadway and John Street. Leavitt's brother-in-law was Daniel Appleton, who came from the dry-goods trade to take care of the wholesale part of the book business, and who, in 1825, started at 200 Broadway the great publishing house which bears his name. T. & J. Swords were "the ancient Episcopal publishers in Broadway," whose imprint may be found as early as 1792. Elam Bliss catered to the reading public from his shop on the site of the Trinity buildings and was the publisher of the *Talisman*, the first of the annuals, whose editors were Bryant, Verplanck, and Robert C. Sands. G. & C. Carvell, the

English successors of the more famous Eastburn, were on the corner of Wall Street and Broadway and had the most extensive retail trade in the city, their place being the resort of the literati equally with that of Bliss on the opposite side of the street. On the first of January, 1833, the first number of the *Knickerbocker Magazine* was issued from its office on Broadway under the editorship of Charles Fenno Hoffman, to whose sister Washington Irving was engaged to be married; her untimely death and the grief of it kept Irving a bachelor all his life. Hoffman was editor for a few months only, giving up the position on account of ill health and being succeeded by Lewis Gaylord Clark, who conducted the magazine for over a score of years.

In *Jones and Newman's Pictorial Directory of New York*, 1848, the following booksellers are given on Broadway: east side, D. Appleton & Co., 202; Bangs, Richards & Platt (auctioneers), 204; Stringer & Townsend, 222 (all these below the Park); and William Rudde at 322 whose sign reads "Homeopathic Medicines and Books." On the west side were Stanford & Swords, 139; G. P. Putnam, 155; John Wiley, 161; Cooley, Keese & Hill (auctioneers), 191; Leavitt, Trow & Co., at the same number; Mark H. Newman & Co., 199; Clark, Austin & Co., 205; Charles S. Francis & Co., 253; Carter & Brothers, 285; and Beraud & Mondon, 315, immediately south of the entrance of the New York Hospital. The picture of their place of business reads "Publishers of Foreing Books," probably a misspelling on the part of Jones & Newman. The names of many of these booksellers still appear in New York firms.

In the *Croaker Papers* (1819) by Halleck and Drake, we run across several Broadway notables in one verse of the *Ode to Fortune*.

The World's Greatest Street

The horse that once a week I ride,
At Mother Dawson's eats his fill;
My books at Goodrich's abide,
My country-seat is Weehawk hill;
My morning lounge is Eastburn's shop,
At Poppleton's I take my lunch,
Niblo prepares my mutton-chop,
And Jennings makes my whiskey-punch.

Robert Dawson was the keeper of a livery stable at Number 9, Dey Street, just off Broadway; A. T. Goodrich & Co. were booksellers at the corner of Broadway and Cedar Street, who kept a popular circulating library; James Eastburn & Co. were publishers and booksellers at the corner of Broadway and Pine Street, whose "rooms" were the favorite resort of men of letters and of leisure; Mrs. Poppleton kept a fashionable confectionery shop at 206 Broadway; Niblo was then at William and Pine streets, and Chester Jennings was mine host of the City Hotel. Another popular shop was that referred to elsewhere by the poets as "Cullen's Magnesian Shop." It was located at the corner of Park Place and sold ice-cream and soda-water; it was the most highly embellished shop of its kind in the city.

During the first decade of the nineteenth century, James Sharpless, the English portrait painter, was to be seen on Broadway; and at a later period, John Trumbull, the distinguished American historical painter. One of the "roasts" administered by the *Croakers* was against Trumbull's famous picture of the *Signing of the Declaration of Independence*, the particular object of the attack being the "woodiness" of the Signers, all drawn, apparently, whether seated or standing, from the same model.

Secretary Van Tienhoven's plantation lay above Maiden Lane to a point about midway between Fulton

and Ann streets, and comprised about sixteen acres of land. It was decreed in 1674 that the process of tanning constituted a nuisance, and all engaged in that industry were required to move their pits beyond the city wall. Within a year or two, four shoemakers who did their own tanning bought what was virtually Van Tienhoven's old grant, which became known in consequence as the "shoemakers' land." In 1696, Maiden Lane was regulated, and the land of the shoemakers was cut up into one hundred and sixty lots. Eventually, they had to move their business to the neighborhood of the Freshwater pond and to Beekman's swamp, at which latter place are gathered the dealers in hides and leather of the present.

In an advertisement of 1763, notice is given that "The Bake House at the corner of John Street is for sale; it has a bolting house and a new cistern annexed, and is for sale by G. Van Bomel." When, in 1775, at the corner of Broad and Beaver streets, Marinus Willett stopped the British soldiers from removing the arms, he mounted the first cart and drove to the place of Abraham Van Wyck, a staunch Whig, who kept a ball-alley at the corner of John Street and Broadway and deposited the captured arms in Van Wyck's yard. This was a favorite place with the Sons of Liberty; later, when the Hearts of Oak were formed, the arms were used for equipping these rather irregular militia. An advertisement of 1769 reads: "Mary Morcomb, mantua maker from London, at Isaac Garniers, opposite to Battoc Street in the Broadway, makes all sorts of negligees, Brunswick dresses, gowns, and other apparel of ladies, also covers Umbrellas in the neatest manner."

For many years after the Revolution, New York had visitations of that dread West Indian disease, yellow fever. When the fever was in the city the residents used to flee

to their country places, to Greenwich, or to other suburban villages. There were epidemics in 1791, 1795, and 1798, this last being the most virulent and carrying off 2086 persons, exclusive of those who fled from the city. The population at that time was fifty-five thousand. During the height of the disease the churches were closed, business was at a standstill, and the banks moved their offices to Bank Street (whence the name) in Greenwich Village. The post-office was removed to the house of Dr. James Tillary on the corner of Broadway and Wall Street, and the citizens came from their retreats in the country between the hours of nine A.M. and sundown, during which time physicians said it was safe to visit the city. There were several outbreaks of fever in later years, but the establishment of the quarantine at Staten Island in 1801 has for many years effectually prevented anything but sporadic cases.

A visitor of 1845 speaks of the noise and confusion on Broadway at that time. In the writer's boyhood, it was almost as much as his small life was worth to cross Broadway below Fulton Street. I think the truck drivers purposely went out of their way to enjoy the sights along the great thoroughfare and to show to pedestrians and their fellow drivers and those on the buses their capabilities in the way of what Mrs. Gamp would have called "langwidge," when their progress was blocked by other carts. So dangerous was the passage at Fulton Street, although there were in those days no surface cars to increase the difficulties of getting across, that an iron bridge called the Loew bridge, was erected at this point across Broadway. It was completed in May, 1867; but pedestrians preferred the dangers of the street to the task of climbing the stairs—this was before the days of the elevated railroads—and so the bridge was removed in 1868. The widening of other

streets convenient to the waterfront, and the establishment of the "Broadway Squad" of police, six footers, every one of them, and the present traffic squad have lessened the dangers to a minimum; though it is still difficult for him who is not born a New Yorker, or who has not been *caught* early and learned the ins and outs of metropolitan



THE LOEW BRIDGE AT FULTON STREET AND BROADWAY

life, to cross Broadway between the Bowling Green and Manhattan Street.

Broadway has been the favorite route of parades and processions from the earliest times until within the last decade. We have already mentioned Colve's march to the fort in 1673, the evacuation of the city by the British in 1783, and the Hamilton parade of 1789. Washington Irving gives in his amusing *Knickerbocker's History of New York* the following description of the gathering of Stuyvesant's warriors for the attack upon the Swedes on the Delaware:

But I refrain from pursuing this minute description, which goes on to describe the warriors of Bloemen-dael, and Weehawk, and Hoboken, and sundry other places, well known in history and song—for now do the notes of martial music alarm the people of New Amsterdam, sounding afar from the walls of the city. But this alarm was in a little while relieved, for lo, from the midst of a vast cloud of dust, they recognized the brimstone-colored breeches and splendid silver leg of Peter Stuyvesant, glaring in the sunbeams; and beheld him approaching at the head of a formidable army, which he had mustered along the banks of the Hudson. And here the excellent but anonymous writer of the Stuyvesant manuscript breaks out into a brave and glorious description of the forces, as they defiled through the principal gate of the city, that stood by the head of Wall-street.

First of all came the Van Bummels, who inhabit the pleasant borders of the Bronx. . . . Close in their rear marched the Van Vlotens, of Kaatskill. . . . After them came the Van Pelts, of Groodt Esopus. . . . Then the Van Nests, of Kinderhoeck. . . . Then the Van Higginbottoms, of Wapping's creek. . . . Then the Van Grolls, of Anthony's Nose. . . . Then the Gardeniers, of Hudson and thereabouts. . . . Then the Van Hoesens, of Sing Sing. . . . Then the Couenhovens, of Sleepy Hollow. . . . Then the Van Kortlandts, who lived on the wild banks of the Croton. . . . Then the Van Bunschotens, of Nyack and Kakiat. . . . Then the Van Winkles, of Haerlem. . . . Lastly came the KNICKERBOCKERS, of the great town of Scaghticoke. . . . These derive their name, as some say, from *Knicker*, to shake, and *Beker*, a goblet, indicating thereby that they were sturdy toss-pots of yore; but in truth, it was derived from *Knicker*, to nod, and *Boeken*, books; plainly meaning that they were great noddors or dozers over books—from them descends the writer of this history.

Such was the legion of sturdy bush-beaters that poured in at the grand gate of New Amsterdam; the Stuyvesant manuscript indeed speaks of many more, whose names I omit to mention, seeing it behooves me to hasten to matters of greater



From the drawing by J. W. Hill

THE VIEW FROM THE STEEPLE OF ST. PAUL'S CHAPEL, 1849

moment. Nothing could surpass the joy and martial pride of the lion-hearted Peter as he reviewed this mighty host of warriors, and he determined no longer to defer the gratification of his much-wished-for revenge upon the scoundrel Swedes of Fort Casimir.*

Among the parades which have taken place since 1800, we may mention the Hudson bi-centenary in 1809, the reception to Lafayette in 1824, that in honor of the revolution in France in 1830, the admission of Croton water in 1842, the reception to the Hungarian patriot Kossuth in 1851, the processions in honor of Alfred Edward, Prince of Wales (the late Edward VI.) and of the first Japanese embassy in 1861, the German parade in 1872 at the conclusion of the war between Prussia and France, the Washington centenary of 1889, and the Columbus parade of 1892 in commemoration of the four hundredth anniversary of the discovery of America. Among the funerals, some of them actual and some commemorative, have been those of Hamilton in 1804, Montgomery in 1818, André in 1821, when his remains were removed from Tappan to England, President Monroe in 1835, President Harrison in 1840, President Taylor in 1850, Henry Clay and Daniel Webster in 1852, General Worth in 1857, President Lincoln in 1865, General Grant in 1885, and Governor and Vice-President George Clinton in 1909, when his body was brought back to the state for which he did so much after its century-long rest in the cemetery at Washington, where he had died while vice-president. In the older days, there were parades every year upon the Fourth of July and upon Evacuation Day, November twenty-fifth. In war times there have been

* The etymology of the names and the description of the peculiarities and characteristics of this valiant army of Dutchmen are too long to be given here, but they are highly amusing and well repay reading.

the departure of the troops and their return, and innumerable minor parades; but we must not leave out the great parades of the merchants and business men of the city at the time of presidential elections within the last twenty years, when as many as one hundred thousand men, not soldiers, marched from the Bowling Green to Madison Square. The last great parade was the reception tendered to ex-President Theodore Roosevelt on June 18, 1910, upon his home-coming after a year spent in Africa and Europe.

The growth of the city in area and population has caused the route of the great processions to be changed to the upper part of the city from One Hundred and Tenth Street by way of Central Park West, and Fifth Avenue to the Washington Arch at Fourth Street. Now, Broadway is used once a year (and it nearly always rains) for the annual parade of the Old Guard; and there is a parade nearly every day in the year of strange looking people, with peculiar dress and language, with multitudinous children and boxes and bundles, finding their way from Ellis Island to the tenements of the city—later, to become citizens of the Great Republic and to add to its wealth and glory.

CHAPTER V

THE COMMONS, OR FIELDS



PROBABLY no piece of ground in the city of New York has been the scene of more historical happenings than the City Hall Park. One historian of the city has said: "What Faneuil Hall was to Boston, was the Commons of New York—the gathering place of the patriots, the cradle of Liberty."

In the old Dutch days, it was an open and waste tract of land, which, being level, was called by them the *Vlacte*, or *Flat*. It began as a common cow pasture to which the cattle of the inhabitants below the wall were driven daily. It was then almost square in shape, lying between Ann Street on the south and Chambers Street on the north, with Broadway and Nassau Street as its western and eastern boundaries. The Collect pond with the surrounding land, lying north of the Flat, was also common property, but was not included in the Fields. It must be remembered that the Fields were in use long before the boundary streets mentioned above existed, even as lanes.

From the head of Great George Street a road found its

way to the Bowery Lane along the southern and eastern sides of the Fields—this was the *Heerewegh* of the Dutch. This road, which afterwards became Chatham Street and Park Row, was the ancestor of the Boston Post-road, or the Great Highway to Boston. In the time of Governor Dongan, the road was laid out diagonally across the Fields, and the triangular southern section thus cut off was appropriated by the governor for his own use in 1686. It was used later for many years as a place of amusement and was called the Vineyard.

The part left of the Fields was triangular in shape



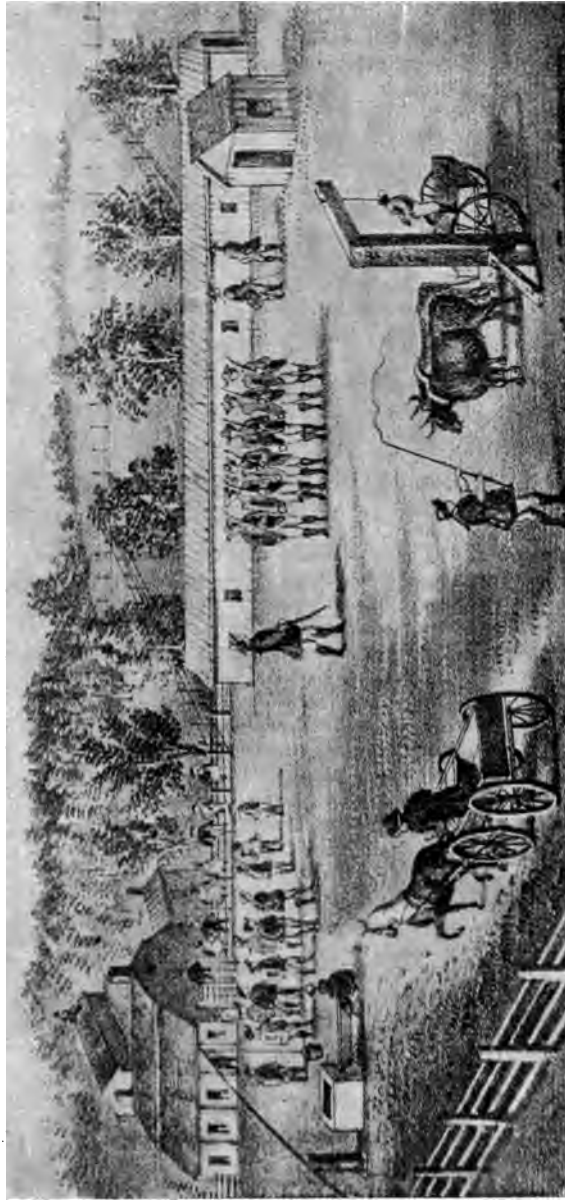
The Collect

and was bounded by Broadway, Chambers Street, and Chatham Street. When the Bowling Green was enclosed in 1732, the Fields became the open-air meeting-place of the inhabitants of the city, and to it were transferred the bonfires, the patriotic celebrations of the King's birthday, Guy Fawkes's Day, and other holidays, the indignation meetings, Maypole dances, and similar occurrences which had been held in the Bowling Green.

In his novel of *Satanstoe*, Cooper gives an account of the celebration upon the Fields of the old Dutch holiday of Pflingster, with its games, its booths, and the freedom allowed on that day to the negro slaves. But Pflingster and New Year's day and the other celebrations

of Dutch ancestry, with the exception of Christmas, St. Nicholas's Day, have fallen into disuse, chiefly through the fact that some of them degenerated into orgies. The change in our population from Dutch and Knickerbocker about the middle of the last century may also have affected the observance of these ancient holidays. It is a curious fact that Christmas, the great Christian holiday, when "good will toward men" is shown principally in the giving of presents to relatives and friends, should redound to the benefit of the Hebrews, as most of our great department stores are owned by people of that race. It must be said, however, that the practice of gift-giving at that joyous period of the year is not limited to any race or creed. The observance of the Christmas holidays along the "Great White Way" would, I suspect, astonish the ancient Romans, could they be present, to see how much further the moderns have gone in celebrating their pagan feast of Saturnalia, from which our Christmas is derived.

When the Dutch fleet appeared off the city in 1673 and demanded its surrender, the vacillating conduct of the English commander, Captain John Manning, moved the Dutch admirals to energetic measures. Six hundred troops under Captain Anthony Colve landed on the island north of the wall and marched to the Fields, where they encamped and prepared to advance upon the city. The terrified English commander sent three agents to parley with Colve; but as they had nothing definite to offer in the way of terms, Colve kept two of them as hostages and sent the third with a peremptory message to Manning to surrender the fort within a quarter of an hour. The messenger, Captain Carr, thought more of his own safety than he did of delivering the message, and so, having gained the city within the gate, got away

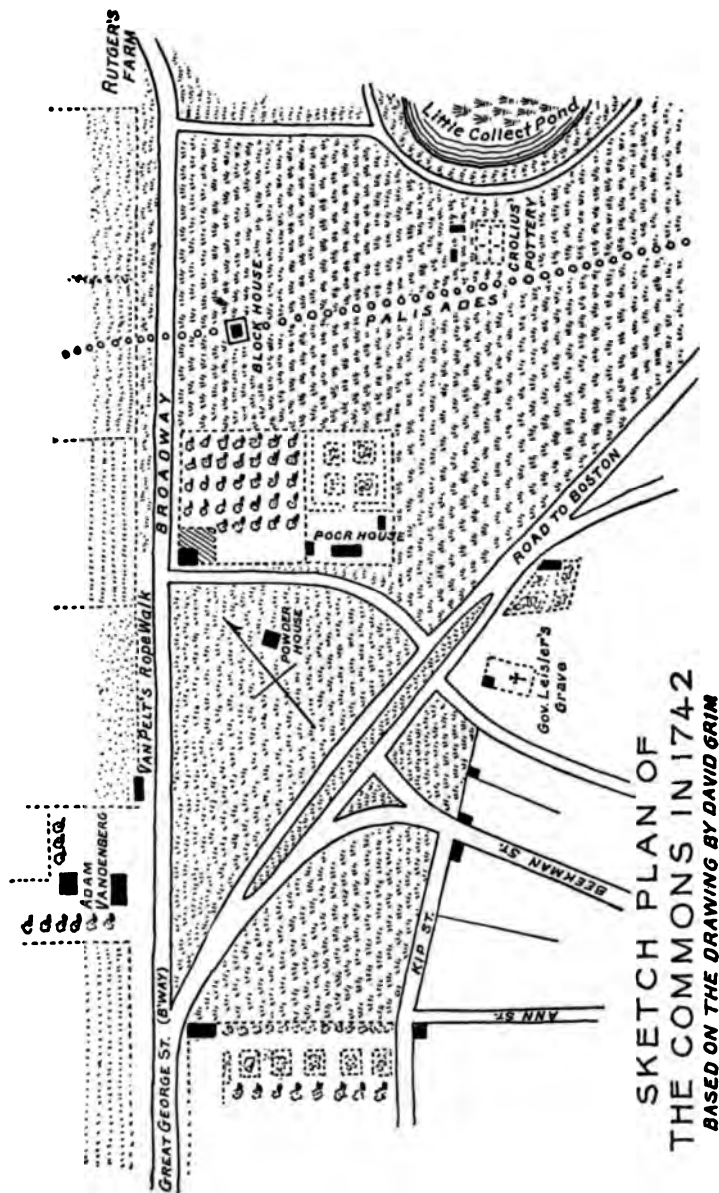


THE EXECUTION OF A NEGRO ON THE COMMONS
(Redrawn from an old print)

from the island as quickly as he could. At the end of the quarter hour, a Dutch trumpeter was sent for an answer to the summons to surrender and was told that none had been received. "This is the third time they have fooled us," exclaimed the exasperated Colve; "they shall fool us no more—march."

The Dutch at once proceeded down Broadway through the land gate without resistance; but as they approached the fort, they were met by a messenger from Manning, offering to make a full surrender if the garrison were allowed to march out with the honors of war. This the Dutch agreed to; but it is greatly to their discredit that they did not keep to their bargain, for a number of the English soldiers were seized and imprisoned, their baggage plundered, and many of them were sent away in the Dutch ships which also carried their unfortunate commander. Manning was tried by court-martial in 1674, after the English recovery of the province, on charges of cowardice and treachery. His defence was a good one; but he was convicted and sentenced to death, commuted on account of his influence at court to having his sword broken over his head by the public executioner in front of the fort and to be incapable of holding any civil or military position under the crown. It paid to have "pull" in those days as well as in these.

Under the governorship of Colve, everything assumed a military character, as the Dutch were afraid the English, smarting under the loss of this valuable province, would make a determined effort to recover it. The forts and palisades were repaired and strengthened, and the Fields became the place of general drill and parade. The city gates were locked every night and the keys given to the officers of the fort, while a patrol of six burghers guarded each gate during the night. At sun-



SKETCH PLAN OF
THE COMMONS IN 1742
BASED ON THE DRAWING BY DAVID GRIM

rise, the gates were unlocked by the *schout* and the keys returned again to the fort.

It was here on the lower end of the Fields, in full view of his own country-house, that Jacob Leisler and his son-in-law Milborne were executed on a gallows especially erected for the purpose. The day was in May, 1691, and a cold, drizzling, spring rain prevailed—a fitting day for such a fell purpose.

The place of public execution was removed from the vicinity of the fort to the Fields in 1725, and a gallows stood until 1755 not far from the corner of Chambers and Chatham streets. Many of the victims of the negro plot of 1741 were executed here, some of them being burned to death. A powder-house was the first public building on the Commons—a safe place, as it was so far removed from neighbors in the event of an explosion. It was placed where the old Hall of Records stood for so many years, opposite the Brooklyn Bridge, but it was removed in 1728 to an island in the Collect. In 1742, Joseph Paulding leased a part of the Fields and built a large brick-kiln, the clay being dug out from the land near the Collect. There were also several kilns erected for the burning of oyster shells for lime.

In 1734, the first poor-house was erected on the site of the present county court-house. It was forty-six feet long, twenty-four feet wide, and two stories high, with a cellar—all of gray stone. It was furnished with spinning-wheels, leather and tools for shoemaking, knitting needles, flax, etc., for the employment of the inmates. All paupers were required to work under penalty of mild punishments, and parish children were taught the three "R's" and employed at useful labor. The house was also used for the correction of unruly slaves.



THE PROVOST BRITISH PRISON

A vegetable garden was laid out near the house, and the inmates cultivated it for the use of the institution.

The Bridewell, a prison for vagrants, for those guilty of minor offences, and for those awaiting trial, was erected in 1775, just previous to the Revolution. It stood facing Broadway between that thoroughfare and the west wing of the City Hall. It was a two story building of gray stone; and at the time of the capture of Fort Washington in November, 1776, it was still unfinished, the windows being unglazed, and there was nothing to keep out the cold except the iron bars. Into this cheerless and uncomfortable building over eight hundred of Magaw's captured garrison were thrust on the day of their capture, November sixteenth, and left three days without food or fuel. It was used throughout the Revolution as a prison for American prisoners. The land upon which it stood had been purchased in 1770 by the Sons of Liberty for the erection of a liberty-pole. After the Revolution, the title to the land was still vested in John Lamb and others, who, upon being asked by the city what he would sell for, replied, "For the cost, eighty dollars, and the interest." The city agreed, but the purchase was never consummated. The Bridewell was demolished in 1838, and the stone of which it was built was used in the Tombs prison, then in course of construction.

A more famous, or rather, infamous, building than the Bridewell also stood in the Commons, northeast of the City Hall. The old City Hall in Wall Street (erected in 1699) had been used as a jail and debtor's prison. Its place was taken by the New Jail, erected in the Commons about 1759, as in April, 1758, there appears the published notice of the drawing of a lottery to build it. During the Revolution, it contained the

office of the Provost-Marshal Cunningham, and thus obtained the title of the "Provost" prison. Here were confined the officers of the American army and any of the leading patriots from civil life who were so unfortunate as to fall into the hands of the British. The indignities and privations inflicted upon his unhappy prisoners by Cunningham and the commissary of pris-



From the drawing by F. B. Nichols

THE HALL OF RECORDS

oners, Loring, constitute the most horrible chapter of the Revolution.

Cunningham boasted openly that he had killed more enemies of the king than the armies of Howe, Clinton, Burgoyne, and Cornwallis combined. If his victims were not killed outright, and it is stated that many of them were deliberately starved and poisoned, they were so debilitated, and their constitutions so shattered by

their hardships that they were physically ruined for both civil and military life. This was done with several objects in view. In the event of their deaths, Cunningham and his creatures continued to draw the allowance for their maintenance; the course of inhuman cruelty drove some of the prisoners into the British ranks in order to escape the daily tortures inflicted upon them, the British holding out enlistment as an alluring bait and surcease to their sufferings; or, if they did not die or enlist, then in the event of their exchange their harsh treatment and lack of food had rendered them worthless as soldiers. Of over three thousand Americans captured at Fort Washington on November 16, 1776, but eight hundred were reported as living when an exchange of prisoners took place on May 6, 1778, a year and a half after their capture.

The Provost and the old City Hall in Wall Street remained as prisons until the evacuation. An eyewitness, General Johnson, thus describes what he saw at that time.

I was in New York, November 25 [he says] and at the Provost about 10 A.M. A few British criminals were yet in custody, and O'Keefe [Cunningham's sergeant and jailer] threw his ponderous bunch of keys on the floor and retired, when an American guard relieved the British guard, which joined a detachment of British troops, then on parade on Broadway, and marched down to the Battery, where they embarked for England.

The building was originally of rough stone, three stories in height, with dormer windows and a cupola. After the return of peace, it was again used as a debtor's prison. In 1830, it was remodelled by cutting off all above the second story and covering it with a roof of

slight pitch, sheathed with copper; a Grecian portico was added to both northern and southern entrances, and the sides covered with stucco in imitation of marble. When it was finished, it resembled in miniature the Greek Temple of Diana at Ephesus, which had served as its model. The intention was to render the building fireproof, as the alterations were for the purpose of converting it into a repository of the land records of the city and county of New York. In 1832, before the alterations were completed, cholera visited the city, and the building was used as a hospital. When it was completed, in 1834, the offices of the register, comptroller, street commissioner, and surrogate were established in it; but in 1869 the whole building was turned over to the register for his sole use, the records of the city having assumed vast proportions. The "New Jail," or "Provost," was finally demolished in 1904 to make way for the subway under the eastern side of the park; and the legal records were transferred to the magnificent new Hall of Records on the north side of Chambers Street. Another building, occupied by the apparatus of the fire department, stood at the northeast corner of the park for many years and was torn down at the same time as the "Provost."

In the last decade of the eighteenth century, the Almshouse and the House of Correction still stood at the northern end of the park, with the Bridewell and the "Provost" on either side. Between the Almshouse and the Bridewell was the gallows, which had been removed in 1755 to the vicinity of the Five Points, but which was moved back to the Commons in 1784. In 1796, the old almshouse was so dilapidated as to be unfit for further use, and a new one was built in rear of it on Chambers Street, to which the inmates were removed

in 1797, and the old building was demolished. In 1816, another new almshouse was erected on the East River near Bellevue Hospital, which was, in time, removed to Randall's Island. The vacated Chambers Street almshouse was like a row of six three-story dwellings. It was remodelled after the removal of the paupers and called the New York Institution. In 1816, the American Museum of John Scudder removed from Chatham Street, where it had been since 1810, to the west end of the New York Institution.

It remains

To bless the hour the Corporation took it
Into their heads to give the rich in brains
The worn-out mansion of the poor in pocket,
Once "the old almshouse " now a school of wisdom,
Sacred to Scudder's shells and Dr. Griscom.*

HALLECK.

On March 26, 1818, the first savings bank ever operated in the city was opened in a basement room; it was called at first the Chambers Street Bank, and later the Bleecker Street Savings Bank; it is now at Fourth Avenue and Twenty-second Street. In 1824, the first Egyptian mummy ever exhibited in this country was shown in the basement of the building.

In colonial days, the British soldiers in the city looked with considerable contempt upon the provincials, and their officers often had trouble in keeping them within bounds, as they were habitual breakers of the public peace. In 1764, one of their escapades reached the point of being a riot. Having imbibed freely of rum, they conceived the idea of freeing the prisoners and marched

* Dr. John Griscom was a highly esteemed Quaker physician who delivered lectures on chemistry in his office in the old almshouse.

to the New Jail and demanded the keys of the keeper. Upon his refusal to surrender them, the excited soldiers fired through the door, grazing the ear of one of their officers, Major Rogers, who was confined for debt and whose release was the prime object of the attack. They then forced the door and told the prisoners they were free and attempted to carry off their major in triumph. The prisoners seemed unwilling to leave, and the soldiers attempted to drive them out; but the arrival of the city militia soon quelled the incipient riot and the ringleaders were arrested. Upon their trial, they accused Rogers of being the instigator of the attempt at rescue; but the affair was passed lightly by, like most similar affairs of the British soldiery.

In 1763, Lord Grenville, Chancellor of the Exchequer, proposed to Parliament to raise a permanent revenue from the colonies by direct taxation. The principal source of this revenue was to be by means of stamps affixed to all mercantile and legal papers, to newspapers, almanacs, pamphlets, etc. In addition, an army of ten thousand men was to be maintained in the colonies, ostensibly to protect them, but really to coerce and overawe them. Notwithstanding the protests of the colonial governments, the Stamp Act was passed, March 22, 1765, news of which reached New York early in April. During the debate upon the bill in the House of Commons, Barré used the term "Sons of Liberty" in referring to the American colonists. The term was apt, and there sprung into being throughout the colonies a number of semi-secret societies whose aim was to oppose British exactions; though the New York society was really a revival of a similar club which had been formed thirty years before at the trial of Zenger for libel. In July they gave evidence of their alertness when four fishermen

who supplied the city markets were seized by a press-gang and sent on board a British tender in the harbor. The next morning the captain of the tender came ashore in his barge, which was at once seized by the indignant people and carried off to the Commons. The frightened captain offered to release the four men and signed the order, which was taken to the ship by a party of the Sons of Liberty who returned with the impressed fishermen; but in the meantime the boat had been burnt.

The Stamp Act was to go into effect on the first of November; but on October seventh, twenty-eight delegates from nine of the colonies met in New York at the first congress of the colonies, usually termed the "Stamp Act Congress," to protest against the enforcement of the act. On the night of November first, there followed the demonstration on the Commons and at the fort already described in Chapter II., in which Colden's effigy was burned. The next morning there was another assemblage on the Commons, which resolved to march to the fort and demand the surrender of the paper; but Colden, alarmed at the prospect of trouble, announced his intention to have nothing more to do with the stamped paper but to await the coming of the new governor, Sir Henry Moore, whose arrival was daily expected. This did not satisfy the people, and on the evening of November fifth, an armed body of citizens assembled again on the Commons, resolved to storm the fort and take possession of the hated paper by force. Colden could get no promise of assistance from Captain Kennedy of the ship-of-war *Coventry* then lying in the harbor, and therefore gave the stamped paper into the possession of the mayor and corporation at the gate of the fort. The new custodians promised to be careful of the packages intrusted to them and to be responsible in case of



THE AMERICAN HOTEL AT THE CORNER OF BARCLAY STREET AND PHILIP HONE'S RESIDENCE AT 235 BROADWAY

their injury or destruction. The city authorities and the stamped paper were then escorted to the City Hall in Wall Street, where the paper was deposited; and then the Sons of Liberty dispersed quietly to their homes.

For fear that the guns at the Battery might be taken by the Sons of Liberty and used against the fort, Colden, so it was believed, caused some of them to be spiked. A few nights later his effigy, seated on a spiked cannon, was burned on the Commons.

The new governor, Sir Henry Moore, arrived about the middle of November and evinced so favorable a disposition towards the colonists that the Sons of Liberty held a grand mass meeting on the Commons, where they erected a pyramid and kindled a number of bonfires in his honor. About the middle of December Captain Blow arrived from Canada with a stamped pass signed by the governor of Canada. The pass was the first piece of the stamped paper that had appeared in the city, and was posted conspicuously in Burns's Coffee House. In the evening a procession was formed, bearing a gallows upon which were three effigies: that of Lord Grenville, the author of the act; that of Lord Colville, who had tried to enforce it by stopping colonial vessels, and that of General Murray, who had signed the first piece of the stamped paper which had found its way into the city. The line of march was through the principal streets of the town and ended at the Commons—now the rallying place of the people—where the effigies were burned.

On May 20, 1766, news reached New York of the repeal of the act, and on the following day, the people gathered in the Fields to show their delight in every possible way. Still further to show their loyalty and gratitude to the king, they assembled again on his birthday, June fourth, and celebrated the event with feasting

and drinking. A great pole with twelve tar barrels at its top was erected, and twenty-five cords of wood were placed at its base. Then, while a salute of twenty-five guns was fired in another part of the Fields, the great bonfire was kindled and the royal standard raised amid the cheers of the crowd. Still another pole was raised on this memorable day, bearing the inscription, "The King, Pitt, and Liberty"—the first liberty-pole, which was to serve as the rallying point of the citizens for several years, the visible sign of the principle of no taxation without representation.

This liberty-pole stood not far from the barracks of the soldiers on the north side of Chambers Street. On the tenth of August, a party belonging to the 28th Regiment cut the pole down. The next day, while the citizens were assembled on the Commons preparing to erect another, they were attacked by the soldiers, and several of the Sons of Liberty, among whom were Isaac Sears and John Berrien, were severely hurt. Though complaints were made by the citizens, the British officers declared that the affidavits submitted were falsehoods and refused to reprimand or punish the offenders.

A second liberty-pole was erected and the soldiers allowed it to stand for a few days and then cut it down, on September twenty-third. Within two days, a third pole was raised; and this time the pole was allowed to stand, as the soldiers were restrained by the orders of Governor Moore, who was believed to have been the instigator of the previous attacks.

On the eighteenth of March, 1767, the citizens assembled on the Commons to celebrate the anniversary of the repeal of the Stamp Act. The celebration aroused the anger of the soldiers, and that night the pole was again levelled to the ground. The next day the Sons of

Liberty set up another and more substantial one, well secured with iron bands. An unsuccessful attempt was made to destroy it that night. The following night another attempt to blow it up (or down) with gunpowder was made, but this, also, was unsuccessful. Then the Sons of Liberty set a strong guard about the pole; and for three successive nights attempts were made to destroy it, but the soldiers were beaten off. The peremptory orders of the governor compelled the soldiers to desist from their attacks, and the pole stood undisturbed for three years.

During these years, affairs were moving in the direction of armed resistance to the impositions of the British Parliament, and frequent were the meetings on the Commons and burnings in effigy of offensive individuals. At last, on January 13, 1770, attacks were renewed upon the liberty-pole by a party of the 16th Regiment, who attempted to blow it down with gunpowder. In this they were unsuccessful, and they then attacked a party of citizens in front of Montagnie's tavern in Broadway opposite the Fields—at that time the headquarters of the Sons of Liberty. The citizens were driven indoors and attempted to barricade themselves from the unruly mob; but the soldiers broke in with drawn swords and wrecked the building and furniture. In the midst of the destruction, their officers came up and ordered them back to their barracks. On the two succeeding nights, the attacks were resumed against the pole without success; but the third night, the pole was levelled to the ground and sawed into pieces which were piled up in front of Montagnie's in derision of the patriotic club.

This insult aroused the Sons of Liberty; and on the evening of the seventeenth, handbills were circulated

calling a meeting that night upon the Commons. Three thousand citizens assembled and passed strong resolutions in regard to the daily outrages committed by the soldiery and threatened to regard those found outside their barracks after roll-call as enemies of the city. The next day there began a two days' conflict with the soldiers in which several lives were lost. Since the various affrays occurred in the neighborhood of John and William streets—a locality known at that time as Golden Hill—the conflict has been termed the "Battle of Golden Hill." It occurred two months before the Boston Massacre, and it was here that the first blood of the coming conflict was shed.

The Sons of Liberty requested permission to erect another liberty-pole, but the Common Council refused permission. While the council was considering the request, Lamb and several others of the club purchased a plot of ground eleven feet wide and one hundred feet deep near the site of the former pole. Here, on February 6, 1770, the last of the liberty-poles was raised. It was a mast of great length, sunk twelve feet into the ground, and encased for two thirds of its height with iron bands and hoops firmly riveted together. Amid the shouts of the people and the sound of music, it was stepped into its place. It bore the inscription, "Liberty and Property," and was surmounted by a gilt vane bearing the same inscription in large letters. This inscription was not of so loyal a tenor as that placed upon the first pole and shows how the feelings of the people were changing. The concluding paragraph of the handbill distributed by the Liberty Boys reads as follows:

And now, Gentlemen, seeing we are debarred the privilege of Public Ground to erect the Pole on, we have purchased a

place for it near where the other stood, which is full as public as any of the Corporation Ground. Your Attendance and countenance are desired at one o'clock on Tuesday morning, the 6th instant, at Mr. Crommelin's Wharf, in order to carry it up to be raised.

By Order of the Committee.

NEW YORK, February 3, 1770.

The Liberty Boys had had quarters at Burns's and also at Montagnie's, both on Broadway; but the latter was now let to the opposite party for the anniversary celebration of the nineteenth of March. Not to be balked by the action of the recreant Montagnie, the club bought a house in the Spring Garden—corner of Ann Street and Broadway, where Barnum's Museum stood long afterward—and named it Hampden Hall in honor of the great English patriot. On the forty-fifth day of the year (February fourteenth) they marched to the New Jail, where McDougal, one of their leaders, was in prison, and in order to compliment him gave forty-five cheers, drank forty-five toasts, and ate forty-five beef-steaks. This number had for them a peculiar significance; for it was on the forty-fifth page of the journal of the Assembly that the proceedings against McDougal were entered. On the nineteenth of March they paid another visit to their leader at his place of temporary imprisonment.

A party of British soldiers, who were on the point of leaving for Pensacola, vowed that they would take a piece of the pole with them as a trophy; and so, on the twenty-ninth of March, they made another attempt upon it. Their effort to unship the topmast was discovered and the alarm given. Upon the rallying of the Liberty Boys the soldiers retired to their barracks where they received reinforcements and forced the

patriots to retire to Hampden Hall, which the soldiers swore they would burn. The alarm bells were rung and the citizens flew to arms; while the British officers, fearing a repetition of Golden Hill, drove their men back to the barracks. A strong guard was placed about the pole; and after the departure of the soldiers on the third of May, the pole remained unmolested until 1775.

During the anniversary celebration of the Stamp Act repeal in that year, Sergeant William Cunningham and a companion made an assault upon the patriots gathered about the pole. They were driven off; and Cunningham, who had been a Liberty Boy himself before joining the army, was severely whipped. That whipping was dearly paid for in the lives of eleven thousand American prisoners who died during the British occupation of the city under the treatment of the vengeful provost-marshal, Captain William Cunningham. One of the earliest of his acts after the occupation of the city by the British, in September, 1776, was to order the liberty-pole levelled to the ground. It probably seemed to him a visible reminder of the humiliation of the whipping he had received. In 1897, the Mary Washington Chapter, Daughters of the American Revolution, caused a tablet to be placed in the post-office to commemorate the erection and maintenance of the liberty-pole from 1766 to 1776.

On the tenth of May, 1770, Nathan Rogers, a visiting Boston merchant, was hanged in effigy on the Commons for refusing to comply with the non-importation agreement. He then went to Philadelphia, where upon notice from the New York club, things were made uncomfortable for him by the patriots.

In 1774, attempts to land tea were made at various ports of the colonies. New York was not left out of the

list of towns to which the consignments were ordered; and on the eighteenth of April, the *Nancy*, Captain Lockyer, arrived off the city bringing a cargo of tea. The Vigilance Committee, which had intelligence of her coming, prevented any one from landing except her captain, and ordered the ship to leave the port. On the twenty-second, the *London*, Captain Chambers, arrived. Upon his assuring the Committee in the most solemn manner that he had no tea aboard, and as the ship's manifest showed none, he was permitted to bring his vessel up to the city. After many denials, Chambers admitted he had tea on board as a private venture of his own without the knowledge of the East India Company. The citizens thronged to the wharf at which the *London* lay; and upon receiving word that the Committee had declared the tea confiscated, they boarded the vessel in broad day and without disguise. They found eighteen chests which they broke open and dumped the contents into the river. Lockyer and Chambers were escorted to their ships and virtually driven from the city, the battery at the liberty-pole firing a salute in honor of their departure.

On the sixth of July, 1774, there occurred what is called the "great meeting in the Fields," when an immense multitude gathered to denounce the Boston Port Bill, to open subscriptions for the suffering Bostonians, to renew the non-importation agreement, and to advocate the calling of a continental congress to discuss the affairs of the colonies. It is stated that the meeting was addressed by Alexander Hamilton, then seventeen years of age and a student at King's College. The report of the meeting has been fully told by those who took part in it and by the contemporaneous writers of the day, and no mention is made of this wonderful

performance of Hamilton. The only authority for the statement is that of his son, John C. Hamilton, in his biography of his distinguished father; and that Hamilton appeared on the Fields in any other character than that of a spectator is at least doubtful.*

Early in April, 1775, the man-of-war *Asia*, 74 guns, arrived in the harbor. The troops in the neighborhood of New York were transferred to Boston, and there being an insufficiency of barracks there, requests were made to some of the Boston carpenters to construct the required buildings. No one could be found to do it in Boston, and an appeal was made to the British officers in New York. Notwithstanding the orders of the Sons of Liberty forbidding any New Yorker from complying with the request and declaring such a person a traitor to his country, a vessel was fitted out with the necessary supply of boards and straw. The news soon reached the Committee of Safety, and a meeting was called upon the Commons, which decided to seize the vessel and prevent her departure. "King" Sears was the principal speaker, and he advised the people to arm and to provide themselves with twenty-four rounds of ammunition—a recommendation that was at once adopted. Sears was arrested for this and carried before the mayor; but he refused to give bail, and, like McDougal, he was remanded to the New Jail. On his way to confinement he was rescued from the constables by the people, who bore him in triumph through the city.

The news of the fight at Lexington and Concord reached the city on Sunday, April 24, 1775, and the usual Sabbath-day decorum of the streets of the town was disturbed by the excited groups which gathered

* See foot-note by Henry B. Dawson in Scharf's *History of Westchester County*, i., 201.

everywhere to discuss the startling news. Early in the spring General Charles Lee arrived with 1200 men to assume command of New York for the Americans. His troops were encamped on the Commons, while he took up his quarters at the Kennedy house at Number 1, Broadway. This was a bold act on his part, as the Committee of Safety, fearing a bombardment of the city by the *Asia*, whose captain had threatened it in the event of American troops being brought into the city, protested strongly to Lee against his doing so.

After the capture of Boston by Washington, March 17, 1776, he repaired in person to New York which, it was thought, would be the next object of attack by the British. On July tenth, dispatches from Philadelphia announced the action of Congress of July fourth, and orders were at once issued for the different brigades of the army to assemble on the Commons at six o'clock on that evening. A hollow square was formed, with Washington and his staff on horseback in the centre, on the site of the present fountain in the City Hall Park, and there, amid close attention, the Declaration of Independence was read. At its conclusion, the great crowd, both soldiers and civilians, greeted the new-born nation with enthusiastic cheers. A bronze tablet on the City Hall commemorates the event.

CHAPTER VI

THE CITY HALL PARK

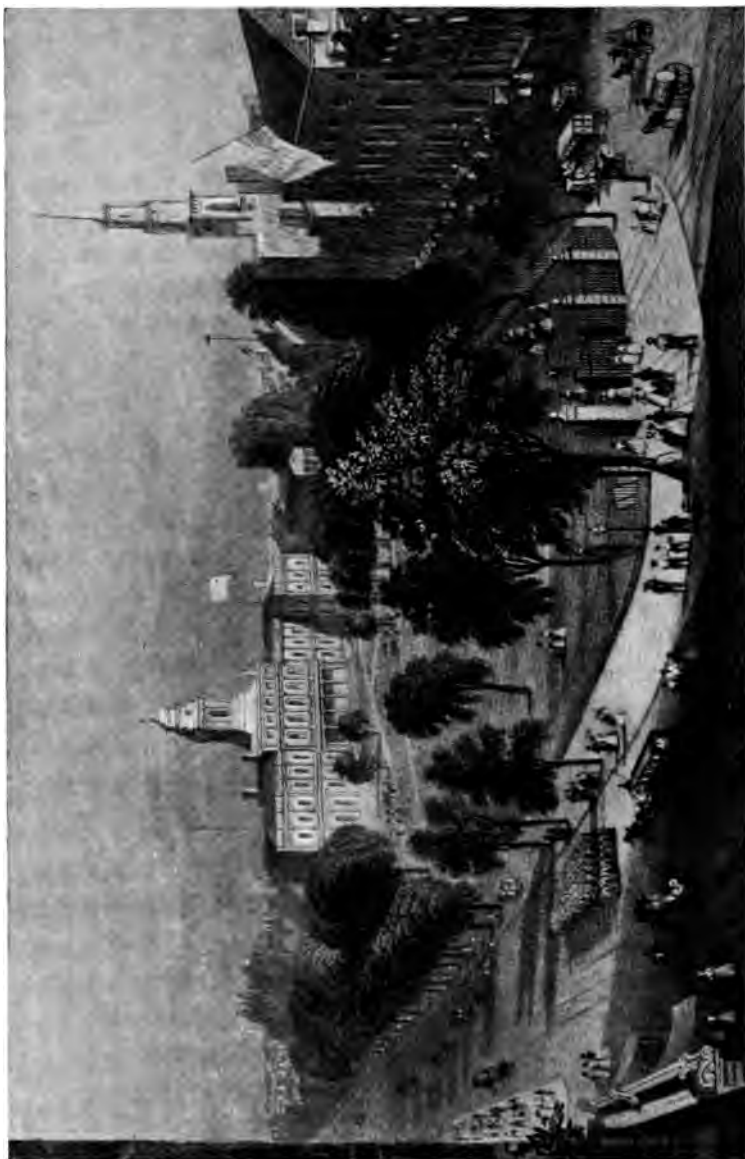


MOST of the small parks throughout the city began originally as potters' fields, where the paupers and unknown dead were buried. The northern part of the Fields was used in this way, and across where Chambers Street now is was the negro burying-ground of colonial times. The burials here were usually held at night, when the negro population got together and buried their dead with weird rites and incantations—relics, probably, of their African origin. Long after the burying-ground was disused and forgotten, it was recalled to the people of a later generation when, in digging a hole for a lamp-post at the corner of Reade Street, several human bones were exhumed.

With the restoration of peace, in 1783, and the remarkable subsequent growth of the city, it was found that the City Hall in Wall Street was inadequate for the needs of the municipality; so it was determined at the beginning of the nineteenth century to build a new one. In 1802, a premium was offered for the best plan for a new building, and the award was made to Macomb and

Maugin. The site selected was in the upper part of the Commons, formerly called the Fields, and known since 1785, when it was enclosed, as the Park. And *the Park* it remained pre-eminently until long after Central Park came into existence and usurped its title. This first fence about the Park was made of posts and rails, which soon gave way to pickets. It was later decided to enclose the Park with an iron fence; but as the American iron-workers were not able in those early days to make the required fence, it was ordered from England. The new fence arrived on the last day of the year 1821, and was put up during the following year. At the lower end of the Park, four marble posts were erected as gateways, and their tops were joined by iron scroll-work supporting lanterns. The whole Park could not have been so fenced in, as Philip Hone says in his diary under date of May 15, 1834, that the unsightly wooden railings in the Park were removed and gave place to chestnut posts with iron chains, which would greatly improve the prospect from his house opposite at Park Place. In 1820, Alderman Swartwout proposed enlarging the Park by extending it to Ann, Beekman, and Nassau streets (its original area up to Dongan's time) so as to make it nearly square. On the eighth of May, 1827, four granite balls, taken, so it was said, from the ruins of ancient Troy, were presented to the city by Captain John B. Nicholson and placed on the tops of the granite pillars.

The corner-stone of the present City Hall was laid by Mayor Livingston on September 20, 1803; but the building was not used until July 4, 1811, and not fully completed until 1812. The building is of white marble brought from Stockbridge, Massachusetts, at prices which caused several of the contractors to fail, owing to the lack of cheap and convenient means of transportation. This



A VIEW OF CITY HALL PARK LOOKING NORTH, ABOUT 1830

delayed the completion of the structure. The original plans called for a marble building; but the matter was put into the hands of an aldermanic committee who declared for freestone on account of the expense, and also decided to cut down the size of the edifice. Upon the solicitations of the architects, the building was restored to its first size; and after the foundations had been carried above the ground, the committee consented to the marble on all but the north side, which was built of brownstone as a matter of economy. The architects showed that this construction of marble would cost the city but \$43,750 more than for brownstone. The building was erected by day's work, the pay of the best skilled mechanics ranging from one dollar to one and a quarter a day. In 1890, the brownstone was painted white to resemble the rest of the building, and to-day it is impossible to tell without the closest scrutiny whether it is marble or not. The structure cost about half a million of dollars, and is a contrast in the matter of cost with its near neighbor, the County Court-house, which cost over fourteen millions.

There is a story worth telling in connection with the construction of the City Hall simply to show the difference between those days and these. The builder was obliged to draw the marble used in the building from the sloops which brought it down the North River. He found the charge excessive, and therefore bought a mule to do the hauling, for which he charged the city "to one mule \$22." After the work was done, he found the mule more valuable than when he bought, so he credited the city "by one mule \$24." Can we of a century later imagine any one doing such a thing now? Such an act would be sufficient without further evidence to convince any sheriff's jury or surrogate of the man's



CITY HALL PARK IN 1827

113

insanity. More 's the pity that we have so degenerated that the very fact that a man is doing something for the government, whether national, state, or city, is so often a warrant for dishonesty; and this, too, with men who in their business and social life are thoroughly conscientious.

The City Hall is too well known to require description here. It was a beautiful, symmetrical, stately building when first erected—it remains so to-day, though somewhat dwarfed by the sky-scraping structures on Chambers and other streets in its rear. Long may it stand with its historical associations to mark the progress of the city. Since the formation of the greater city, it has become entirely too small for the accommodation of the offices of the different departments of the municipal government, and it is now given over to the mayor, the Board of Aldermen, and the City Library. A new municipal building is in course of erection at this writing (1911) northeast of the Park on Centre Street, which, it is expected, will house the city departments and save the municipality many millions of dollars that it now pays for rent.

The "Governors' Room" in the City Hall is well worth a visit. It contains the portraits of nearly all the governors of the State from George Clinton down to the present, the portraits of many of the mayors of the city, and many articles of furniture and other relics connected with the first Federal Congress, the opening of the Erie Canal, and with prominent events in the history of the city and with prominent statesmen and citizens of the olden times. Upon his visit to the city in 1824, Lafayette was received with distinguished honors, and during his sojourn in New York held daily receptions in the City Hall, where thousands of citizens waited

upon him. Other distinguished foreigners are received by the mayor in the building.

The City Hall has borne its part in all the great celebrations of the past—the opening of the Erie Canal, the admission of Croton water, the laying of the Atlantic cable, the centenary of Washington's inauguration, the Hudson-Fulton celebration of 1909, and many others. Our population is of such a cosmopolitan character, with so many nationalities represented, that it was formerly the custom to display the flags of the different peoples from the City Hall upon their national holidays or fête days. This custom offended many of the Americans of the city, and it was stopped by enactment of the State legislature, February 22, 1895, which decreed that no flags should be flown from public buildings throughout the State, except those of the nation, the state, or the municipality. The four-faced clock in the tower was for over half a century after its installation the standard by which everybody set his timepiece; and "City Hall time," or "City time," became the criterion by which the accuracy of a timepiece was judged, or the moment of any event determined.

Among those tendered receptions at the City Hall besides Lafayette, were Clay, Webster, and Lord Ashburton, the British Minister who made the Treaty of Washington with Webster, and who surrendered so many disputed points to the able American statesman that the treaty was called by the English when they learned its provisions, the "Ashburton capitulation." Other men whom the city has delighted to honor in the same way were the naval heroes of the War of 1812—Hull, Perry, Jones, Lawrence, and Decatur, who were presented with the freedom of the city in a gold box and whose portraits were painted at the expense of the city and

hung in the City Hall. Another recipient of similar honors was General Winfield Scott, the hero of the Mexican War and the War of 1812.

The most imposing celebration ever held in the City Hall or in the Park was that in jubilation over the admission of Croton water, when the building was beautifully illuminated in a manner, so it is said, that has never been surpassed even to the present. Another gala occasion was the reception and celebration in honor of Cyrus W. Field upon his second attempt to lay the Atlantic cable in 1858, which was partially successful, messages being exchanged between this country and England before the cable broke. During the illumination of the City Hall upon that occasion, the cupola caught fire and was badly damaged, as well as the top story of the building. For many months afterward, the City Hall presented an inelegant and careless appearance with its front boarded up, as repairs were not started until some time after the fire.

On the twentieth of November, 1804, eleven gentlemen met in the "picture room" of the City Hall and formed the New York Historical Society, electing De Witt Clinton as its first president; but it was not until the celebration of the bi-centenary of the discovery of the Hudson in 1809 that the influence of the society was felt. Since that time it has grown apace, and has done inestimable service in collecting and preserving all kinds of material connected with the nation, the state, and the city.

At one time, it was customary for the Common Council to be served after its meetings with tea at the public expense. These tea parties were pleasant and sociable; but in the course of time, they grew beyond simple tea parties, and the aldermen were served with the best

that the city markets afforded in the way of fruit, fish, and game. Friends of the aldermen, supporters, contractors, and lobbyists began to drop in, and the liquid refreshments were poured from less innocent vessels than tea-pots. In fact, the tea parties degenerated into orgies, held once a week at the public expense, and aroused so much adverse criticism on the part of the respectable portion of the community, that Mayor Harper put a stop to them in 1839. They were resumed in 1852, when the character of the city government had deteriorated very much from that of a quarter of a century before.

In those earlier days, the Glorious Fourth was always celebrated with much enthusiasm throughout the city, and the Park was the scene of great gaiety. Booths were erected inside the railings, and here were sold roast pig (rather heavy diet for July fourth), egg-nog, cider, spruce beer, and other delectable dishes and beverages. The country people flocked to the city to enjoy the parade of the militia and the fireworks and delights of the Park, while the city boys flocked to the country to enjoy the green apples and have a good time generally. In 1840, it was proposed to abolish the booths, but they lasted for some years longer. Their cessation elicited the general remark, says Charles H. Haswell, "The Fourth of July passed away when the booths around City Hall Park were taken away."

The bodies of several persons for whom the city mourned and whom it wished to honor have lain in state in the City Hall. Among these were President Lincoln in April, 1865, and General Grant in August, 1885, and thousands of their sorrowing countrymen looked upon their dead faces. The body of John Howard Payne, the author of *Home, Sweet Home*, was brought

back from Tunis, Africa, in 1883 and lay in state at the City Hall. It was eminently fitting that the author of the sweetest song in the English language should rest in his own beloved country. Another whose memory the city thus honored was General Worth, a son of the state and a distinguished soldier.

Sunk in the pavement in front of the main entrance of the City Hall is a tablet inscribed with the fact that, "At this place, 24th March, 1900, Hon. Robert A. Van Wyck made the first excavation for the Underground Railway." The subway station is only a few yards away.

During the Civil War, the lower end of the Park, where the post-office now stands, was occupied by temporary barracks used for the accommodation of the Federal soldiers that were stationed in the city. The adjoining fountain was made use of by the soldiers for performing their ablutions.

The imposing, but ugly, building now occupying the southern end of the Park triangle is the New York post-office. The ground was acquired from the city, and the building was first occupied by the Federal Government on September 1, 1875. Its cost was between \$6,000,000 and \$7,000,000. It contains not only the post-office proper, but also the United States courts of this district and the rooms of many Federal officials. So rapid has been the growth of the city that the building is entirely inadequate for the demands made upon it, and a new post-office is now (1911) in course of construction on the plot of ground above the tunnels of the Pennsylvania railroad, between Eighth and Ninth avenues and Thirty-first and Thirty-second streets.

Just north of the post-office, facing Broadway, is a statue bearing the following inscription: "Nathan Hale, a captain in the Regular Army of the United States,

who gave his life for his country in the City of New York, September 26, 1776. 'My only regret is that I have but one life to give for my country.' " The statue is the work of the sculptor, Frederick Macmonnies, and it was erected by the Society of the Sons of the Revolution and unveiled on November 25, 1893, the anniversary of the evacuation of the city by the British.

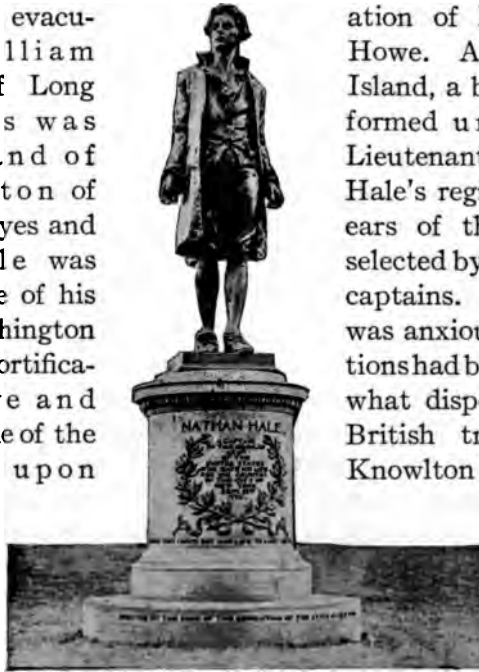
No picture of Hale exists, but the sculptor has followed the description of Hale's physical appearance as given by Captain Hull and other friends of the martyred spy. The sculptor has succeeded in a remarkable degree in depicting the *character* of Hale and of portraying his honesty, candor, and disinterestedness as his friends knew him, showing that he had fully entered into Hale's life and being. A few years ago, I was showing the statue to an English friend and telling him Hale's story. After a long look at the bronze face, the Englishman said: "If that is a correct picture of Hale, surely no man was less fitted to be a spy than he." Many people have an idea that Hale was hanged within the Park and that he had been imprisoned within the "Provost," but this is erroneous. The spot of his execution is unknown; but from the best evidence available, he was hanged in front of the British artillery camp near the Beekman mansion at Turtle Bay on the East River, near First Avenue and Fifty-first Street.*

Nathan Hale was born in Coventry, Connecticut, in 1755. He was graduated from Yale College in 1773 and afterwards taught school at East Haddam and in New London in his native State. Upon the outbreak of the Revolution, he was engaged on recruiting duty for some time and then accompanied Colonel Webb's

* See monograph on Nathan Hale by Professor Johnson of the City College from which are taken most of my statements concerning Hale.

regiment to the fortifications about Boston, holding the position of captain. Upon the reorganization of the Continental army, he became a captain in the 19th Regiment of Foot, Colonel Webb commanding. His regiment formed part of Heath's brigade, which was dispatched to New York immediately after the evacuation of Boston by Sir William Howe. After the fall of Long Island, a battalion was formed under the command of Lieutenant-Colonel Hale's regiment, "to be the eyes and ears of the army," and Hale was selected by Knowlton to furnish a spy, and volunteered. Disguised as a Dutch schoolmaster, he went to the fortifications by Howe and had made of the called upon a spy, and volunteered. Disguised as a Dutch schoolmaster, he went to

Washington what fortifications by Howe and had made of the called upon a spy, and volunteered. Disguised as a Dutch schoolmaster, he went to walk in Connecticut and crossed the Sound to Long Island. This was the last seen of him by any of his friends.



THE NATHAN HALE STATUE IN CITY HALL PARK

On the afternoon of Sunday, September 26, 1776, Captain Montross of Howe's staff, chief engineer of the British army, visited the American lines under a flag of truce. He was met by General Putnam, Adjutant-

General Reed, Alexander Hamilton, William Hull, and others. In the course of conversation, Montessor stated that a captain of rangers had been hanged that morning as a spy. Hull, who was a classmate and intimate friend of Hale, at once asked the name of the captain; whereupon Montessor related the incidents of the execution. Hale had been caught red-handed, the incriminating papers had been found on him, and he had at once admitted his mission. On the way to the execution by the Provost-Marshal Cunningham, Montessor, moved by pity at the sight of the handsome, ingenuous youth, invited Hale within his tent while preparations were making for the execution. Montessor engaged Hale in conversation, learned his name and rank, and expressed the opinion that Hale must regret having undertaken a mission so foreign to his rank and character and ending in an ignominious death; whereupon Hale gave his immortal reply. This, briefly, is the story of Nathan Hale as we know it from the account given by William Hull. Many legends have grown up in the course of time, but, as they lack confirmation, they must be considered as surmises and probabilities not capable of proof.*

On the eighteenth of June, 1812, Congress declared war against Great Britain, word of which reached New York two days later. On the twenty-fourth, in compliance with the call of the Common Council, a great number of the citizens met at noon in the Park, facing the City Hall. Colonel Henry Rutgers was chairman, and Colonel Marinus Willet, secretary of the meeting. Notwithstanding the divergence of opinions in regard to the expediency of the war a set of strong and patriotic

* For a more detailed account of the execution, see the author's novel, *A Princess and Another*.

resolutions was unanimously adopted, approving the action of the Government and pledging to its support "their lives, their fortunes, and their sacred honors." Within four months thereafter, the individual enterprise of the citizens had fitted out and sent to sea twenty-six privateers, carrying two hundred and twelve guns and over twenty-two thousand men.

But the war went steadily against the United States, and at last all the vessels of our little navy were either captured or blockaded in our ports. The British admirals, admitting that their imperative orders were "to destroy and lay waste all towns and districts of the United States accessive to the attack of British armaments," had captured and devastated Eastport, Machias, Castine, and Belfast in Maine, had bombarded Stonington in Connecticut, and had worked havoc along the shores of the Chesapeake. British vessels of war had approached through the Sound as far as Throgg's Neck, now within the city of New York in the Borough of The Bronx. The coast was blockaded from Georgia to Maine, and the work of the British fleets had ceased to be war and had become devastation.

Alarmed at these reports from all sections of the coast and realizing the unpreparedness of New York to withstand an anticipated attack, the Common Council called a meeting in the Park, August 11, 1814, to take measures for the protection of the city. Colonel Rutgers was chairman as before; and while the committee was drawing up a set of resolutions the old veteran of the Revolution, Marinus Willett, aroused the enthusiasm of the assemblage by tales of the first great struggle with Great Britain, and urged them to support their leaders to the end. A set of resolutions was unanimously carried, declaring their resolve to unite in arms on the

approach of the enemy and to defend the city to the last extremity, and urging all citizens to enroll in the militia or naval service, to assist in the public works, and by every means in their power to aid the authorities in their efforts to secure the public safety.

There is no doubt that the inhabitants of New York were thoroughly scared; for so numerous were the volun-



CITY HALL

teers to work on the fortifications—merchants, masons, carpenters, shoemakers, artisans of all trades, and incorporated societies—that the authorities had to beg some of them to wait from day to day for want of room to place them. The whole city wore a martial aspect, drilling was going on everywhere, and citizens of all classes and ranks could be seen hurrying through the streets with pick or shovel to help construct the public works of defence. Many of these works in the harbor

have been enlarged and modernized and constitute the defences of the New York of to-day. Of those at the upper end of the city—at McGowan's Pass and across the island at various points—two of the block-houses and traces of the fortifications remain—all now guarded and protected from injury by our local patriotic societies. Happily, there was no need for all this preparation, for the treaty of peace was signed at Ghent on the twenty-fourth of December of the same year, and the war was over.

Lotteries were recognized means of obtaining money for public purposes during the first half of the nineteenth century; they were held in front of the City Hall in the presence of an alderman. Meetings of all kinds were held by the citizens in the Park; as, for example, in 1821, when the clergymen of the city called a meeting to express disapprobation of Sunday steamboat excursions, which were becoming very popular. Fully five thousand persons were present, who took the conduct of affairs out of the hands of the clergymen and expressed by vote their disapproval of the interference of the clergy. Many abolition meetings also were held here; and on August 27, 1835, a small but select meeting was held which expressed itself as opposed to the action of the Abolitionists.

In 1837, there occurred the first great business panic with which the nation has been visited, and New York was as hard hit as the rest of the country. Unfortunately, no practical measures were at first instituted to relieve the distresses of the working classes, and advantage was taken of the opportunity by politicians and demagogues to inflame the passions of the ignorant and the vicious. On the tenth of February, there appeared the following notice:

The City Hall Park

125

BREAD, MEAT, RENT, FUEL!!

THEIR PRICES MUST COME DOWN!

The voice of the People will be heard, and must prevail.

The People will meet in the Park, *rain or shine*, at
4 o'clock Monday afternoon,

To inquire into the cause of the present unexampled distress
and to devise a suitable remedy. All friends of humanity,
determined to resist monopolists and extortionists, are
invited to attend.

Moses Jacques

Daniel Gorham

Paulus Heddle

John Windy

Daniel A. Robinson

Alexander Ming, Jr.

Warden Hayward

Elijah F. Crane.

NEW YORK, Feb. 10, 1837.

Pursuant to the call, fully six thousand persons assembled in front of the City Hall, and Moses Jacques was chosen chairman. There was no lack of speakers; and the multitude was divided up into groups listening to the different orators, the burden of each one's speech consisting chiefly of denunciation of the rich, of landlords, and of the dealers in provisions, especially of flour. The chief offender in the eyes of the mob was the firm of Eli Hart & Co.; and one of the speakers, having aroused his hearers to the highest pitch, exclaimed:

"Fellow-citizens, Eli Hart & Company have now fifty-three thousand barrels of flour in their store; let us go and offer them eight dollars a barrel for it, and if they do not accept it——"

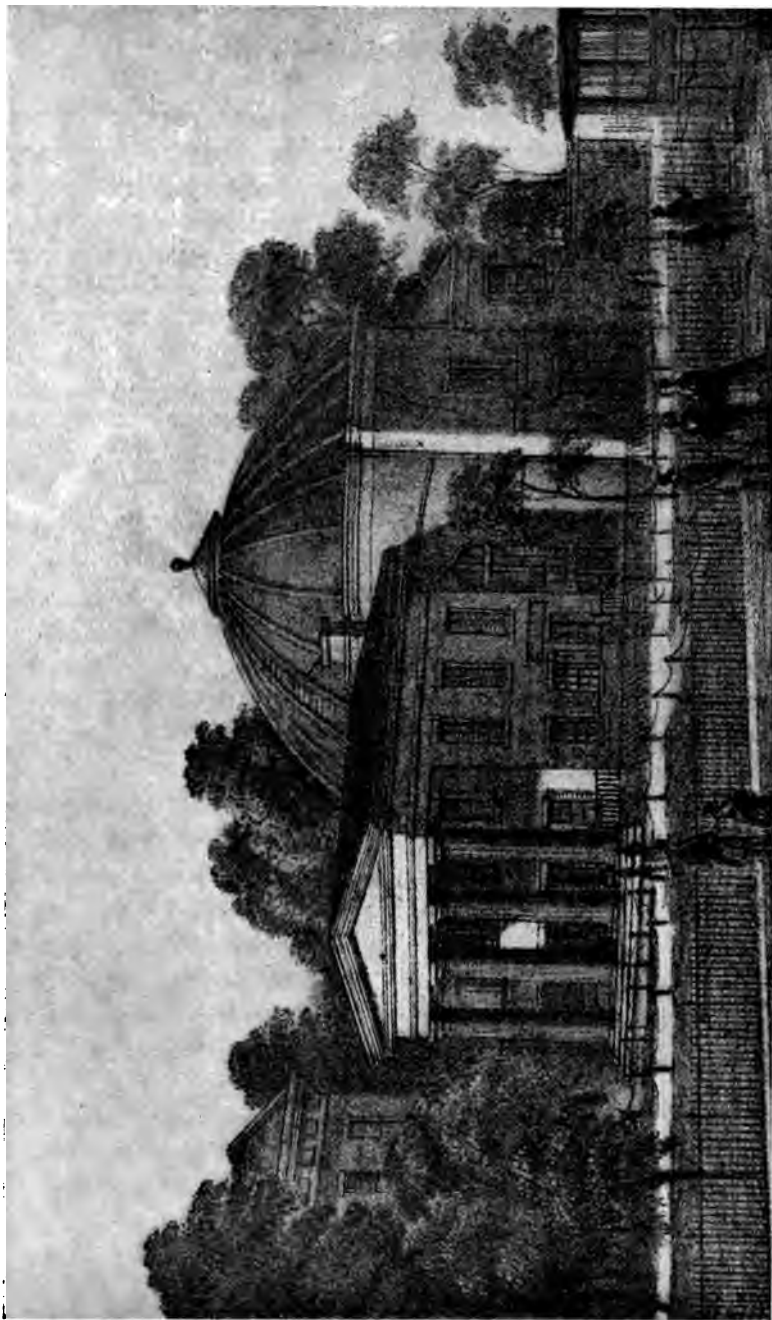
Here he was interrupted, as Patrick Henry had been in a much more famous speech, and concluded by saying in a significant tone, "If they will not accept it—we will depart in peace."

The hint was sufficient, and the great crowd rushed

down Broadway to Dey Street, increasing in numbers and excitement until they reached Washington Street, when they became a roaring mob. Hart's store was attacked and the barrels of flour were rolled into the street and broken open, until some police arrived on the scene, when there was a momentary lull in the operations. The police were soon mastered by the frenzied mob, and the work of destruction went on until the appearance of the militia, who had been hurriedly summoned by the mayor, at sight of whom the mob dispersed. An army of women and boys appeared during the height of the destruction and gathered up the spilled flour in pails, bags, and other vessels. Several other flour stores in the vicinity were attacked during the excitement, and one thousand bushels of wheat and six hundred barrels of flour were emptied into the street. The usual result followed—flour became dearer than before, and the ringleaders of the mob, the politicians and demagogues who had incited them to riot, went unpunished, though some of their dupes went to prison.

In 1857, during the panic and distress of that year, crowds of the unemployed flocked into the Park and threatened the authorities unless they were given food and work. Their riotous action was repressed by giving them work in Central Park, recently purchased and then in course of development. The charitable societies and people of the city established soup kitchens for the needy and starving thousands, so that danger of an uprising was averted.

In the year 1863, it was necessary for the Federal Government to institute a draft to supply the depleted armies of the nation, then engaged in a life and death struggle for the preservation of the Union. The draft went into effect in New York on July eleventh, and



THE ROTUNDA IN CITY HALL PARK—1852

was followed by riots in several parts of the city. One of the objects of attack by the rioters was the building of the New York *Tribune* on Park Row. On the thirteenth, Governor Horatio Seymour arrived in the city and went to the City Hall. A great crowd of rioters who had resumed their attack on the *Tribune* building heard of his presence and flocked into the Park and were addressed by the governor. He was overcome by the sight of the riotous mob, and either lost his head or purposely attempted to conciliate them by making them believe he was friendly to them and their actions. He even went so far as to call them "My friends." The mob cheered him to the echo, and thus encouraged, dispersed to resume their work of murder and destruction.

There were two points in Broadway at which danger was expected from the rioters; these were No. 1190, where the provost-marshal had established one of the wheels for drawing names, the other was at Broadway and Twenty-second Street, where was the office of U. S. Collector of Internal Revenue, George P. Putnam. The drawing lasted during the forenoon of July eleventh at 1190, but was stopped by the marshal at that time, as the riot had begun. Neither place was attacked, though the guardians of both were on watch incessantly for several days. In Broadway, itself, a mob was attacked and scattered in the neighborhood of Bleecker Street by the police held in reserve at police headquarters in Mulberry Street, the rioters being at the time on their way to attack that building. The fortunate arrival of the Seventh Regiment and the active efforts of the few officers and troops in the city put down the riot on the fourth day. The dearth of troops was due to the fact that they had been drawn upon to sustain Meade in his efforts to turn the tide of Confederate

invasion in Pennsylvania, culminating in the victory at Gettysburg.

In 1861, the legislature authorized the erection of a new county court-house at an expenditure of not more than \$250,000. The site selected was that formerly occupied by the ancient almshouse in rear of the City Hall. The building was first used in 1867, but was not completed for many years afterwards. Its construction was the most gigantic steal of the many with which New York has been inflicted by its political "bosses," and occurred during the days of the "Tweed Ring." When the building was finally completed, it had cost the city over \$14,000,000, most of which was without authority of law, and over half of which found its way into the pockets of the Ring.

East of the court-house and fronting on Chambers Street there formerly stood a circular building called the Rotunda. The ground was secured from the city in 1816 on a ten years' lease by John Vanderlyn the artist, a protégé and friend of Aaron Burr; and the building was erected the following year. It was used for panoramic displays of the battle of Waterloo, the Palace and Garden of Versailles, and of other places and events, as well as serving as an art gallery. In 1832, there were exhibited pictures of Adam and Eve, who were shown in a semi-nude condition. This shocked a large portion of the community, who had not yet been educated up (or down) to such impropriety, and the exhibition was much censured. Of course, everybody went to see for himself, there were the same old arguments for the nude in art that we hear even to-day—and the exhibition was a financial success. The building was used for a time in 1849 as the city post-office during the cholera epidemic of that year; later it was used for municipal purposes.

It gave way in 1852 to the ugly, square brown-stone building now occupying the site which is used for the City Court, and which was formerly occupied by the criminal courts until the construction of the new Criminal Court building on Centre Street in 1894.

In 1903, it became apparent that the present county court-house would not long answer the demands made upon it, and a committee was appointed to select a new site.



THE NORTH END OF CITY HALL PARK SHOWING SCUDDER'S MUSEUM, 1825

After many sites had been considered, it was determined in February, 1910, that the most available was that at the north end of the Park, extending from Broadway to Park Row; and the mayor and governor both approved the bill to place the court-house there. The plans call for a ten-story structure, equipped with modern sanitary and ventilating systems, in which the present building is sadly lacking, and incorporating the present edifice. The chief point to recommend this site is that the city owns the land. The lovers of the City Beautiful at

once attacked the plan, and maintained that it would be cheaper for the city in the end to spend several millions for a new site, rather than still further to encroach upon the limits of the Park. No decision as to site having been arrived at, Senator Stillwell introduced a bill in the Legislature of 1911 making it mandatory upon the authorities to use the Park site and to appropriate the necessary money for the construction of the court-house within four months after the passage of the bill. Notwithstanding the almost unanimous opposition of the newspapers and the civic societies, the iniquitous measure was railroaded through the Legislature and sent to the Mayor for his consideration. Mayor Gaynor gave a public hearing and promptly vetoed the bill and returned it to Albany in July; but the bill was at once re-introduced, with some changes to meet the Mayor's objections. The matter was still pending when this volume went to press. The committee of judges has been in existence eight years and has succeeded in *not* selecting a site—another example of the law's delay.

CHAPTER VII

FROM THE PARK TO CANAL STREET



T Park Row the ancient highway turned off to the eastward until it joined the Bowery Lane at Chatham Square and became merged in the latter as the "Great Highway to Boston." The first thoroughfare to extend the length of the island to Kingsbridge was the Boston Road, which followed the Bowery and Fourth Avenue to the present Union Square, merging itself there in the Bloomingdale Road as far as Twenty-third Street, where it branched off to the eastward and followed an irregular course up the east side of the island, crossing the northeast corner of Central Park at McGowan's Pass and following the Harlem Lane (St. Nicholas Avenue) until it reached the Kingsbridge Road, which it followed to Spuyten Duyvel Creek. These streets and directions are, of course, only approximate; for many changes have been made in the direction and nomenclature of the highways of the city during the course of its development. Part of this road was the road to Harlem, which place had been first settled about 1658 at the suggestion of Petrus Stuyvesant, who offered to give the settlers a ferry to Long Island and a court and clergy-

man of their own as soon as they numbered twenty-five families. For many years the road to Harlem led through the woods and was in such poor condition that it was at times impassable. A new road was laid out in 1671, leading to the vicinity of Third Avenue and One Hundred and Thirtieth Street.

Though, as already stated, Broadway in English days did not, as a highway, extend beyond Chambers Street, there was a wagon road as far as the present Canal Street and beyond, for the British had fortifications there during the Revolution, and there is mention of a "middle" road between the Boston Road and the road to Greenwich along the shore of the Hudson. Evidence of this road is also shown when the Americans were retreating from the city to the upper part of the island in September, 1776. Putnam was in the city, and the British were prepared to throw a line across the island from Kip's Bay to the Hudson, when, for some reason—tradition says at Mrs. Murray's home "Inclenberg"—they stopped near the East River shore. Aaron Burr knew the island thoroughly, and he was the aid who extricated Putnam from his dilemma. He guided the American troops over a new road which had been cut through the hills as an extension of Great George Street. Though it was so hot a day that several soldiers succumbed to the heat, Putnam and Burr rode from end to end of the column, encouraging the soldiers and the women and children who accompanied them, and hurrying them on, so that Putnam was able to report to the Chief without any loss of men or baggage to speak of. But the road did not become a legally recognized highway until much later.

In 1683, the city was divided into wards by Governor Dongan. The West Ward took in both sides of Broadway, its eastern boundary being New Street, and its western one

the Hudson; it extended from Battery Place on the south to Wall Street on the north. The Out Ward was "To contain the town of Harlem, with all the farms and settlements on this island, from north of the Fresh Water."

The development of Broadway was in sections: first, from Vesey Street to Duane; second, from Duane Street to Canal; third, from Canal Street to Astor Place; last, from Astor Place to Union Square.

The first section was surveyed in 1760 by Mr. Marschalk, a city surveyor, who presented to the corporation the plan of a road from the Spring Garden House, "where the road is eighty-two feet six inches wide, to the grounds of the Widow Rutgers, where the street is to be fifty feet wide"—this is the Great George Street already mentioned. The Rutgers property was in the vicinity of Thomas Street where the New York Hospital stood at a later date. The east side of this section was taken up principally by the Commons. "In 1790, the first sidewalks of the city were laid on the west side of Broadway from Vesey to Murray Street, and opposite for the same distance along the Bridewell fence. These were narrow pavements of brick and stone, scarcely wide enough for two people to walk abreast" (Booth.) Broadway was a succession of hills above this point, being highest at Anthony Street, where there was a steep hill over which the road climbed, dropping down on the other side as abruptly to the stream at Canal Street. In 1792, John Jay gave the Common Council free right to regulate streets through his land on Great George Street. Five years later, the grade of Broadway was established between Duane and Canal Streets, though it was some years before work was begun. The period of the development of this section was to about 1830.

In 1833, the first block, or Belgian, pavement was substituted for the old cobble-stones; the first experiment was

tried on the Bowery. In Broadway, Reuss blocks were tried, but they proved a failure, and the Belgian replaced them. In 1835, in front of Philip Hone's house, the Street Department tried a new experiment, between Chambers and Warren streets, in making a roadbed of two layers of stone, the lower of large pieces and the upper of crushed stone; then hemlock blocks were laid on top and the cracks were filled with tar. Vehicles ran so smoothly over the new pavement that the public was delighted, and one stage owner said he would willingly pay one hundred dollars a year for each of his stages if the whole street were to be so paved. Within a year, however, the street was in a wretched condition, and the stages were even encroaching on the sidewalks. The wooden blocks were too soft to stand the heavy traffic at this point, and the pavement became full of holes, which were repaired with the old cobbles and cement. It was not until about 1852 that the old pavement of pebbles was removed entirely from Broadway, and the Reuss blocks were substituted. These, in time, became so smooth and slippery that the much narrower granite, Belgian, blocks took their place. Much later, asphalt was used, but proved too soft, and a return was made to the Belgian, with which the street is at present paved from the post-office to Canal Street; below, to the Bowling Green, the roadway is paved with an improved kind of wooden block which seems to be standing well and which greatly decreases the noise of heavy trucking.

On the west side of Broadway, extending down to the shore of the Hudson, and lying about between Fulton and Duane streets, was the farm of the West India Company. It became the Duke's farm in 1664, when the Duke of York became the lord-proprietor, and the King's farm in 1685, when he became king of England. In 1702, it became the

Queen's farm, upon the succession to the throne of Queen Anne, who held possession of it until 1705, when she granted it to Trinity Church. Trinity built St. Paul's upon the portion lying between Fulton and Vesey streets, and divided up the remainder into lots which were let on long leases. The upper portion of the farm included what had formerly been Roelof Jansen's land, and which passed at his death into the ownership of his widow, Annetje Jans, who subsequently married Dominie Everardus Bogardus, so that the farm became known as the "Dominie's bouwerie." It was sold by the heirs of Annetje Jans to Governor Francis Lovelace in March, 1670-71, and was confiscated by the Duke of York, because Lovelace was as deeply in debt to him as to every one else. In the transfer to Lovelace, one of the heirs, a daughter of Annetje, failed to give her consent, either directly or by attorney; and this fact has been the basis for all the claims of Annetje's descendants from that day to this—the suits being decided against the claimants by the courts. This upper part of the Church farm extended as far as the neighborhood of Canal Street and the Hudson, one corner of it only touching Broadway at the southeast corner of Chambers Street, at the northern boundary of the Queen's farm proper. All of this property was included in the "Out Ward" of the city according to the division of 1683.

The corporation of Trinity began to lay out the south part of the farm in lots in 1720, at which time Great George Street did not extend beyond Ann Street, or the Eastern Highway. On the line of Broadway, abreast of the Fields, was the rope-walk of Dugdale & Searle, who maintained the place for over twenty years. The west side of the street was lined with a row of fine trees. The streets laid out through the farm were Fair (afterwards, Division, now, Fulton); Vesey, named in honor of the first rector;

Barclay, after the second; Murray and Chambers, after distinguished members of the Church corporation; and Warren, after Admiral Sir Peter Warren, founder of Greenwich Village. Between Barclay and Murray, was Robinson Street, later called Park Place, which only extended to the grounds of King's College at first, but which was opened through the grounds of Columbia College to College Place, October 27, 1854.

On the site now occupied by the Astor House, there stood in the earlier part of the eighteenth century the Drovers' Inn, which was the resort of the sporting gentry of the period. There was a race course laid out on the Church farm adjoining, a fee of sixpence being charged for spectators. Later, the sports were transferred to the Bull's Head in the Bowery, on the subsequent site of the old Bowery Theatre. About the beginning of the nineteenth century, when fashion began to creep abreast of the Park, there were several of the leading stores of the city, such as "Old Paff's" bric-a-brac shop, Wells & Patterson's for the exclusive sale of men's furnishings (the first of its kind in the city), Jotham Smith's dry-goods store, and Cotte's confectionery shop. These gave way in a few years to residences of wealthy merchants—on the Astor House block, among others, John Jacob Astor, John G. Coster, and Philip Lydig. Mayor Philip Hone's house at Number 235 was above at Park Place. He sold it on March 8, 1836, for \$60,000, and the lower part was converted into shops, while the upper part became the American Hotel. The last transfer of this property was in March, 1910, when it and the adjoining property on Park Place were sold for prices which would have seemed fabulous in Hone's day and beyond the dreams of the most imaginative. The last purchasers of the property have already filed plans and begun work upon the erection of a

forty-five story building, which will be the third loftiest building in the world and the second in America, being surpassed only by the Eiffel Tower in Paris and the Metropolitan Life building in New York. It is to be known as



THE ASTOR HOUSE, BETWEEN VESEY AND BARCLAY STREETS

the Woolworth building from the president of the company erecting it, and will cost over \$5,000,000.

In 1830, John Jacob Astor determined to build a hotel which should be the finest in the country. He bought all the property between Vesey and Barclay streets, except that belonging to John G. Coster. It is related that he said to Coster: "You are not especially attached to your house; you can build somewhere else and find a home. I'll tell you what I'll do, Coster. You select two friends

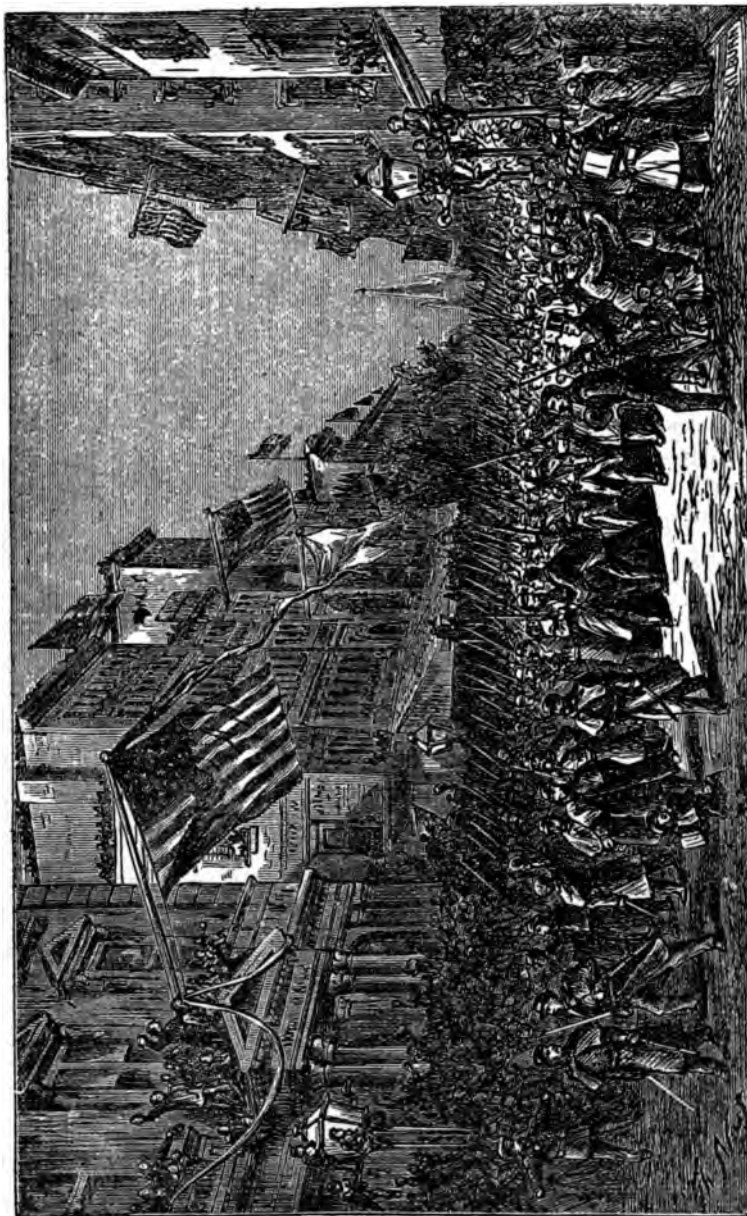
and I'll select one. Let them get together and appraise the value of your house and lot, and I'll give you twenty thousand dollars more than they decide as the value." Under such a liberal proposition, the transfer of the land was soon made, and the construction of the mammoth hotel begun.

It was completed and opened in 1836, the marvel of that age, with its elegant rooms and equipments, and its interior quadrangle, now used for the lunch counter and room, laid out as a garden with a fountain in the centre. Notwithstanding that it was an expensive place—it cost a dollar a day—the hotel became the stopping-place of many distinguished men. Among the names of its guests may be mentioned Andrew Jackson, "Sam" Houston, Webster, Clay, Lincoln, Irving, Hawthorne, Dickens, Macready, Rachel, and Jenny Lind. Thurlow Weed had his political headquarters in the hotel, whence he dictated the policy of his party and determined its candidates for office. He was one of the first of the political "bosses" who have ruled the state and the nation. Many banquets were given here to distinguished visitors to the city; among these may be mentioned one given to the Prince de Joinville on November 26, 1840; and a contemporary historian remarks that "the dinner was held to be an exceptional one, inasmuch as the great number of dignitaries, officers of the army and navy, etc., invited, filled the capacity of the hall, and as there was not any space left for the usual hangers-on of our city fathers, the entertainment was hailed as one worthy of the guests and of the occasion." In 1844, on St. Valentine's Day, was given the first of the "Bachelor's balls," which was long remembered for its brilliancy.

Let us turn to another incident at the hotel as told by the late Rev. Dr. Dix, the rector of Trinity, describing the

passage through the city of the Sixth Massachusetts, the first regiment of New England troops answering President Lincoln's call for 75,000 troops immediately after the firing on Fort Sumter.

They came in at night; and it was understood that, after breakfasting at the Astor House the march would be resumed. By nine o'clock in the morning, an immense crowd had assembled about the hotel; Broadway, from Barclay to Fulton Street, and the lower end of Park Row, were occupied by a dense mass of human beings, all watching the front entrance, at which the regiment was to file out. From side to side, from wall to wall, extended that innumerable host, silent as the grave, expectant, something unspeakable in their faces. It was the dead, deep hush before the thunderstorm. At last a low murmur was heard; it sounded something like the gasp of men in suspense; and the cause was that the soldiers had appeared, their leading files descending the steps. By the twinkle of their bayonets above the heads of the crowd their course could be traced into the open street in front. Formed, at last, in column, they stood, the band at the head; and the word was given "March!" Still dead silence prevailed. Then the drums rolled out the time—the regiment was in motion. And then the band, bursting into volume, struck up—what other tune could the Massachusetts men have chosen?"—*"Yankee Doodle."* I caught about two bars and a half of the old music, not more; for instantly there arose a sound such as many a man never heard in his life, and never will hear; such as is never heard more than once in a lifetime. Not more awful is the thunder of heaven as, with sudden peal, it smites into silence all lesser sounds, and, rolling through the vault above us, fills earth and sky with the shock of its terrible voice. One terrific roar burst from the multitude, leaving nothing audible save its own reverberation. We saw the heads of armed men, the gleam of their weapons, the regimental colors, all moving on, pageant-like; but naught could we hear save that hoarse, heavy surge—



THE SEVENTH REGIMENT MARCHING DOWN BROADWAY
(Thomas Nast—Original in 7th Regt. Armory)

one general acclaim, one wild shout of joy and hope, one endless cheer, rolling up and down, from side to side, above, below, to right, to left; the voice of approval, of consent, of unity in act and will. No one who saw and heard could doubt how New York was going.

On the nineteenth, New York's pride, the Seventh, marched down Broadway with nine hundred and ninety-one men at three o'clock in the afternoon, bound for the national capital, amid scenes of even greater enthusiasm—for these were New York's own. Nor were the scenes of wild joy and pride much less in the following week as the rest of the city's regiments marched down Broadway en route to Washington—the Sixth, the Twelfth, the Seventy-first, the Eighth, the Thirteenth, the Twenty-eighth, and the Sixty-ninth. The scenes were repeated in 1898, at the time of the Spanish War, for most of these same regiments, but not for all of those mentioned above—for two of them had ceased to exist, and one of them, alas! did not go.

The Astor House became the resort of many of the literary men of the first half of the nineteenth century; and it was no unusual thing to see many of the city's best in journalism, art, literature, science, and business taking their afternoon lounge upon its steps, watching the omnibuses, when, as one writer says, "You could walk from Barnum's to the Battery on their roofs," so numerous were they, or exchanging salutations with the passing crowds of shoppers and merchants on their daily walk from business to their homes below Bleeker Street; for, like the present mayor of New York, Mr. Gaynor, they disdained to ride to or from their places of business.

There were several reasons why they did this: their shops and offices were not too far away; they liked the



BROADWAY STAGES

exercise; riding would in those simple days have been considered as tending toward luxury and indolence; and last, there were very few private equipages and the risk too great to use them over the rough cobblestones with which the streets were paved. In fact, there were so few private carriages that each was as well known as if the owner's name had been blazoned on its sides. The public vehicles were rickety, dilapidated affairs, taken only in cases of dire necessity. They were not even needed at funerals, for the body was borne by underbearers and everybody walked to the grave, usually only a few blocks away.

In pre-Revolutionary days, stage routes were established to Boston, Philadelphia, Bordentown, Burlington, and other distant places. A foot post to Albany is mentioned in 1730, and the post was sent by rider in colonial days. In 1786, the Legislature granted to Isaac Van Wyck, Talmage Hall, and John Kenny, all Columbia County men, the exclusive right "to erect, set up and carry on, and drive stage wagons between New York and Albany on the east side of the river, for a period of ten years, forbidding all opposition to them under penalty of two hundred pounds." The grantees were obliged to furnish covered wagons, drawn by four horses each, and the fare was not to exceed fourpence a mile; and weekly trips were imperative. The trip was advertised to be made in two days in the summer. The venture was evidently a success; for in 1793, the stage was advertised to leave Albany twice a week and not to carry more than ten passengers. Notwithstanding the traffic, the roads were bad, the stages were uncomfortable, and the trip fatiguing, as the passengers were routed up about three or four o'clock in the morning and travelled until nine, or later, at night, putting up at poor and ill-kept inns. The stages originally started from Cortlandt Street, but later from Broad-

way and Twenty-third Street; the route, of course, was over the Boston Road from that point to Kingsbridge. The distance was 159 miles, though Colles's map of the roads of the United States in 1789 gives it as 155½ to the ferry at Greenbush. Every one who could do so travelled on horseback, as the stage was not of the kind we read of in Dickens. The steamboat and the railroad sealed the doom of the old stages.

In an advertisement of 1811, there is notice of the stage to Greenwich Village, and even earlier there was a stage to Harlem. In 1816, Asa Hall started a stage route from the Battery via Broadway to Greenwich, which years afterwards came into the possession of Kipp & Brown; and stages ran to other parts of the island. Kipp & Brown were very popular; and when their stables were burned out in 1848 a performance was given at the Broadway Theatre for their benefit. In 1819, a stage route was started from the Bowling Green to Bloomingdale.

For the city travel, these stages were superseded by the omnibuses, the first of which appeared in 1830, running from the Bowling Green via Broadway to Bleecker Street; but the drivers were obliging, and if the weather was bad, or there was a lady passenger, the bus would go as far as the Kip mansion between Washington Place and Waverly Place, on the site of the New York Hotel. The buses, at first, were few in number, but were finely painted and decorated, bearing the names of distinguished Americans upon their sides. There were the *Lady Washington*, the *Lady Clinton*, the *George Washington*, the *De Witt Clinton*, the *Benjamin Franklin*, and others. Some of the panels with which the buses were decorated were true works of art. The buses became popular, and there were soon three lines, run by Brower,

Jones, and Colvin; the fare was a shilling (twelve and a half cents), collected by a small boy who stood at the entrance step. The entrance at first was on the side until Kipp & Brown changed it to the rear of the Greenwich buses, and the others followed suit. Other stage routes were established to the shipbuilding section on the east side, to Harlem, to Chelsea (Shepherd & Johnson), and to other places on the island.

The omnibuses were drawn by four matched horses, and there was great rivalry among the different lines. The drivers were wonderful whips, and it was truly a marvelous sight to see the dexterity with which they steered through the crowded thoroughfare, avoiding accidents and collisions by a hair's breadth. In the winter time great sleighs, drawn by four, six, or eight horses, took the place of the buses, and the New York boy thought he had a perfect right to snowball the passengers as the great sleighs passed by. Many people took the sleighs for the pure enjoyment of the ride; and as there were no car tracks to be cleared, the snow remained in the street for weeks, making a long spell of sleighing weather. The doom of the stages was sealed when the street cars came; though Broadway stages held on until the seventies, because there was no car track on Broadway and the people were set against the street being still further congested in its traffic by the presence of surface cars. The Fifth Avenue line remained as a relic of the golden era of the omnibus; it "lagged superfluous on the stage" and was the butt of many jests on the part of the up-to-date New Yorker until the introduction of the automobile omnibus in July, 1907, though experiments with electricity and gasoline motors had been carried on since 1900. Another one of the lines, started in 1819 from the Battery to Bloomingdale, gradually worked its lower terminus up Broadway until

it reached the starting-point in front of the Union Dime Savings Bank at Broadway and Thirty-second Street in the eighties and then disappeared from human ken.

In 1746, an act of the Provincial Assembly authorized the holding of a lottery to raise a sufficient sum of money for the advancement of learning within the colony, "and Towards the Founding a Colledge within the same." It took many lotteries and many excise moneys before a sufficient sum was obtained for the establishment of the desired college. Religious controversies arose as to the management, the Presbyterian and the Reformed Dutch Churches objecting to the prospective control of the college by the Established Church when all of the colonists were to be taxed for its support. Trinity Church gave a tract of land on the west side of Broadway, provided the president should be a member of the Church of England. The differences were not yet healed when the corner-stone of King's College was laid in 1756, with Dr. Samuel Johnson of Stratford in Connecticut as the first president. He was succeeded, in 1763, by Dr. Myles Cooper, who remained until the Revolution. He was a hot-headed royalist and took the wrong side in the dissensions which arose from the passage of the Stamp Act onwards, and when the news of Lexington reached New York barely escaped from maltreatment by a mob of patriots.

During the Revolution, the college buildings were used as barracks and hospitals by the British, and the college was closed as an institution of learning. It was reopened in 1784 as Columbia College, and remained in the vicinity of Park Place until 1857, when it was removed to Madison Avenue and Forty-eighth Street. The neighborhood of the college at Park Place was the location of the best society of the city for many years.

As early as 1770 several physicians notified Lieutenant-

Governor Colden that subscriptions were being solicited for the establishment of a public hospital; and a royal charter was obtained the following year. The land secured was from the Rutgers farm and was considered far out of town. It comprised five acres on the west side of Broadway, between the present Duane and Worth streets, Thomas Street being cut through later. The corner-stone of the building was laid by Governor Tryon, September 2, 1773. The building was partially burnt before completion, but was repaired and was ready for occupancy at the time the Revolution began. It was located on the Kalck Hook, a hill some forty or fifty feet high, situated on the line of Broadway, and, therefore, a commanding position for fortifications, which were erected here by the British, the hospital building, itself, being used by the soldiers and being surrounded by a fort.

After the Revolution, the buildings and grounds were put in order, and the hospital was ready for the reception of patients in 1791. In 1787 and 1788, a number of bodies for the purposes of dissection by the students were dug up from the potter's field and from the old negro burial-ground. These were legitimate fields for cadavers; but when the resurrectionists began to invade private cemeteries, the indignation of the people was aroused, and the medical profession was looked upon with scant reverence by the people at large. On the thirteenth of April, 1788, while the minds of the people were in this agitated state, some students at the hospital exposed the limbs of a body at one of the windows in full view of a group of boys who were at play near the building. The news spread like lightning, and soon an enormous crowd assembled, burst open the doors of the hospital, destroyed a valuable collection of anatomical specimens, and carried off and buried several

subjects which they found. The physicians hid themselves, but were discovered and would have suffered severely at the hands of the infuriated mob if the magistrates had not interfered; at last, the mob dispersed, carrying the accounts of their actions to all parts of the city.

The next morning a still larger crowd gathered with the intention of searching the houses of all suspected physicians; but owing to the remonstrances of Clinton, Jay, Hamilton, and others of the leading citizens, the mob dispersed. The students were removed to the jail; but in the afternoon a violent party gathered about the jail and demanded the surrender of the students, a demand that was, of course, refused. This aroused the worst spirits of the mob; and Mayor Duane, fearing mob violence, called out the militia, one party of which went quietly to the jail without interference. A second party was arrested and disarmed by the mob, who then attempted to storm the building. The mayor, John Jay, and others attempted to pacify the mob, and Jay was struck by a brickbat and felled to the earth. The mayor was about to give the order to fire, when Baron Steuben interposed and implored him to desist; but before he could finish his entreaty, a stone whizzed through the air and laid him prostrate. "Fire, mayor, fire!" he cried; and Mayor Duane gave the order; the militia blazed away, and a number of rioters fell. Five persons were killed and seven or eight severely wounded. The students were sent out of town, and the public excitement slowly died out, though it was a long time before the ignorant could look upon the hospital without a sort of horror. Thus ended what is known in New York history as the "Doctors' Riot." It is surprising how much trouble can sometimes be caused by the pranks of thoughtless students.

The grounds of the hospital extended to Church Street, and in the early days constituted with those of Columbia College a sort of park in which were to be found some of the finest trees of all varieties on the island of Manhattan. Adjoining the hospital grounds on the south was the tobacco shop of John Anderson. His assistant in the shop was Mary Rogers, a handsome brunette, known as "the beautiful cigar girl." She received a good deal of admiring attention from the youth of the period. The whole city was horrified one day to learn that her lifeless body had been found floating in the Hudson near the Elysian Fields in Hoboken. The mystery of her death has never been solved, but her sad fate furnished Edgar Allan Poe with his story of *The Mystery of Marie Roget*.

In 1807, a lunatic asylum was built on the south side of the New York Hospital grounds and was used for that purpose until 1821, when the asylum was removed to Bloomingdale, overlooking the Hudson. The beautiful lawn and grand trees of the old hospital formed a delightful relief to the eye amid the lines of brick and stone that grew up on each side of Broadway; and the spot was a favorite one with the firemen and others when they held parades. After the Civil War, the property became too valuable to be longer used for hospital purposes, so it was cut up into building lots and sold, while the grand old trees went the way of all trees that stand in the way of improvement. The original building was vacated February 19, 1870. The hospital then remained in a state of suspension until the property on Fifteenth and Sixteenth streets, west of Fifth Avenue, was obtained. The new hospital on that site was begun in May, 1875, and opened on March 16, 1877.

At the beginning of the nineteenth century, the city



NEW YORK HOSPITAL, ABOUT 1800. BROADWAY, OPPOSITE PEARL STREET

extended as far north on Broadway as Anthony (Worth) Street; on the North River, as far as Harrison Street, and on the East River, as far as Rutgers Street. Above Worth Street there was a hilly country, sloping on the east toward the Freshwater, and on the west toward the Lispenard meadows and the Hudson, and dotted with the country seats of wealthy citizens. The Middle road ended at the present Astor Place, where a pale fence stretched across the road and formed the southern boundary of the Randall farm. When Broadway was regulated and graded through this section as far as Canal Street, there was considerable grading to be done; the deepest cut was on the hill south of Canal Street, between White and Walker, where the street had to be lowered twenty-three feet; over the ditch in the valley there was considerable filling in.

When the old palisade on Wall Street was removed (1699), it was necessary that there should be some northern line of defensive fortifications; and a palisade, following the configuration of the land approximately on the line north of Chambers Street, was erected from river to river. In 1756, during the French and Indian War, a row of one-story log huts, surrounded by a high wall, was erected on the negro burial-ground close to the line of the palisades. These extended from Broadway to Chatham Street and were used as barracks for the soldiers. After the Revolution, these buildings were in a dilapidated condition; but in 1794 they were leased by the corporation as dwellings and were occupied by free negroes and Indians engaged in broom- and basket-making. They did not long survive, however, but gave way to houses of a better character, Chambers Street being opened in 1796.

At this date, there were several houses on Broadway, one being occupied by the Widow Provoost; on the corner of Reade Street there was a stable. In 1810 the con-

struction of Washington Hall was begun, taking up about half the block on the east side between Chambers and Reade streets; it was completed in 1812. The building was one of the finest in the city and was to be used as a hotel and meeting-place, especially of the Federalists, as an offset to Tammany Hall, the rendezvous of the Repub-



From Valentine's *History of Broadway*

WASHINGTON HALL IN 1828

licans. On the twenty-second of February, 1813, during the war with Great Britain, Captain James Lawrence in command of the *Hornet* defeated and sank the British *Peacock*. Upon Lawrence's visit to New York in May, he was given the freedom of the city and was tendered a great banquet at Washington Hall on the fourth. Before the month was out, he was in Boston in command of the

Chesapeake, and within a month of the banquet in his honor, Lawrence was dead. At the conclusion of the war, a great ball was given at the Hall in honor of the return of peace, and among the participants were the best people of the city. In 1816, according to Haswell, there were only two billiard rooms in the city, one at the Café Français in Warren Street, and the other in Washington Hall. James Fenimore Cooper originated a club in 1824 which met at Washington Hall; this was the "Bread and Cheese Club," which numbered among its members the most eminent scholars and professional men of New York. Among these were Halleck, the poet; De Kay, the naturalist; William and John Duer, representing the bar; Renwick, philosophy; Verplanck and King, letters; Charles Davis and Philip Hone, merchants, and several who were politicians. It received its curious name from the fact that in balloting for membership, bread signified *aye*, and cheese *no*.

The *littérateurs*, dramatists, actors, and others of this period have been styled the "Knickerbocker Authors," the writers of the first half of the nineteenth century, who by their work rendered idle the sneer of the English that America had no literature and that we were a race of cribbers and copyists. The taunt was certainly well deserved in our early days, for our journals, and especially our first magazines, were nothing better than reproductions of the critiques, essays, poems, and other articles of the English journals. Irving and Cooper did an inestimable service to American literature by convincing Englishmen that we could do original writing, and Nathaniel P. Willis constituted the last of a triumvirate whose work was recognized across the water as being worthy and distinctive—in fact, the recognition of their literary ability came from the other side first, and it needed the British stamp of ap-

proval before they were fully accepted by our own people. Cooper and Irving are still read abroad, but who in America reads either of them to-day, and how many of our omnivorous novel readers have ever heard of Willis, the Beau Brummel of that era and the editor of the *Home Journal*?

Among other contributors to the "Knickerbocker Literature" were some whose names have endured, as William Cullen Bryant and Edgar Allan Poe; but how many know of James K. Paulding, the colleague of Irving in the *Salmagundi* papers, or of Gulian C. Verplanck? Fitz-Greene Halleck, the first American writer to have a statue erected to him in New York, is known to every schoolboy as the author of *Marco Bozzaris* and as the author of those tender and beautiful lines on the death of his friend Drake:

Green be the turf above thee,
Friend of my better days!
None knew thee but to love thee,
Nor named thee but to praise.

That friend, Joseph Rodman Drake, is known, of course, throughout the wide extent of the land as the author of that poem of glowing patriotism, *The American Flag*; but who knows of his *Culprit Fay*, his *To the Bronx*, and other exquisite poems? The same question may be asked in regard to others of that enthusiastic coterie. George P. Morris is known as the author of one poem, *Woodman, Spare that Tree*, and Samuel Woodworth as the author of *The Old Oaken Bucket*; but outside of these their work is unknown except to the student of American literature. Perhaps, after all, their cases and those of their contemporaries are only proofs of the universal law of the "survival of the fittest,"

as exemplified in their appearing at all in anthologies of American verse. In literature, as in education, there must be selection. Life is too short to read everything or to learn everything; and the anthologist selects that which is best, or most popular—they are, by no means, synonymous.

Others of the group were Bayard Taylor, Dr. Griswold, Richard Henry Stoddard, Charles Fenno Hoffman, and, later, Edmund Clarence Stedman; and among the journalists were Charles Dana, James Gordon Bennett, Horace Greeley, William Cullen Bryant, and William L. Stone.

We are more or less familiar with the features of Cooper, Irving, Bryant, Taylor, and others; but they are portraits taken in later life. It is hard for us to realize that these men were once young and that their youth was remarkable for its gaiety, if we except the greatest genius of them all, Edgar Allan Poe. They were full of the wine of life, endowed with the creative, imaginative, and poetic temperament. Their gatherings were jovial and friendly, and their feasts by no means patterned after those of Barmecide. These were the men who entertained Dickens and Thackeray at stately banquets at the City Hotel or Washington Hall or at less conventional, but probably more enjoyable, private affairs. The Irvings and their closest friends cut up "high jinks" when they went down to Cockloft Hall on the Passaic near Newark, which appears so often in the *Salmagundi* papers. Their satire was not always gentle, and there are accounts of challenges to the duelling ground at Weehawken, when some butt felt himself too much aggrieved at newspaper articles. The telegraph, the telephone, the steam railroad, the horse car, even, did not exist; and there were not that rush and bustle, that desire to make a "beat"

which distinguish the journalist of to-day. There was more leisure time for a stroll along Broadway, or to take one's stand at the City Hotel, the Astor House, or Washington Hall and admire the crowds of beautiful women engaged in the delightful feminine occupation of shopping at Jotham Smith's, Stewart's, or the other shops in these neighborhoods—the fair shoppers probably not unmindful of the admiring glances cast upon them.*

Irving, of course, was the creator of Diedrich Knickerbocker, that fine old Dutch historian, who is the symbol of New York just as much as John Bull is of England, or Uncle Sam of the United States. Our New York writers were the first in the land, antedating by several years the brilliant galaxy which made Boston almost synonymous with culture. Halleck, Bryant, Willis, and others were New Englanders, who sought the city for that encouragement and opportunity they could not get elsewhere, for here were the publishers and the magazines. Some of these were the *Mirror*, the *Broadway Journal*, edited by Poe, and the *Knickerbocker*, which, if it did not make its contributors rich, at least added to the reputation and power of its editor, Lewis Gaylord Clark.

George P. Putnam first established himself as a publisher at 155 Broadway, almost within the shadow of the City Hotel. The rhymed title-page of the *Fable for Critics* ends with

Set forth in October, the 31st day,
In the year '48, G. P. Putnam, Broadway.

Putnam moved in 1849 to Park Place, where the second edition of the *Fable* was brought out; but by a curious

* For a delightful account of many of the leading literary lights of this period, one should read Richard Henry Stoddard's *Recollections, Personal and Literary*.

oversight, the title-page was not re-edited, and the "G. P. Putnam, Broadway," stood as in the first edition. Hawthorne's first novel was published by the same house, but it was not a success. In 1853, *Putnam's Monthly* was first published at 321 Broadway, adjoining the Hospital. It was the first of the magazines which might be called *American*; that is, it was not made up of extracts from the British periodicals with a few poems and minor articles by American writers, for which very little, if anything, was paid. *Putnam's*, on the contrary, solicited work from American authors, to whom it paid at least five dollars a page for prose and ten dollars for a poem. It ceased publication in the panic of 1857, to resume again after the Civil War; but it was finally merged in *Scribner's Magazine*, and that in the *Century*.

Booksellers and publishers grew with the advancement of an American literature and followed the fashionable folk up town from below Canal Street. Twenty-five years ago, many of the book-houses were located on or near Broadway from Spring Street northward; now we find most of them above Fourteenth Street as far as the Forties; but they have deserted Broadway.

Dr. William Langstaff was an intimate friend of Drake and Halleck, and his shop at 360 Broadway was a favorite lounging-place of the two poets. Langstaff had been unsuccessful as a physician, and was set up in business by his friend, Henry Eckford, who also paid his expenses abroad, where he went with Drake and the latter's wife.

In 1828, Thomas Hogg was located as a florist in the Bowery, but removed to 388 Broadway in 1832; he was probably the first florist in the city. His *nurseries*, as we would call them to-day, were on the Bloomingdale Road near Twenty-third Street, and were known in those

days as *Hogg's Gardens*, an objective point to which to drive from the city.

One of the houses on the same block as Washington Hall contained two stores about twelve feet wide, one of which was occupied by A. T. Stewart. Stewart's career exemplifies the opportunities of this land better, probably, than that of any one else, if we except John Jacob Astor. Stewart came to this city in 1823 at the age of twenty, just after his graduation from Trinity College, Dublin. He readily found employment here as a teacher of modern languages and mathematics, in a private school in Roosevelt Street, and he stumbled into the dry-goods business almost by accident. A friend with whom he became intimate asked him for a loan of money with which to start a dry-goods store, and Stewart advanced the money. The friend was unable to begin business after he bought his stock; and Stewart, rather than lose his money, decided to open the store himself. This he did, first going to Ireland, where he converted all he had into cash, and returned with a stock of Belfast laces. He struggled along as best he could; but he did not make much headway, and found out very soon that he would be unable to meet a note which was falling due. He marked his goods down to wholesale prices and flooded the town with advertisements of the remarkable bargains he had to offer. Customers flocked to his store, and he soon had closed out his stock for enough to pay his note and restock his store. His customers found they had good bargains, and continued to trade with him, and his business grew. He had learned one lesson, however, which he practised through his subsequent career—and that was not to buy on credit.

At first he was his own clerk, porter, office boy, and everything else; but he was able to move from Number

283 Broadway in 1827 to a larger store at Number 262, and not long afterward, in 1830, to Number 257. April 7, 1844, Stewart bought from the heirs of John G. Coster, Washington Hall and its site, and proposed to turn it into a dry-goods store; but the building was burned on July fifth. The construction of his new building, which now occupies the entire block between Chambers and Reade Streets, was at once begun, and the original part, about half the block, was completed and opened for business in 1845. By 1862, the uptown movement of business and population was pronounced; and his business had so increased that he erected the store at Broadway and Tenth Street, gradually increasing it until he had the whole block to Ninth Street, and from Broadway to Fourth Avenue.

Stewart was also a great buyer of real estate, second only to Astor, and when he died, was the richest merchant in the world, his estate being valued at fifty millions of dollars. There was much litigation over it, as he left no direct heirs; and the stealing of his body from St. Mark's churchyard was more than a nine-days' sensation. His business enterprises went through several hands before they came into those of John Wanamaker, the great Philadelphia merchant, who continues the uptown store. The lower business was discontinued, and the edifice was converted into the Stewart office building, in which are housed several of the departments of the municipal government. The site has been considered several times for a new municipal building, but the Centre Street site was finally selected in 1909, and the building is now in course of construction.

In the days when Stewart first opened his marble store between Chambers and Reade Street, the opposite corner was occupied by the Irving House, a fashionable

hostelry, extending from Number 273 to Number 287½. Ball, Black, & Co., the jewellers, were located at the corner of Murray Street for some years, moving later to the neighborhood of Houston Street and then to Fifth Avenue, where they became Hays & Co. In an illustrated paper of 1858, their store at Murray Street, and many other,



EAST SIDE OF BROADWAY, BETWEEN DUANE AND PEARL STREETS, IN 1807

points on Broadway, are shown as decorated and illuminated on September first of that year in honor of the laying of the Atlantic cable by Cyrus W. Field.

The same rule held in this portion of Broadway as in the section below the Park—the east side of the street was occupied at first by meaner buildings, which gave place to those of a better quality before 1815. The first

residence of any degree of elegance was that erected by David Clarkson opposite the New York Hospital, at which point the proposed sidewalks were to stop—this was before 1800. Numbers 306 and 308 were exceptions to the rule, being three-story brick buildings of good quality. About 1818 a fine house was erected at 306 by John McKesson, and seems to have been a favorite with drug merchants, for it was occupied later by H. H. Schieffelin.

Several of the frame buildings between Duane and Pearl Streets were demolished in 1826 to make way for Masonic Hall. This was a fine, Gothic structure intended for the purposes of the Masonic fraternity. The second floor was considered the most splendid apartment of the kind in the United States, being ninety-five feet long, forty-seven feet wide, and twenty-five feet high. The room was an imitation of the Chapel of Henry VIII. in London, and was designed for public meetings, concerts, balls, and similar functions.

The same year that the Hall was erected, William Morgan, a member of the Masonic order living in Batavia, threatened to divulge the secrets of the organization. He was arrested on trumped-up charges and put in jail, in order to prevent him from making the anticipated disclosures. He was taken secretly from the jail by a party of Masons to Fort Niagara, where he remained several days as a prisoner, and then was seen no more. A body was found in the Niagara River which was identified as that of Morgan, though the identification was afterward discredited. "It was a good enough Morgan until after election," was the remark made by a political leader of the anti-Masonic party; and so it proved. The whole affair was investigated by committees of successive Legislatures, but nothing positive as to his fate has ever

been determined. The Morgan affair, however, was sufficient to arouse the passions of the people of the State; and Freemasonry was so decried on all sides that it became extremely unpopular. The politicians took hold

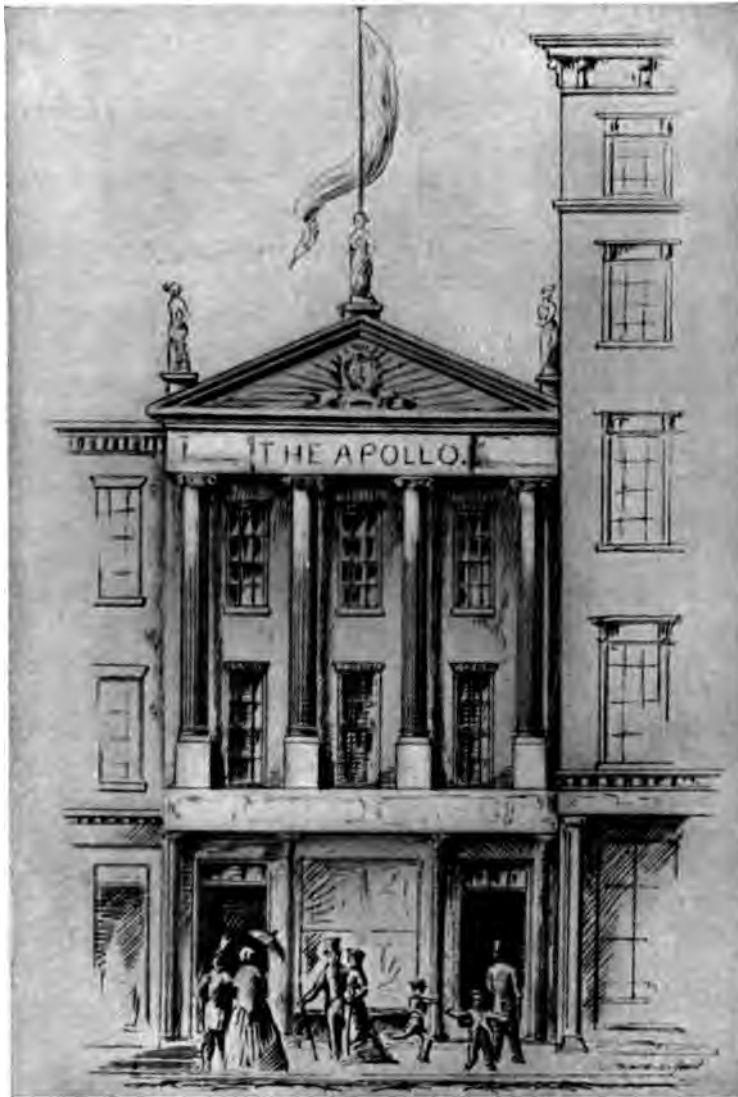


MASONIC HALL, ON THE EAST SIDE OF BROADWAY, BETWEEN DUANE
AND PEARL STREETS, 1830

of the matter, and exploited it for their own purposes, so that for a number of years, anti-Masonry was one of the planks in the political platforms of the warring parties, even spreading to other states. Under such circumstances, Masonry received "a black eye" from which it

did not recover for many years; and Masonic Hall lost its popularity. In 1841, it changed hands, the original stockholders receiving neither principal nor interest for their investment. The building then became known as Gothic Hall, and was used as a concert hall and for public meetings of various kinds, but was demolished after about twenty years of existence, and made way for fine business buildings at 314 and 316 Broadway.

Above Anthony Street, but one house had been erected previous to 1800. The property belonged to a Mr. Snyder who conducted a brewery between Pearl and Anthony Streets. After his death, his widow married Anthony Steenbach, who continued the brewery in connection with James Brown; their houses stood at the southeast and northeast corners of Anthony Street. Within a decade afterwards several fine residences were erected on the block. On the next block above, between Catherine Lane and Leonard Street, there was a grocery store occupied by Cahoone and the hardware store of Stephen Conover, established in 1810, developing later into the firm of Conover & Co., dealers in tiles, mantels, etc. These buildings gave way in 1840 to the building of the Society Library, used occasionally for entertainments. This Society had been started in 1754, and incorporated in 1772, the books being stored in the old City Hall in Wall Street. During the Revolution, the library was looted by the British soldiers, and the books hawked about the streets, and sold for drink, so that few of them remained when the Americans came into their own again. The Society started once more in 1793 in Nassau Street, removing later to Chambers Street, where it remained until 1840, when it removed to the above site on Broadway. It was soon crowded out of this last place by the upward trend of business in 1853, and removed temporarily to



APOLLO ROOMS IN 1830

the Bible House, and to its present home in University Place in 1857. The vacated building on Broadway was occupied by D. Appleton & Co., the publishers.

Edward Windust conducted one of the most famous oyster cellars in the city. It was situated on Park Row, not far from the Park Row Theatre, and was the resort of actors and literati. To give a list of its patrons would be to print a roster of the famous actors who made the old Park famous. Windust waxed rich, and about 1836 he opened the Athenæum Hotel, corner of Broadway and Leonard Street; but his trade did not follow him, and Windust was only too glad to return to his former location, to find, alas! that his trade had deserted him.

The property on the block between Leonard and Franklin Streets was occupied by David Clarkson until 1808, when he sold out for \$30,000 to Rufus King and John Lawrence, who cut the property up into building lots. The land extended about one hundred and sixty feet on Broadway, with a depth of three hundred and eighty feet. A panoramic exhibition was conducted here in 1810 by John J. Holland, but within five years afterwards fine residences were constructed. Numbers 350 and 352 were owned by Thomas Cooper, the tragedian, and Stephen Price, joint lessees of the Park Theatre. Their houses were joined together about 1850, after the death of Price, and conducted for several years as the Carlton House, which gave way in turn to the wholesale dry-goods house of E. S. Jaffray & Co.

Between Franklin and Canal Streets, a great part of the land belonged to the Van Cortlandts; and other lots, including the old Colles reservoir at White Street, belonged to the city. There was little improvement here until after 1815, though in 1795 there appears an advertisement of Rickett's Amphitheatre, which stood on three

lots north of White Street and which was used as a circus and for panoramic and theatrical shows. Within five years later the erection of fine residences began; among the public buildings on the two blocks between White and Canal Streets were Florence's Hotel, Concert Hall at 404, Enterprise Hall at 410, and the Apollo Gallery at 412.

There were several characters to be seen on Broadway in those early days, threescore of years ago. Prominent among these was McDonald Clarke, familiarly known as "the mad poet." He had no ostensible means of support, but his friends saw that he did not want. Occasionally a set of verses over his signature would appear in print; and, as they were always love sonnets of a melancholy type, it was believed that the poet's madness was due to disappointed love. Another character was the "Gingerbread" man, a harmless lunatic, who was always seen on the trot as if anxious to get somewhere, but who never succeeded in getting to his destination, wherever it was. He received his odd name from the fact that his only visible diet was composed of the grotesque gingerbread figures which were common enough in all bakeshops until a few years ago. His pockets were usually well supplied with these delectable articles; he would be seen to take one out, munch it, and then run along on his usual trot to a street pump, take a drink of water, and then resume his never-ending journey to nowhere. Another personage was the "Lime-Kiln" man, also a harmless lunatic, whose clothes were always streaked with whitewash. It was surmised that he slept in the vacant lime-kilns that stood on the shore of the river, and the finding at last of his dead body in one of these gave confirmation to the story. The identity of these two wayfarers has remained a mystery.

Of a different class from these three, was "Dandy" Cox, a good-looking, showy mulatto, who made a living by repairing men's clothes; and a very good living too, if we are to judge by his appearance in public with his high-stepping horse, his brilliant, not to say gaudy, apparel, with his little darky tiger hanging on behind his high two-wheeled vehicle. Cox was a caricature of the ultra-fashionables of the period, but his showy appearance on Broadway was as good an advertisement as any Barnum could concoct. An adventurer who cut a wide swath in society for a time was the bogus Baron Von Hoffman, who came near to marrying one of the rich society belles. His imposture was detected, and he made a pretence of shooting himself. The *Evening Post* of June 12, 1823, says: "Baron Von Hoffman of Sirony, who used to serenade our ladies with the Tyrolese air so merrily, under their windows on Broadway, a year or two ago, and one day took French leave of them all, now shows away as one of the 'nobility and persons of distinction in Dublin.' " Halleck followed this up with an ode addressed to the vanished "Baron."

How light was thy heart till thy money was gone!
And when all was gone, 't was the devil to find thee;
The nest still remained, but the eagle was flown.

One of the two four-in-hand teams known to the Knickerbocker era was that owned and driven by Henry Marx, a noted fop of the day with independent means, who had the courage to depart from the sombre dress of the period and appear in habiliments expressing his own fancy; in consequence, he was known as "Dandy" Marx. He was the first man to appear on Broadway with a *waxed* moustache. He originated and commanded a company

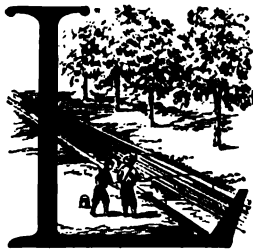
of hussars which became famous among the militia of the city and which had enrolled in its ranks the young fellows of the best families of the city—a forerunner of Squadron “A.” Marx himself belonged to one of the leading families, and though handsome, manly, and generous, died a bachelor.

Another wretched individual who haunted Broadway and the publishers there was Poe, who made double money on more than one occasion by selling the same poem or article to two different magazines—one of the vagaries of his genius, a lack of conscience. Upon one occasion he entered the office of Mr. Putnam on Broadway and, like Coleridge’s ancient mariner, fixed the publisher with “glittering eye.” “I am Mr. Poe.” Mr. Putnam was all attention at this self-introduction from the author of *The Raven* and *The Gold Bug*. The visitor then went on to explain that he had a new theory of the universe, in comparison with which Newton’s discovery of gravitation was a mere incident. He called for pen, ink, and paper and was soon furiously at work. The publisher left the office to go home, the bookkeeper also left, and finally the porter, who put the poet out. Poe returned the next day, and continued at work and completed his paper on the third day, working at high pressure in a half-intoxicated condition. After receiving two advances from the publisher for his work, the poet demanded a third; and, upon being refused, threatened to take a copy and sell to another publisher. Poe was very optimistic about this work—*Eureka, a Prose Poem*—and wanted Putnam to issue a first edition of one million copies; the publisher printed seven hundred and fifty, two thirds of which were on the shelves at the end of the year. In this new theory of the universe it seems that Poe may have forestalled the nebular hypothesis as put forth

by the astronomers. Whether it was an inspiration on his part, or whether he had picked up some stray facts in regard to it from various scientific articles, who can say?

CHAPTER VIII

FROM CANAL STREET TO UNION SQUARE



LYING northeast of the City Hall Park was the pond which has been frequently mentioned in these pages, the Collect, or Freshwater. It had outlets to both the East River and to the Hudson, and it had been proposed several times from very early days to connect the two rivers by a canal across the island, making of the Collect an inland harbor, or basin. Near the North River, the little stream found its way through swamps and meadow land, which were known as Lispenard's Meadows after the owner, Leonard Lispenard, who had married the daughter of Anthony Rutgers, the original grantee from the city in 1730. Under the terms of his grant, Rutgers was obliged to drain the land; but it was not until 1792 that steps were taken to render the land useful for building purposes. Then followed plan after plan for disposing of the water of the Collect and its outlets; and these were of such diverging character that in the multitude of schemes nothing was done. At last, in 1808, the proprietors of adjoining lands in despair at the inactivity of the local authorities, petitioned the

Legislature for the appointment of a commission that would adopt and carry out any one plan, however imperfect, rather than that they should continue to be held up in their improvements by so many fluctuating ideas. The result was the laying out of a street one hundred feet wide, through the middle of which was an open ditch, or canal, with planked sides, which continued to carry



Drawn by A. Anderson, 1785

LISPENARD'S MEADOWS, TAKEN FROM THE SITE OF THE ST. NICHOLAS
HOTEL, BROADWAY

off the water of the Collect. Trees were planted along the sides of the ditch and the street became populated; but this took several years to accomplish.

In early days, the meadows were a favorite place for the sportsmen of the town, as ducks, snipe, and other game were plentiful. In the winter time, the skaters occupied the frozen meadows, and the slopes of the hills

From Canal Street to Union Square 173

were convenient coasting places for the younger people. The Trinity Church farm extended as far north as this on the shore of the Hudson. Wishing to help the Lutheran Church located at Rector Street, the Trinity corporation offered it several acres of land near the meadows; but after looking it over, the officers of the Lutheran Church declined the offer, as the land, in their opinion, was not



THE STONE BRIDGE AT CANAL STREET
(From Valentine's *Manual*, 1857)

worth fencing in. The river road to Greenwich passed over the meadows on a causeway and bridge. All that now remains of the ancient meadow is the small, triangular park at the foot of Canal Street near the Hudson.

The regulating and grading of the streets in the vicinity were going on and the tops of the hills were used in filling in the Collect and the low land of Duggan Street, as it was first called after a tanner of that name

who was located at Broadway and Canal Street. Within twenty years afterwards, about 1840, the canal became a covered sewer, which still continues to draw off the water from the springs which fed the ancient Freshwater Pond. At Broadway the stream was crossed by an arched bridge, which was known as the Stone Bridge. This was probably built by the British when occupying the city during the Revolution to serve as a means of communication between their fortifications on the Kalck Hook and those above the stream at Bayard's, or Bunker, Hill. The ancient bridge is buried some eight or ten feet below the surface of the present thoroughfare; and when the engineers come to build the proposed subway under the line of Broadway, they will run across the old landmark. Near the bridge was the Stone Bridge Tavern. About 1850, the New York and New Haven Railroad had its station near the site of the bridge—this was then about the centre of the city.

In 1801, the Legislature authorized the appointment of a commission to lay out the upper part of the island above Houston Street in streets and avenues. The commission, consisting of Simeon De Witt, Gouverneur Morris and John Rutherford, began its work in 1807 with John Randall, Jr., as surveyor; the work was finished and the final plan submitted in 1821. In the plan of streets, no allowance was made for the natural configuration of the land nor for the lanes and roads already existing, except in a few cases, as with the Boston Road. Instead, a system of broad, parallel avenues, crossed by streets at right angles, was adopted which, while it might make for convenience, did not make for beauty, especially as the commission was chary in the allotment of spaces for public parks, for which, at that time, they could see no adequate reason. Their lack

From Canal Street to Union Square 175

of foresight in that respect has since cost the city many unnecessary millions of dollars which might have been saved if the plan had included a number of parks for the prospective population. In the formation of this plan, the idea was at first seriously considered of doing away with Broadway altogether, as it was believed that the main artery of the city's business life would be the Boston Road, leading from the Park via Park Row and the Bowery. In fact, Felix Oldboy designates Broadway as "an accidental thoroughfare." The laying out of the city as far north as One Hundred and Fifty-fifth Street caused a good deal of merriment on the part of the general population, and a good deal of fun was poked at the commissioners for their optimism, for which they felt called upon to apologize.

The delay in the improvement of Canal Street held back the development of Broadway above that street for several years. The principal owner of property was Nicholas Bayard, whose farm extended across Broadway above the canal, so that the Middle Road divided it into the west and east farms. This land was badly cut up by fortifications which the British had erected during the Revolution. North of Bayard's west farm was the Herring estate, which extended north from Bleeker Street. Bayard's east farm extended to between Prince and Houston Streets; above this was the land of Alderman Dyckman; above him was the land of Anthony L. Bleeker, and above him was the Herring property, which thus crossed the line of the road—the eastern boundary of these lands was the Boston Road, or the Bowery. In 1802, the Middle Road was surveyed and a plan devised for its regulation which was adopted, but which had to wait for the completion of some plan in regard to Canal Street. In 1805, Broadway was regu-

lated as far as Prince Street, and in 1806, as far as Great Jones Street; in the following year (1807), to Art Street (also called Stuyvesant Street and Astor Place). By 1809, the street was paved and sidewalks completed as far as Art Street. In the same year, Mr. Samuel Burling offered to the city as many poplar trees as might line Broadway, provided the city would stand the expense of carting them and setting them out. The proposition was accepted by the corporation as "an additional beauty to Broadway, the pride of our city." There was public spirit for you. We do not find it in later days, when some of the biggest swindles perpetrated against the city have been the enormous prices of trees which have been used to line our boulevards and streets, and which ought to have been supplied by the nurseries in our public parks.

A few pioneers found their way above Canal Street, but the war with England in 1812 deterred others from trying the experiment. By 1820, however, there were a good many settlers as well as a good many vacant lots. The houses generally were of a poor character; though several fine residences, belonging to such people as Abijah Hammond, Elbert Anderson, Gabriel V. Ludlow, Albert S. Pell, Foxhall A. Parker, and Citizen Genêt, who had become a citizen of the United States after giving Washington so much trouble when French minister, were distributed along the thoroughfare as far as Astor Place. Stephen B. Munn was a speculative builder, who erected numerous houses and probably reaped the benefit of his foresight; nor must we omit Astor, who owned property everywhere on the island, whose son-in-law, Walter Langdon, occupied a handsome house between Prince and Houston Streets, on the west side. On the corner of Prince Street, was Dr. Henry Mott, the father of the

From Canal Street to Union Square 177

famous Dr. Valentine Mott. Between Amity (Fourth) and Art streets were larger parcels of land still used as farms.

The development of Broadway after 1820 was steady, as the stages made the section convenient. About 1825, at 663 and 665 Broadway, two houses were constructed with marble fronts, probably the only houses in the country so constructed. A great deal of interest was displayed in them by the general public at first, and the favorite Sunday afternoon walk of many of the inhabitants was as far up Broadway as Bond Street in order to see the "Marble Houses," as they were called, located near the northern boundary of the city. Later, they became known as the Tremont Hotel. Two other houses on the opposite side of the street opposite Washington Place, with granite columns in front, remained standing almost within the present decade as reminders of the style of houses occupying Broadway at this early period. There are still standing two houses, one at the southwest corner of Third Street and the other at the southwest corner of Bleecker, which will give some idea of the style of houses of sixty years ago; though these have long since lost any air of distinction they may have possessed.

Under date of 1850, Philip Hone says the mania for converting Broadway into a street of shops seems to be greater than ever, and that there is scarcely a block which is not being so transformed. There was evidently carelessness in propping up adjoining houses while these changes were in progress; for he adds: "If they don't pull down the houses on Broadway, they fall of their own accord," referring to the startling crash of a falling house in his own neighborhood at Great Jones Street, whither he had removed in 1837 after the sale of his

old house at Park Place. At the close of 1869, the Board of Education established a Normal and High School for the city of New York. Temporary quarters were engaged at the southeast corner of Broadway and Fourth Street, and Thomas Hunter, principal of *old* 35 in West Thirteenth Street, was chosen president. On February 14, 1870, the school opened with seven hundred students. Work was begun on permanent buildings at Lexington Avenue and Sixty-eighth Street in 1872; and the College, for its name had been changed in the meantime, was removed to the new buildings in the fall of 1873.

Astor Place was originally a road leading from the Bowery over to the village of Greenwich and it was called the Sand Hill Road, as it led along the base of a range of low sand hills, called by the Dutch the *Zantberg*, which extended nearly all the way across the island. In 1766 Lieutenant-Governor Andrew Elliot purchased thirteen acres of land, extending from the Bowery westward almost to the present Sixth Avenue. His later purchases increased his holdings to twenty-one acres, which he called "Minto." In 1780, he was acting governor of the province under the British, and left the city when the evacuation took place in 1783. He had erected a fine mansion and beautified his grounds. The estate came into the possession of "Baron" Poelnitz, who sold it in 1790 to Robert R. Randall, a shipmaster and merchant of the city, for five thousand pounds. Mr. Randall had no children and no near heirs.

At the suggestion of Alexander Hamilton, so it is said, who made Mr. Randall's will, the deviser left the property, which he had named "The Sailors' Snug Harbor," as a home for aged and infirm seamen. Mr. Randall died in 1801, and his will at once became a

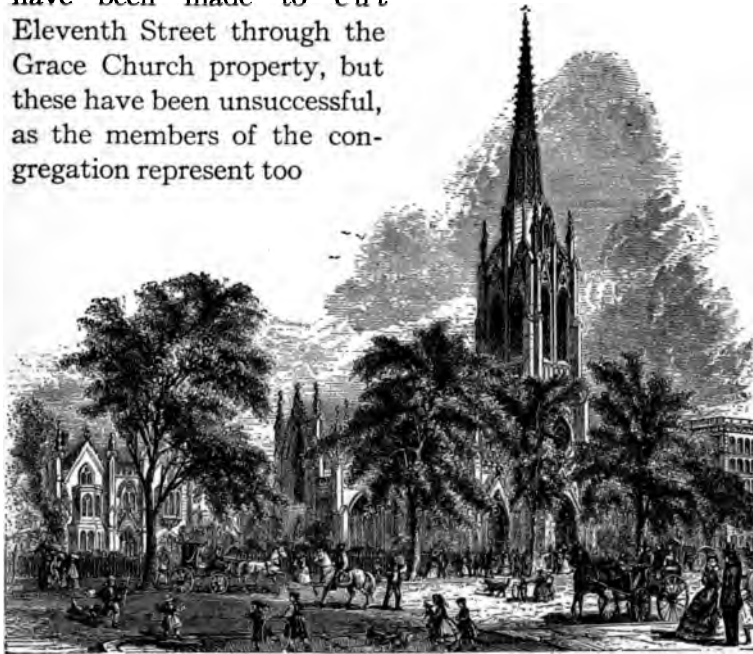
From Canal Street to Union Square 179

matter of litigation on the part of his relatives, and it was not until 1831 that the matter was settled by the Supreme Court of the United States. It had been Mr. Randall's intention to have had the home occupy his mansion on the farm, which was to furnish vegetables, etc., to the inmates; but by the time his will was upheld, the property had become so valuable that the trustees thought it better to buy land on Staten Island, and the Snug Harbor was opened there on August 1, 1833. The farm was divided up and let on long leaseholds which give the institution a yearly income of over \$400,000. This is one of the most munificent charities ever established by any one in the city.

Adjoining the "Minto" estate of Governor Elliot on the north, was the farm of Elias Brevoort, which extended from the Bowery to between Fifth and Sixth Avenues, its northern boundary being Eighteenth Street. The house stood on the Bowery on the line of Eleventh Street; and though the city made efforts in 1836 and 1849 to cut the street through, both attempts were blocked by the Dutch obstinacy of Hendrick Brevoort, then the venerable owner of the property.

As we have come up Broadway from the Bowling Green, our course has been in a straight line; but after we have passed Canal Street, ever before our eyes and growing larger as we get farther north is a beautiful church steeple, rising apparently in the middle of the thoroughfare. We find the reason at Tenth Street, where Broadway changes its course and where stands Grace Episcopal Church, which was built here in 1846, after the removal of the congregation from Rector Street. By the plan of the commissioners of 1807, it was intended that the two main roads of the island, the Bowery and Broadway, should meet at the "Tulip

tree," which was located in the present Union Square abreast of Sixteenth Street. It was found, however, that if Broadway were continued in its previous straight course, the meeting of the two roads would be below Fourteenth Street; and the line of the Middle Road was therefore changed at this point. Many suggestions have been made to cut Eleventh Street through the Grace Church property, but these have been unsuccessful, as the members of the congregation represent too



GRACE CHURCH AT THE CORNER OF TENTH STREET AND BROADWAY

much wealth and influence. Tweed told the church boldly that he was going to do it, and the church authorities told him to go ahead; but the street is not yet cut through. The church has been the scene of many fashionable weddings, and at several of these there have been scenes of crowding, spoliation of decorations, and exhibitions of bad manners which have made the New Yorker blush

From Canal Street to Union Square 181

for the reputation of American women; for it has been the sensation-loving and uninvited women who have been the chief offenders.

On the Tenth Street corner, there stood for many years the restaurant and bakery conducted by the Fleischmanns. The "bread line" here (only recently suspended) became one of the institutions of New York, for it was the custom of the firm to give away every night the bread and rolls that had not been used or sold during the day. It was a practical charity, duly appreciated by the poor and unfortunate—men, women, and children—who could be seen waiting here in line until midnight to receive their dole of bread, even on the coldest or most inclement nights.

On the block below, is the old Stewart building, now occupied by John Wanamaker, who erected a still larger and taller building below Ninth Street in 1908, the two buildings being connected by a subway and a bridge across Ninth Street. Stewart moved here in 1862, but it took several years before he acquired the whole block between Ninth and Tenth Streets, as the Ninth Street corner was occupied by the firm of Goupil & Co., the art dealers. I remember in my boyhood seeing upon the steps of the Stewart store an old woman who used to sell shrimps—the only place in the city where I ever saw it done.

Of the many churches that formerly stood on lower Broadway, the three already described—Trinity, St. Paul's, and Grace—are all that remain. When Grace Church left Rector Street, the corner lot there was sold for \$65,000. The following is a list of the churches that once stood on Broadway: (1823) St. Thomas's Episcopal, Houston Street, removed in 1870 to Fifth Avenue; (1817) Broadway Congregational, corner of Anthony

Street, dissolved; (1845) Unitarian Church of the Divine Unity, between Prince and Houston Streets; (1839 to 1865) Church of the Messiah, Unitarian, near Waverly Place; (1825) Scotch Baptist in a hall corner of Reade Street, and after several removals, again in Broadway near Bleecker Street; Swedenborgian, near Rector Street,



ST. THOMAS'S CHURCH, CORNER OF BROADWAY AND HOUSTON STREET,
ERECTED IN 1823

removed in 1816 near to Duane Street, and the Anglo-American Church of St. George the Martyr at Number 563; this last congregation, notwithstanding that it was assisted by Trinity, finally perished.

The Broadway Tabernacle, Congregational, stood for many years between Worth Street and Catherine

From Canal Street to Union Square 183

Lane on the east side of Broadway. It was the scene of the May meetings, where William Lloyd Garrison, Wendell Phillips, Gerrit Smith, and the gentle Quaker, Lucretia Mott, used to hold forth upon the iniquities of slavery and advocate its abolition. The Sacred Music Society, founded in 1823, gave oratorios and concerts in the Tabernacle, as did later musical organizations. In 1856, a great gathering of citizens was held in the Tabernacle to express their indignation at the assault on Charles Sumner by Preston Brooks while Sumner was at his seat in the United States Senate Chamber. The hall is said to have been the most convenient for public meetings and entertainments, as well as for religious observances, of any in the city. In the same year as the Sumner meeting, the Tabernacle was sold by its congregation, which moved to the corner of Broadway and Thirty-fourth Street, and which has since migrated to Broadway and Fifty-sixth Street. In closing these paragraphs on the Broadway churches, it may be well to repeat the remark of an old writer, who said that the churches in general kept clear of the noise and bustle of Broadway and sought their sites in quieter localities.

The hotels and restaurants sought Broadway for the very reason that the churches shunned it. The hotels that have at various times occupied sites on Broadway have been legion; with the exception of the Astor House, all the first-class hotels have departed from below Union Square. We may mention a few of the older and best known. On July 9, 1842, Mr. Pinteaux, a Frenchman, opened the *Café des Mille Colonnes* at the corner of Duane Street, which soon became famous under the management of F. Palmo. The accommodations and appointments of this restaurant were far superior to

anything of its kind yet seen in this country. In February, 1844, Palmo, who was an Italian and a great lover of the music of his native land, opened Palmo's Opera House at 39 and 41 Chambers Street. He was unsuccessful



**BROADWAY TABERNACLE, BETWEEN WORTH STREET AND CATHERINE LANE,
ON THE EAST SIDE OF BROADWAY**

ful as an impresario, and the theatre passed out of his hands, and became Burton's Theatre, where that amusing comedian held forth for a number of years. Another famous restaurant much frequented by the fashionable ladies and gentlemen of the thirties and forties was Taylor's, situated on the west side of Broadway at the



BROADWAY AT CANAL STREET IN 1862

northwest corner of Franklin Street, and figuring largely in the romance of the day. Ainslee's, between Duane and Anthony Streets, and Lovejoy's, at the corner of Worth Street, also shared in the public favor. Probably the ancestor of all the restaurants conducted in a foreign style was Guérin's at 120, which from 1815 onwards



Drawn by Eliza Greathouse

BROADWAY AND GRAND STREET

for several years sold confectionery, chocolate, pastry, liqueurs, etc.; this was below the Park, near Maiden Lane.

Of hotels proper, there was the Broadway Hotel at the northeast corner of Grand Street, erected by Abraham Davis before 1810, which became the headquarters of the Whigs when their party was formed and where the returns of the elections were received. After the election of 1844, the hotel lost prestige and declined in popularity. After 1830, a large room on one of the upper floors was used for some time as an armory and drill-room by the second company of the Seventh Regiment.

From Canal Street to Union Square 187

In 1847 the New York Hotel, the second of its name in the city, was opened at 721 Broadway, between Washington Place and Waverly Place, by S. B. Monnot. The undertaking was considered by many to be a perilous one, as the hotel was so far up-town. Monnot was successful, notwithstanding the croakers, and after several years was succeeded by Hiram Cranston. The hotel was a favorite one with Southerners and remained so during the Civil War; so much so, in fact, that it was almost constantly under supervision by the Federal secret service. A number of romances have been written concerning the part played by this hostelry in blockade running and similar enterprises for the advantage of the Confederacy. The building was demolished in 1895, and the site has been marked by a bronze tablet on the front of the great New York Commercial Building which has taken its place.

At Leonard Street, was a hotel known as the Carleton House; there was another at Walker Street, known as Florence's Hotel; and on the west side, corner of Spring Street, was the St. Nicholas, a name very appropriate considering the Dutch ancestry of the city, but which has not been employed by a really first-class hotel since the departure of the old house. The Sinclair House stood for a long time at Eighth Street and has only been demolished within the past five years. Three hotels may still be found above Chambers Street; these are the Hotel St. Denis at Eleventh Street; the Broadway Central, first established as the Grand Central at 671 on the site of the La Farge House, where, when it was the Grand Central, occurred the tragic death of James Fisk in 1872 at the hands of a rival for the favors of a worthless woman; and the Raleigh, opposite Bond Street, adjoining the Broadway Central. This last

suffered a severe fire in the fall of 1910, and is marked for demolition, a business building having been planned to take its place.

Speaking of the section of Broadway south of Bleecker Street, Charles H. Haswell says in his *Recollections of an Octogenarian*:

At this period [1850], Broadway was undergoing a rapid



Drawn by Eliza Greatorex

BROADWAY AND BLEECKER STREET

change into a street of trade. The City Hotel, after its long existence, at last disappeared. A. T. Stewart extended his building to the corner of Reade Street. All through Broadway, nearly to Bleecker Street, residences were coming down to be replaced by business structures.

A popular place of resort for journalists and writers for some years after 1858 was "Charles" an ill-ventilated and rather dingy place.

From Canal Street to Union Square 189

cellar on the east side of Broadway a few doors above Bleecker Street. It owed its vogue to Henry Clapp and his associates on the *Saturday Press*, a journal of ephemeral existence. When the paper suspended, there was pasted on the door of the publication rooms this notice: "This paper is obliged to discontinue publication for lack of funds; by a curious coincidence, the very reason for which it was started." "Pfaff's" was the resort of the Bohemians of both sexes, but there was good beer and there must have been good cooking, as we find that the place was visited occasionally by people who were somebodies in literature; such men as Thomas Bailey Aldrich, William Winter, the dramatic scholar and critic, William Dean Howells, Bayard Taylor, Edmund Clarence Stedman, and Walt Whitman, among others. George Arnold, the poet, was a visitor, and one night he saddened the crowd by his story of the suicide at the Stevens House of a friend of his, a young Englishman named Henry W. Herbert, who wrote under the pseudonym of "Frank Forrester." Another friend of Arnold, who introduced him to the coterie at "Pfaff's," was George Farrar Brown, better known to the reading public as "Artemus Ward." They were a jolly crowd, but journalism had fallen somewhat from its high estate of a generation before, when the "Bread and Cheese Club" held forth at Washington Hall.

Of the charms and delights of Broadway, we have the testimony of many people—visitors from abroad and from other sections of the country, as well as of residents of the city. Even as early as 1793, the accomplished wife of Vice-President John Adams writes to a friend at the prospect of leaving her residence at Richmond Hill and removing with the government to the larger town of Philadelphia: "And after all, it will not be Broad-

way." Let us also quote from Wilson's *Memorial History of New York*:

A contemporary gives an interesting picture of the Broadway of 1858. Once the seat of pleasant residences, shaded with trees, and famous for its walks and drives, it was now become a street of shops, hotels, and theatres. The business houses in the retail trade reached far up-town; the finer dwelling-houses were above Fourteenth Street and around Union and Madison Squares. "Broadway in 1858," says the *Crayon* of that year, "has become not unlike the Strand in London or a Paris boulevard. Early in the morning the street begins to fill with carts and vehicles bringing supplies from the country to the market. From all the by-streets which connect Broadway with the river crowds of men, women, wagons, and horses emerge from the Brooklyn, Hoboken, Williamsburgh, Staten Island, and New Jersey ferries. It is still very early in the morning; the shops are still closed; only here and there an omnibus makes its reluctant appearance, its driver and horses not having yet shaken off the sloth of the night. There are also some carriages stopping before the Astor House, Metropolitan, St. Nicholas, and other hotels with a load of passengers just coming in from the east, west, north, or from European or California steamers. At this early hour Broadway looks thoroughly respectable, like a big ball-room." The writer goes on to paint its various changes: "Soon after a crowd of clerks and business men rush down the famous thoroughfare. Then comes later the stream of fair women shoppers from the upper part of the town, filling the sidewalks; next, in the afternoon, the tide of business men rushes back along the same thoroughfare; and in the evening the street is again crowded with persons going to theatres and various amusements of the night." In the later hours the street is no longer "respectable"; it was filled with disreputable and noisy revellers; now the police and the watchmen were on the alert, and the noise of wild songs and gross revelry disturbed the peace of Broadway. Such was our favorite Broad-

From Canal Street to Union Square 191

way thirty-five years ago. How different now! The theatres are gone; the retail shops are moved up-town; a stately range of office buildings and wholesale stores lines the street, and but a few of the old hotels still linger on their early sites. In the day no milk-carts, no omnibuses, no crowds of fair women, no gallant pedestrians fill Broadway; at night no cries of revelry. It is silent and abandoned after eight o'clock. One is almost startled by its solitude. Broadway has become the business centre of the continent—perhaps of the world.

Though this was written in 1893, it is equally true to-day; and how changed the names of the merchants whose signs adorn the fronts of the buildings; for it was about this date that, owing to the persecutions of the Jewish people, the tide of immigration began from Russia and Poland. They have certainly made good in this land of opportunity, and have not been satisfied with anything less than a virtual monopoly of the greatest thoroughfare in the world. And the street has been divided into sections for each line of goods; here are general dry-goods; here, ready-made clothing, women's suits, furs, notions, children's clothing, type-writers, sporting goods, millinery:—each article may be found within a section of a few blocks, generally at wholesale, but more rarely at retail, and then only in the daytime. At night and on Sundays it might be the street of a deserted city, save for the street cars crawling lazily along.

CHAPTER IX

PLACES OF AMUSEMENT BELOW UNION SQUARE*



O give a list of the theatres, of the plays, and of the people that appeared in them would be to write a history of the New York stage; I can only lightly touch upon the many that have filled so large a part of New York life. The first theatre of any consequence to open after the Revolution was the Park Theatre, opposite City Hall Park in Park Row in 1798. As Broadway grew, the theatres grew with it; but there is not now a theatre on Broadway below Twenty-eighth Street. The circus seems to have been more popular before 1860 than at present, for there are records of several occupying the vacant lots of the thoroughfare before that time; some of these developed later into theatres, as in the case of Niblo's Garden. The same degree of popularity also extended to the negro minstrels; for while to-day there is not a permanent minstrel show on Broadway, if in the city, in those earlier days there were several com-

* In the preparation of this chapter I have been greatly indebted to *The History of the New York Stage*, by Thomas Allston Brown, published in three volumes by Dodd, Mead & Co. in 1903.

Amusement Places below Union Square 193

panies occupying Broadway houses at the same time—Christy, Dan Bryant, Kelly and Leon, Campbell, Wood, Pell and Trowbridge, Morris Brothers, and many more.

The New Yorker of the earlier day was fond of taking his amusements in gardens; and of these we find records of a great many, not only on Broadway, but elsewhere. Here concerts of music were given, exhibitions on the tight and slack ropes, displays of magic, and light plays. Besides these, there were the natural and artificial beauties of trees, plants, and flowers, and the enticements of shady nooks in which were served ices and other light refreshments. These gardens were eminently respectable and were visited by the best people. Many a gentle flirtation was carried on in these delightful places, and many a wedding ensued in consequence; nor were they ignorant of settlements in accordance with the code of honor which led to the duel in the early morning,—a relic of barbarism now happily gone forever. Many of the taverns had gardens attached which served as extra inducements to the guests of those days, when there were no palatial hotels of fifteen or more stories with electric lights, express elevators, and all the conveniences, and expense, of our own time. But there were compensations in the fact that the proprietor knew his guests and cared personally for their comfort, and that a stranger need not long remain without companionship of the best sort if he had anything to commend him.

Just above Murray Street, stood the inn and gardens of Mr. Montagnie, of which mention has already been made as the headquarters of the Sons of Liberty. Montagnie appears to have been here after the Revolution, his place then being called the United States Garden. John H. Contoit conducted the place from 1802 until 1805 when he was succeeded by Augustus Parise. Later,

a building called the Parthenon was erected on the site; and in 1825, Reuben Peale occupied the building as the American Museum, which was bought out several years later by P. T. Barnum and moved to the corner of Ann Street. Peale enjoyed a well-deserved patronage for fifteen years, the Museum being a place to which children could be taken with safety. On the block above Warren Street, a garden was maintained by a Mr. Cox. Contoit conducted his garden as above until 1805, when he moved to the block below near Park Place; four years later, he removed to 365 Broadway, between Leonard and Franklin Streets, where his New York Garden became the most fashionable resort of its kind in the city, and where it remained for about forty years.

The Mount Vernon Garden at the northwest corner of Leonard Street was opened July 19, 1800, by Joseph Corrie, who had been French cook to an English officer, and who made the *cuisine* of his place famous. At its opening, performances were given by the company from the Park Theatre, which house was closed for the summer. Close by at Thomas Street was the house of Anthony Rutgers who died in 1750; after his death it became a public house and with the surrounding grounds was called Ranelagh Garden, a popular place in its time.

The Bayard east farm above Canal Street was laid out by a Frenchman named Delacroix, in 1798, as the Vauxhall Garden, and was for some years a popular resort with its mead booths, flying horses, fireworks, concerts, etc. The proprietor was obliged to move in 1806 as population came up-town and crowded him out, and he located himself on Broadway, south of Astor Place, the Vauxhall extending east to the Bowery (Fourth Avenue). A ball was given once a week, and it became a place of great resort. Barnum hired it for a while in



Redrawn from an old print

CONTOIT'S GARDEN IN 1830

1840, and it was afterwards used for public meetings. The garden was much curtailed about 1827, when Lafayette Place was cut through the property; the buildings were demolished in 1855.

It was in Astor Place that there occurred a riot on the tenth of May, 1849, which is sometimes spoken of as the "Macready riot," the enmity of the rioters being directed against the famous English actor of that name who was appearing at the Opera House, whose site is now occupied by the Mercantile Library. The trouble grew out of the rivalry of Forrest and Macready, and the friends of the former aroused the passions of the multitude by making it a dispute between American and Englishman. The Seventh Regiment fired upon the mob, thirty-four of whom were killed and many wounded. The regiment itself had one hundred and forty-one of its members hurt, some seriously.

Up to the year 1824, the only marble building in the city was the City Hall; and so strong was the prejudice of workmen against the use of the stone for building purposes, that when John Scudder wished to erect the American Museum on the site of Hampden Hall at the corner of Ann Street and Broadway in the above year, not a workman could be persuaded to undertake the work, and, as a last resource, a convict was pardoned out of Greenwich prison on condition that he would do it. After the Revolution, Hampden Hall was the town residence of Andrew Hopper. In 1840 the museum came into the hands of Phineas T. Barnum, "The Great American Showman," who united with it the collection from Peale's New York Museum and continued his American Museum in the building until he was burned out, July 13, 1865. Barnum used to run what he called "a lecture room" in connection with the museum; and

Amusement Places below Union Square 197

here were given what he was pleased to call *moral* plays, so that many people who would not go to the theatre (horrible, demoralizing place!) went to see Barnum's show without any twinges of conscience. I remember visiting the museum here once when I was a very small lad, and the only recollection I have of what I saw was a whale swimming around in a glass tank. I know now



BURNING OF BARNUM'S MUSEUM, 1865

that it was only a blackfish, but it looked very big to my boyish eyes.

A rather funny incident is told of the old volunteer fire department in connection with Barnum's. The play was *The Patriots of '76*, and the manager invited the Lady Washington Light Guards, a well-drilled target company composed of members of Engine Company 49, to take part in the play. The men agreed to the proposal, intending to turn over their pay to some members of their engine company who were out of work. In due

time they appeared on the stage, some dressed as Continentals, others as Indians, and one as Moll Pitcher, the heroine of Monmouth; but while in the midst of an exciting act, the City Hall bell sounded an alarm of fire. "Boys," cried the foreman, who was acting with them, "boys, there 's a fire in the Seventh District!" With that, he and his thirty comrades bolted from the stage, rushed up Broadway for their engine, and soon returned with it—the most extraordinary looking fire company ever seen in the streets of a civilized or uncivilized community, Moll Pitcher at the head of the rope, and a live Indian brandishing a foreman's trumpet. On reaching the fire, followed by a motley and jeering crowd, they applied themselves to the brakes; while the manager of the museum was trying to explain to the audience the sudden and unexpected disappearance of the actors.

Many actors who afterwards became famous made their first appearances at Barnum's. From the way in which he used to keep them busy, it was said that his actors could always be known by the fact that they carried their dinner pails with them to the theatre.

He also employed a band, which occupied a balcony above the entrance and discoursed so-called music "from early morn to dewy eve." The story is told that a young fellow once applied to the great showman for a position in his band. Barnum told the applicant to go ahead. At the end of the week, the musician, seeing no pay coming, asked for it. "Pay!" cried the showman with a fine display of indignation; "we said nothing about pay. The honor of playing in my band is pay enough for a youngster like you." That the general public did not esteem the music as much as Barnum did is shown in the following lines from John G. Saxe:

Amusement Places below Union Square 199

I love the city, and the city's smoke;
The smell of gas; the dust of coal and coke;
The sound of bells; the tramp of hurrying feet;
The sight of pigs and Paphians in the street;
The jostling crowd; the never-ceasing noise
Of rattling coaches, and vociferous boys;
The cry of "Fire!" and the exciting scene
Of heroes running with their mad "mercheen";
Nay, now I think that I could even stand
The direful din of Barnum's brazen band,
So much I long to see the town again!

And Halleck gives us:

Sounds as of far-off bells came on his ears—
He fancied 't was the music of the spheres.
He was mistaken, it was no such thing,
'T was Yankee Doodle played by Scudder's band.

Barnum did not rebuild at Ann Street after the fire, but moved up-town. The site was taken by James Gordon Bennett, Senior, April 19, 1867, and the *New York Herald* was published here until August, 1893, when it removed to Thirty-fifth Street. Then the towering St. Paul Building was erected on the vacated site at Ann Street.

Between Howard and Grand streets, there was a building originally designed as a circus; but which, as appears from an advertisement of 1812, was the Olympic Theatre under the management of Dwyer and McKenzie. It was West's Circus before 1819, in which year it opened with *The Spy*. It had both a ring and a stage; and on the latter the Park Theatre Company appeared in 1822 as being at a safe distance from the city which, at that time, was scourged with yellow fever. In 1820 it was a circus under Victor Pepin's management,

and it remained a circus as late as 1825, when it was owned by Pierre Lorillard; it occupied the lots 442 to 448 Broadway. In 1827, the circus was converted into a theatre called the Broadway; and at one time, it was known as the Marine Theatre. The Olympic Theatre was, in 1837, built at 444 and the rest of the site was occupied by Tattersall's, a famous horse and carriage mart until the fifties. The theatre was at first unsuccessful, as it was ahead of the times in prices and quality of plays.

William Mitchell leased the house and opened it, December 9, 1839, as a low-priced house for amusing performances; and it soon became the fashion and the most popular place in the city. Steady prosperity followed until 1850, when Mitchell gave it up. George Holland was one of the chief attractions, and Frank Chanfrau appeared here as *Mose*, the typical Bowery b'hoy with his girl *Lize*.

The Olympic was a little bit of a place, with a stage not much larger than a modern sitting-room. Though assisted by a small and very able company, Mitchell, himself, was the mainstay of his petite theatre. He was a great mimic and "took off" the great lights of the stage, such as the elder Booth, Kean, and Forrest, in a manner that was excruciatingly funny. His crowning success was an imitation of Fannie Ellsler, the famous *danseuse*, who had won the hearts of New York by her grace and beauty. Ellsler's *pièce de résistance* was a ballet called *La Tarantule*, in which her grace and agility were at their best and aroused the wildest enthusiasm in her audiences at the Park. Mitchell called his caricature *The Mosquitoe*, and arrayed himself as an exact copy of the original.

He was a short, thick-set man, with heavy, bandy-legs, and red, full-moon comical face; and he made up for the part in short lace petticoats,

Amusement Places below Union Square 201

his dumpy extremities encased in flesh-colored tights, white satin slippers on his goodly sized feet, streamers of gay ribbons fluttering from his broad shoulders, his big round head encircled by a wreath of bright flowers; standing before you in a position of exaggerated grace, and with a fearful assumption of modesty, tremulously bowing to a perfect storm of cheers. Some faint conception may be formed of the nondescript apparition advertised to personate the most accomplished dancing woman of the age.

In the item of graceful repose, Ellsler by common consent won the day; but when the item of agility comes to be discussed, critics were divided, for Mitchell performed wonders in the jumping line, that were instigated by his arduous efforts to prevent his airy apparel from unduly rising and thus possibly shocking the more sensitive of his refined audience. The closing scene of *La Tarantule* as performed by Ellsler was pronounced the "acme" of graceful power, for Fanny's aerial flights were stupendous; they carried Young America to the very verge of hopeless lunacy. Mitchell's genius was, however, equal to such an emergency. He brought rope and hook to aid him in his determined resolve not to be outdone by a woman, and the burly humorist was through their agency hoisted high in air, where he kicked and floundered until the spectators were worn out with laughter, when he displayed a placard which triumphantly informed the public "*that he could jump higher and stay longer than Fanny ever could.*"

On being lowered from his giddy height Mitchell "pirouetted" for a while, embowered in carrots, turnips, parsnips, and onions, and when backing out gave vent to his overflowing feelings with the simple broken words, "*Tousand tank, me art too fool,*" which the arch knave had stolen bodily from the idol of the hour. Ellsler on more than one occasion witnessed the side-splitting contortions of Mitchell, and rewarded the incomparable mimic with genuine marks of her appreciation.*

* From *Last Days of Knickerbocker Life*, by Abram C. Dayton.

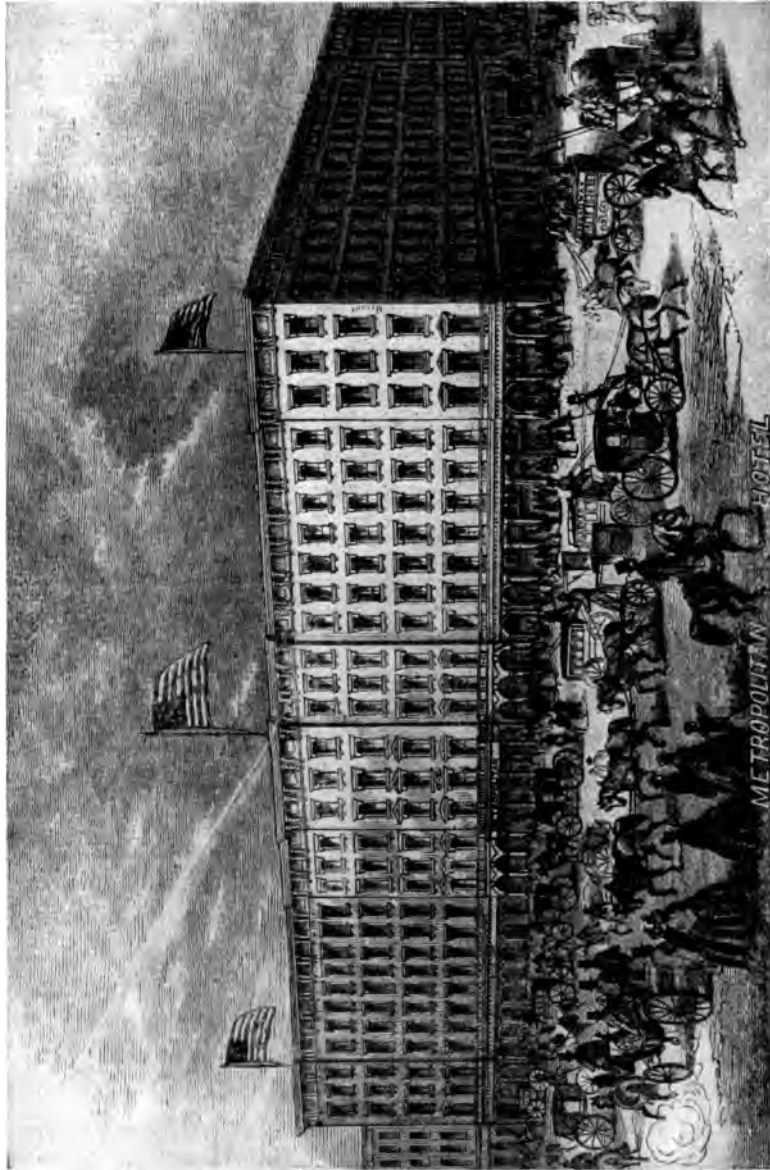
After Mitchell, Burton had it for a short time; and on November 6, 1850, it was opened as Fellow's Opera House and Hall of Lyrics with negro minstrels. It was used for some years for all kinds of entertainments that could pay the rent, and was called the American, and in 1853, Christy and Wood's Minstrel Hall. The "Old Circus," as it was sometimes called, was destroyed by fire, December 20, 1854; but was rebuilt and reopened. It became the Broadway Boudoir in January, 1860, and the American again in August, 1863. It was finally



NIBLO'S GARDEN, SHOWING TENTS

destroyed by fire on February 15, 1866, the City Assembly Rooms, which were overhead, suffering a like fate.

In early years, a circus called the Stadium was established on the northeast corner of Prince Street. Shortly after the War of 1812, it was used as a place for drilling officers of the militia; later, two brick buildings were erected on the site, in one of which the novelist Cooper lived for some time. The place was known as the Columbia Gardens in 1823 when William Niblo leased it, opening it as a restaurant and garden. In the garden was the old circus building, which Niblo converted into a fully equipped theatre in fifteen days after the burning of the Broadway Theatre, opening it July 4, 1827. A larger and better theatre building was erected and opened in 1829, which was known until its last



THE METROPOLITAN HOTEL AT PRINCE STREET

performance on March 23, 1895, as Niblo's Garden. Niblo retired from the management in May, 1861, and the owner, A. T. Stewart, greatly improved the house.

In 1852, the Metropolitan Hotel was erected between the theatre and Broadway, but the entrance to the theatre was always from Broadway. In the same building as the theatre was Niblo's Saloon, given over to concerts, spiritualistic meetings, etc., until May 9, 1865, when it was converted into the dining-room of the hotel. While many famous actors appeared at Niblo's, it is probably best remembered by the performances of *The Black Crook* under the management of Jarrett and Palmer, whose ballet and spectacular effects, not to mention the undressiness of the women performers, shocked the sense of propriety of the people of that era. The play had a great run, opening September 12, 1866, and closing January 4, 1868, after four hundred and seventy-five performances; it was revived two years later. If some of the shocked people of that day could see some of our recent plays, they would, by contrast, consider *The Black Crook* as fairly decent. The hotel and theatre were both demolished in 1895 to make way for a large office building.

When I was thirteen I made my first acquaintance with Scott in his novel of *Ivanhoe*, a novel which I have read several times since and which has never lost its glamor for me. A couple of years later I accepted an invitation from my brother, the late William R. Jenkins, who was at that time a dramatic critic and writer, to visit Niblo's and see a dramatization of *Ivanhoe*. There we chanced to meet Mr. O'Kelly, dramatic critic of the *Herald*, who, while correspondent of that paper in Cuba, had been arrested and imprisoned in Havana, thereby almost causing an international complication. The

Amusement Places below Union Square 205

only member of the cast that I remember was Ione Burke, who impersonated *Rebecca*. Perhaps my thoughts of chivalry had been too high pitched, or perhaps it was the scoffing of the two critics at the idea of a "blonde Jewess," but I remember the play impressed me as the veriest bathos. We stayed but one act and then wended our way to Booth's Theatre at Twenty-third Street and Sixth Avenue, where George Rignold was giving a benefit performance for some one—perhaps himself. Rignold was the first of the "matinée idols," and his performance of the gallant and heroic *Henry the Fifth* had taken by storm the hearts of the feminine portion of the community. This evening, he played *Romeo*, much to the amusement of the critics of all our papers, who united in genially roasting him.

I visited Niblo's several times afterwards, seeing spectacular plays, Irish dramas, and what not. One of the funniest performances I ever saw on any stage was at Niblo's; it was *The Babes in the Wood*, with George Fortescue, who weighed in the neighborhood of three hundred, and Harry Mestayer, who weighed well over two hundred, in the characters of the little girl and boy who were the victims of the cruel uncle. To add to the ludicrous character of the performance, the part of the captain of the band of kidnappers was taken by a dwarf less than four feet high—"Little Mac," I think he was called. The sight of this diminutive ruffian kidnapping the gigantic Fortescue was too funny for words. The last time I visited Niblo's was to see a play in which Minnie Seligman Cutting, a Jewish actress who had married a member of the old Knickerbocker family, took the leading part. I have forgotten the name of the play—it was laid among the ancient barbarians, either Britons, Teutons, or Scandinavians, and it was well done, but it was not a success.

Niblo's was already out of the world, and its audiences, recruited principally from the neighborhood, had little appreciation for and less knowledge of the ancient bar-



TRIPLER'S HALL, OR METROPOLITAN HALL, 1854

barians who overturned the Roman empire—their preference was melodrama.

Tripler's Hall was opened at 677 Broadway near Bond Street in 1850. Jenny Lind was to have opened the house, but it was not ready upon her arrival early in September of that year and so she appeared under the management of Barnum at Castle Garden; she sang

Amusement Places below Union Square 207

at Tripler's in October. On the twenty-seventh of September, the hall, which was known both as Tripler's and as the Metropolitan, was opened by Henrietta Sontag in concert, repeating here her European successes. On the twenty-fourth of February, 1852, a memorial service, presided over by Daniel Webster and addressed by Washington Irving and William Cullen Bryant, was held in honor of the novelist Cooper, who had died in the preceding September. On September 22, 1853, Adelina Patti, then a child ten years old, appeared in concert, and gave promise of the wonderful voice which was later to enthrall the world. On January 8, 1854, Metropolitan Hall and the adjoining La Farge House were destroyed by fire; but the hall was rebuilt and opened in the following September, under the name of the New York Theatre and Metropolitan Opera House. The great French actress Rachel appeared here in 1855 and during her engagement contracted a severe cold which resulted in her death.

Towards the close of the same year the house was remodelled and called Laura Keene's Varieties; and in the following year, it became Burton's Theatre. In 1859 it became the Winter Garden and Conservatory of the Arts, the first part of the title being that by which it is best known and which it retained until its total destruction by fire, March 23, 1867. The La Farge House was destroyed at the same time, but was rebuilt with a mansard roof and called the Grand Central Hotel. As the Winter Garden, the theatre was the scene of many notable performances; among others, those of Edwin Booth. I remember seeing here John E. Owens in the title rôle of the play *Solon Shingle*, whose father "fit in the Revolution."

When the fire occurred in the La Farge House, G. P.

Putnam was located at 661, adjoining the Winter Garden Theatre. The fire threatened 661, and the books and stationery of Putnam were carried across the way into Charles Scribner's store. The present firm of Charles Scribner's Sons is the direct descendant of Baker & Scribner, established in 1846. The publishers and book-sellers could afford to locate on Broadway. With the exception of Cooper, who was a rich man and independent of literature, I can find no other literary man who had a house on Broadway—as given elsewhere, there were several who boarded or lodged on the street. Probably, in those days, as in these, the charge was made that it was the publisher who became rich.

At 485 Broadway, near Broome Street, John Brougham built and opened the Lyceum in 1850; the performances were principally burlesques and farces. James W. Wallack secured the house and opened it on September 8, 1852, with his sons, Lester and Charles, as stage-manager and treasurer. It was the successor of the old Park Theatre in the selection and presentation of its plays, and was steadily successful for nearly ten years until the playgoers had moved up-town. The prices of admission were fifty and twenty-five cents. The elder Wallack ended his career here as an actor, but not as a manager; as in 1861 he removed to the northeast corner of Thirteenth Street. After Wallack left Number 485, the theatre was continued under various managers and names and underwent various vicissitudes—German opera, melodrama, the legitimate, concerts, Lent's Circus—until 1864, when it came under Wood's management for several years, being torn down in 1869 to make place for dry-goods stores.

James W. Wallack's last appearance on the stage was at the close of the season of 1862, when he made his



Redrawn from an old print

WALLACK'S (STAR) THEATRE, VIEW FROM FOURTH AVENUE

farewell speech; he died two years later. The Thirteenth Street theatre was continued by his more famous son Lester; and Wallack's Theatre and its stock company became synonymous with all that is best in dramatic art—in acting, in scenery, in stage management and presentation, and in the play itself. The fact that an actor had been a member of Wallack's company was sufficient recommendation as to ability and training to secure him admission into almost any theatre company in the land; although Thomas Allston Brown says that Wallack never *made* a good actor, but only engaged those who already had reputations. The first theatre I ever attended in my life was Wallack's; the play was, I believe, *The Clandestine Marriage*, though I have little recollection of it. I have very distinct recollections of many another play at Wallack's, as at one time in my life I was a regular first-nighter here, and I remember some famous casts, especially of *The School for Scandal* with John Gilbert, John Brougham, Charles Coghlan, Charles Rockwell, E. M. Holland, and Harry Becket, Madam Ponisi, Effie Germon, Stella Boniface, and Rose Coghlan. In 1881, Wallack's was about the only theatre on Broadway below Twenty-third Street, as the theatre-going public had deserted lower Broadway; so a new theatre was built at Thirtieth Street which Wallack managed almost up to the time of his death.

After Lester Wallack retired from the management of the Thirteenth Street house, it became for a time the German Theatre, passing later into the management of Henry E. Abbey, who presented grand opera. Wallack resumed possession January 10, 1883, and the house was reopened as the Star, March twenty-sixth. Then followed such a galaxy of actors as Modjeska, Lawrence Barrett, Booth, McCullough, Wilson Barrett, Boucicault,

Amusement Places below Union Square 211

Florence, Irving, Hermann, Robson, and Crane. But its days were numbered, and toward the last, it was given over to melodrama. The last performance, *The Man-o'-war's Man*, was given in April, 1901. It was a very rainy night, otherwise there would probably have been more people in the theatre to say good-bye to the old house. At the end of the performance there was a demonstration on the part of the audience, led by the photographer Rockwood; and those present united in singing *Auld Lang Syne* before dispersing to their homes. The building was demolished shortly afterward to make room for a great business structure. What recollections of great acting and fine casts the very name of Wallack's brings to those of us who are middle-aged!

The Chinese Rooms at 539 and 541, above Spring Street, were opened September 1, 1851, with the Bloomer Company, all ladies, who dressed in the bloomer costume and gave fine concerts. In February, 1852, it became the Broadway Casino and in 1853, Buckley's Minstrel Hall. As the Melodeon Concert Hall (1858-61) it became notorious and one of the sights of New York, as in that neighborhood was the "Tenderloin" of the day, with many gambling saloons and worse places. After the fire of July, 1865, which burned out his Ann Street place, Barnum rebuilt the Melodeon Hall and opened it September 6, 1865, as Barnum's New Museum. I was an occasional visitor here as a boy and remember seeing Tom Thumb and Minnie Warren as well as some of the giants and the play of *The Octoroon* in the lecture room. Fire broke out in the part of the building occupied by Van Amburgh's Menagerie on March 3, 1868, and the place was destroyed. It was very cold weather, and the front of the house and the fire ladders were encased in ice, while the firemen looked like walking icicles.

A second Broadway Theatre was opened in August, 1837, on the east side of Broadway near Walker Street in a building formerly known as Euterpean Hall and the Apollo Saloon; but the enterprise was soon abandoned.



BROADWAY THEATRE, EAST SIDE OF BROADWAY, BETWEEN PEARL AND WORTH STREETS, 1850

Across the street, at Number 412, was the Apollo Ball-Room, a very popular resort for politicians opposed to Tammany Hall. In May, 1844, the Congo Minstrels, later called the Negro Minstrels, appeared at Apollo Hall. During the time of Fernando Wood, the building

Amusement Places below Union Square 213

became the headquarters of the Apollo Hall, or Wood, democracy.

During the vogue of the Apollo Ball-Room, it was the resort of many of the younger set, who here found a freedom of action and dancing which they were denied in the sedate affairs of society. In fact, patronizing the Apollo became a mild kind of dissipation among the society youths, just as at a later day it was considered the proper thing to visit "Harry Hill's" in Houston Street.

The *Old Broadway Theatre* was located on the east side of the street, between Pearl and Worth Streets, and was opened, on September 27, 1847, with *The School for Scandal* and *Used Up*, in the latter of which Mr. John Lester (Wallack) made his first appearance on the American stage. The house had been projected by "Tom" Hamblin; but he was not able to carry the enterprise through, so that the first manager was Alvah Mann, who later took Ethelbert A. Marshall into partnership. The firm lasted until October 25, 1848, when Marshall became sole manager and remained so until May 1, 1858. By this time, the theatre had become too far down-town, the houses were declining, and Marshall was losing money. Many famous actors appeared upon the boards of the Broadway; and it was here that Forrest and Macready earned their greatest laurels. The theatre closed on April 2, 1859, and shortly afterward, it was torn down.

Laura Keene's Varieties at 624, above Houston Street, was opened November 18, 1856, and remained under her management until May 8, 1863. The theatre was remarkable for presenting all sorts of plays and for the ability of the actors who appeared; among these we find the elder Sothorn, Jefferson, Mrs. D. P. Bowers, Matilda Heron, and Laura Keene herself. For a period

of six months, it became Jane English's Theatre; and then, on October 8, 1863, it became Mrs. John Wood's Olympic until June 30, 1866, and was as famous as under the management of Laura Keene. It then passed under new management; and on March 10, 1868, there was produced the great pantomime of *Humpty Dumpty* with George L. and Charles K. Fox as clown and pantaloon. The play was performed four hundred and eighty-three times to box-office receipts of \$1,406,000 before it was withdrawn on May 15, 1869. I saw the play twice and shall never forget it; I also saw here *Under the Gaslight*. *Humpty Dumpty* was revived August 31, 1873, for a run of three hundred and thirty-three performances, and again on February 17, 1875, for a run of one hundred and twenty-seven more. Augustin Daly was one of the last managers of this theatre. The final performance was given in the house on April 17, 1880, shortly after which the building was torn down. The last performances of George L. Fox were attended with a strong element of pathos. It is stated that the powder he used for whitening his face and head—bismuth, I believe—had penetrated to his brain and produced insanity. He would be brought to the theatre, made up, and set upon the stage; and so much had the character of the clown become a part of his very nature that he would go through his part and be as excruciatingly funny as in his best days.

Buckley's Hall at 585, opposite the Metropolitan Hotel, was opened with Buckley's Minstrels, August 25, 1856. Ill luck seemed to be the fate of the house; for until May 8, 1865, it changed its name a dozen times at least and was under numerous managers. On this latter date its luck changed, for the San Francisco Minstrels took possession and remained until 1870. During the next five years, the theatre changed its name three



HARRIGAN & HARTS' NEW THEATRE COMIQUE

times, the last time becoming the Metropolitan under Tony Pastor, until April 1, 1881. Many actors and actresses, as Lillian Russell and the Irwin Sisters, who later became famous, began their careers in this house under Tony Pastor.

Wood's Minstrel Hall at 514, below Spring Street, was opened July 7, 1862. It became Wood's Theatre on June 15, 1866, with performances of the legitimate drama; but changed its character in September of the same year when it became the German Thalia Theatre. March 2, 1867, it again changed to Wood's Theatre Comique. Harrigan and Hart appeared here December 2, 1872; and after it had been in the hands of other managers with variety performances, they obtained possession again on August 7, 1876, and kept it until April 30, 1881, when the building was torn down and converted into stores. It was during this time that they produced "The Mulligan Guard" series. I remember dropping into the theatre one afternoon in 1877 and seeing the play of *Old Lavender*. The audience was small, the house was dirty and dingy, and the curtain did not reach the stage when lowered; yet I felt like a discoverer as I remarked to my companion about the excellence of the acting in such inharmonious surroundings and prophesied a career for the protagonist of the play.

Wood's Marble Hall at 561 and 563, on the west side near Prince Street, was famous for minstrels fifty or sixty years ago. George Holland became a member of Wood and Christy's Minstrels on October 15, 1857. That was the time of the panic, and Holland felt impelled to offer a semi-apology to the public in leaving the legitimate drama. He stated that times were so bad that the managers of the regular theatres could not

Amusement Places below Union Square 217

pay salaries, and as he had a family to support it was necessary for him to earn money. As soon as times became better he would return to his usual rôles; in the meantime he would play his regular parts of low comedy, the only difference being that whereas he usually put *red* paint on his face, now he was going to put *black*. The house was torn down in July, 1877.

The Atheneum. The Church of the Messiah, Unitarian, had been at 724 (later, 728) Broadway, near Waverly Place, from 1839 to 1864, when the congregation moved to other quarters. The church edifice took on a deserted and dilapidated appearance and was bought by A. T. Stewart, who renovated it and opened it as the Broadway Atheneum on January 23, 1865. Eleven months later, after being completely transformed architecturally, it became Lucy Rushton's Theatre, and the house was dedicated to the legitimate drama; but the lessee failed to pay the government revenue tax and so had to give it up. From this time until 1881, its names and managers were numerous, and the performances ran the whole range from opera to variety. I remember seeing *The Streets of New York* here in 1869 when it was called the Worrell Sisters' New York Theatre. Mrs. Scott-Siddons, with whose husband Sothern, Nelse Seymour, Dan Bryant, and other jokers of the stage had had so much fun, made her American début here in Shakespearian rôles. At one time it was Daly's Fifth Avenue Theatre after that manager's Twenty-fourth Street house had been burned on January 1, 1873; but he had the good taste to see the incongruity of the name and changed it the second year of his management to Daly's Broadway Theatre. It also bore the name of Globe Theatre three several times; but its name was changed for the last time when Harrigan and Hart opened it

as the New Theatre Comique on October 29, 1881. The new lessees had made it one of the handsomest theatres in the city; and it became immensely popular with the presentation of Harrigan's various plays with his stock company, which changed very little from year to year, so that every member was well-known to and beloved by the public. The house was destroyed by fire December 23, 1884, and the ground remained idle for a long time; then it became the Old London Street, February 26, 1887, and after a period of vacancy a gymnasium for sporting and sparring exhibitions in 1896. This last building was demolished in September, 1902; and at this writing (February, 1911) the lots from 724 to 732 are unbuilt upon.

Hope Chapel, formerly a church on the east side of Broadway below Eighth Street, was opened as a place of amusement on March 28, 1853, for lectures, spiritualists, etc. The Davenport Brothers exhibited here their spirit cabinet and mystified their audiences. It became the Broadway Academy of Music in 1864, and a year later, Blitz's New Hall, given over to concerts, etc. When I was a boy, I saw Blitz here with his tricks and his wonderful trained canaries. Kelly and Leon ran it as a minstrel hall from 1866 to 1870, during which time I was an occasional visitor, taking especial delight in the tall, lanky, and exceedingly funny Nelse Seymour, who was a member of the company. The minstrel burlesques in black of some of the popular plays were also very funny; *The Grand Dutch "S,"* a take-off of Offenbach's opera bouffe, being very amusing and having a run. In 1870, the house became Lina Edward's Theatre for two years, when Kelly and Leon took it once more on November 25, 1872; three days afterwards the building was destroyed by fire.

Amusement Places below Union Square 219

Among the minor places of amusement on Broadway below Union Square were: Minerva Rooms at 460, where light entertainments, concerts, and lectures were given between 1847 and 1853; the Old Stuyvesant at 663, opposite Bond Street (1852), later, Academy Hall, Donaldson's Opera House, The Canterbury, and Mozart Hall until 1862; Empire Hall, later the Santa Claus, at 596, next to the Metropolitan Hotel, between February, 1853, and January, 1859; the Broadway Museum and Menagerie at 337, between November, 1853, and April, 1854, during which time Chang and Eng, the Siamese Twins, were on exhibition; the Broadway Atheneum at 654, between Bleecker and Bond Streets, on the site of the Astor mansion, where light drama was given, making it one of the most popular places in New York sixty years ago; World Hall at 337 and 339, corner of White Street, devoted to panoramas in 1854; Bunnell's Museum, corner of Ninth Street, west side, 1880 to 1883; Washington Hall at 598 in 1851; and the Art Union Rooms and Concert Hall at 495 and 497, from 1852 to 1860.

CHAPTER X

FROM UNION SQUARE TO FORTY-SECOND STREET

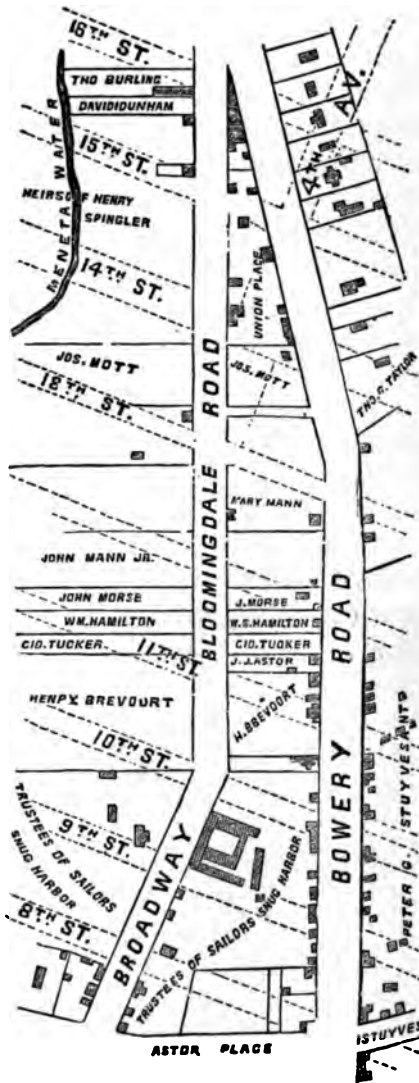


S before stated, the Bowery and Broadway were designed by the commission of 1807 to meet at the "tulip tree"; above this was the Bloomingdale road, into which the Bowery curved slightly from its route over that part of the present Fourth Avenue below Fourteenth Street. If the streets planned by the commission were cut through from east to west, there would be formed at this place a number of irregular blocks of inconvenient size and shape. To get out of this dilemma, the commission laid out at this point a small park where fresh air might be obtained when the city blocks should be built up. This park they called Union Place, because here was the union of the two principal thoroughfares of the island. In 1815, by act of the legislature, it became the public meeting-place, or commons, for the people of the city; but it was many years before it was used for anything else than for the shanties of the squatters who occupied the site. Like nearly all the public parks of the city, it had before 1815 been used as a potter's

From Union Square to Forty-Second Street 221

field. In 1832, the corporation determined to enlarge and regulate the place to its present area, from Fourteenth to Seventeenth streets and from Fourth Avenue to the extended north line of University Place. It was not until 1845, however, that with an expenditure of one hundred and sixteen thousand dollars, the park was put into shape and that the elegant mansions were erected which once surrounded the park, a few of which still remain as business places. Samuel B. Ruggles, one of the founders of the Bank of Commerce, was chiefly instrumental in developing as a fashionable part of the city this section as well as Gramercy Square.

In 1762, Elias Brevoort sold twenty-two acres of his



JUNCTION OF BROADWAY AND THE BOWERY

farm, extending from the Bowery westward between the present Fourteenth and Sixteenth streets, to John Smith, from whose executors the farm passed in 1788 to Henry Spingler, a shop-keeper of New York, for nine hundred and fifty pounds. Spingler's farmhouse stood within the limits of Union Square. Other farms as far as Twenty-third Street on the west side belonged to Thomas Burling, John Cowman, Isaac Clason, Sir Peter Warren, Isaac Varian, and Christian Milderberger. On the east side, were the two farms of Cornelius Williams and John Watts. At the corner of the present Seventeenth Street and the Bloomingdale Road was a square acre of ground belonging to the Manhattan Bank, acquired so it is supposed, as a sort of refuge for conducting business in case of being driven from the city by the yellow fever.

The hotel known as the Spingler House stood for many years on the west side of the square on the site now occupied by the Spingler building; on the south side, near University Place, was a fashionable restaurant called the *Maison Dorée*; on the southeast corner of Broadway and Fourteenth Street is the Hotel Churchill, formerly the Morton House, and originally the Union Place Hotel, established in 1850.

The section surrounding Union Square for several blocks was for a great many years the ultra-fashionable part of the city. Among the prominent shops which occupied the west side of the square was the great jewelry house of Tiffany & Co., which moved here from Broadway and Broome Street in 1870, occupying a site upon which formerly had stood the Spingler Institute. Tiffany remained at the southwest corner of Fifteenth Street until 1905, when the business was moved to Fifth Avenue and Thirty-sixth Street, as the highest class of trade was moving to that avenue. Schirmer, and Ditson &

From Union Square to Forty-Second Street 223

Co., the leading music dealers and publishers of the city, were also here for many years before moving up-town. In fact, many of the leading stores of the city have moved from this vicinity within the past five years. To show how the retail trade is departing, I will repeat a story of one great house of international reputation, located near Twentieth Street, which spent \$6000 more in advertising in December, 1910, than in previous years and did \$55,000 less business in the same month. The assessed valuation of property in this neighborhood for taxes has been decreased in some cases for 1910.

The Gorham Company of silversmiths was at Nineteenth Street for nearly thirty years, moving to upper Fifth Avenue in 1906. The great grocery house of Park & Tilford, which had occupied the southwest corner of Twenty-first Street for forty years, moved to the Brunswick building on Fifth Avenue in the fall of 1910. The last of the old mansions that once stood in this neighborhood was one belonging to Peter Goelet at the northeast corner of Nineteenth Street; it stood until June, 1897, amid the great business houses that surrounded it. It was a rather gloomy place with few signs of occupancy except some peacocks which strutted proudly around within the railed garden in front of the house and attracted the attention of the passers-by. Most of the other great houses on the thoroughfare between Union and Madison Squares—Arnold, Constable & Co., Lord & Taylor, Aitken & Son, Sloan's, Brooks Brothers, and others—are too well known at present to call for description.

On July 4, 1856, the first statue erected in New York since that of George III. in 1770, was unveiled with appropriate honors in the southeast corner of the square. It is the equestrian statue of George Washington,

designed by Henry K. Brown. It stands near the spot where the citizens of New York met Washington on the Bowery Road when he was entering the city to take possession upon its evacuation by the British, November 25, 1783. At the head of Broadway is the statue of the gallant Frenchman Lafayette, who gave not only money and supplies to the American army, but his personal



THE STATUE OF LAFAYETTE IN UNION SQUARE

services as well, and with such marked ability as to deserve well of the American people. The statue is by Bartholdi and was given to the city in 1876 by its French residents. In the southwest corner of the square, is the statue of him who is called by Lowell "the first American." The Lincoln statue was modelled by Brown and was erected by popular subscription. It would

From Union Square to Forty-Second Street 225

be a good thing if popular subscription would take it down again and erect in its place a truly artistic statue of the Great Liberator commensurate with the greatness of the subject and of the city which desires to do him honor.

For many years the park was enclosed by an iron



THE WEST SIDE OF UNION SQUARE IN 1897

railing; but about twenty years ago, the city authorities awakened to the fact that the public parks should be free at all hours, especially at night in our hot spells, and the fence was removed. The fountain was erected in anticipation of the admission of Croton water and played for the first time upon the day of the great celebration in 1842. Several smaller fountains for drinking places have been erected about the park, and on the

north is a house of comfort with a platform facing the open space of Seventeenth Street from which speakers can address the crowds upon public occasions. This has been a favorite out-door gathering place upon May-day and Labor day for the socialistically inclined; and one can listen upon such occasions to a variety of denunciations by wild-eyed and long-haired foreign citizens. You may not be able to understand anything they say except the one word *capitalisten*, which is hurled with such obvious and bitter hatred that you come to the conclusion that it cannot mean anything else but capitalists. At a meeting of this sort on March 28, 1908, a bomb was hurled at the police, but fortunately no one was killed except the hurler of the missile. For some years an open air flower market has been held in the early morning at the north end of the Square.

Of a different class from the socialistic meetings was the great meeting in Union Square on the twentieth of April, 1861, when at three o'clock in the afternoon, over one hundred thousand people assembled in mass convention to take steps to redress the insult to the flag, which had been fired upon at Sumter less than ten days before. The meeting was presided over by John A. Dix with eighty-seven vice-presidents from the leading men of the community; among whose names you will find only half a dozen, which, at that time, would have been called foreign. The list began with Peter Cooper and ended with John J. Astor. The most famous of the orators who addressed the meeting was Senator Baker of Oregon, who, during the Mexican War, had led a New York regiment to the gates of the city of Mexico, and who, a few months later, was to give his life for the Union upon the disastrous field of Ball's Bluff, on the soil of the Old Dominion. The resolutions adopted by the

From Union Square to Forty-Second Street 227

meeting gave encouragement to the Government and showed the spirit in which the city viewed the impending conflict.

The mayor of the city at the time of this meeting was Fernando Wood, a wily and disloyal politician, who had proposed the secession of the city, together with Staten and Long islands, from the State of New York and the formation of a new State, to be called "Tri-Insula." As mayor, he was chosen to preside at this meeting, and it was strongly intimated to him that it was as much as his place was worth if he did not come out boldly for the Union. With this threat in mind, and doubtless still further reminded of the necessity of being loyal by the shrill cry of a small boy perched in a tree: "Now, Nandy, mind what you say; you've got to stick to it this time," he made a speech in accord with the loyal sentiments which animated the great crowd. A short time after the meeting there was formed a club of loyal and patriotic men, modelled after a similar one in Philadelphia, and called the "Union League Club." Its object was to assist the government in raising regiments and funds. It first occupied a house loaned for the purpose by Henry G. Marquand at the corner of Seventeenth Street and Broadway, later moving to Madison Avenue and now at Fifth Avenue and Thirty-ninth Street; its membership for many years has been restricted to members of the Republican party.

One of my earliest boyish recollections is of a military procession in Union Square. It must have been in 1865 and was a review of the returning troops by Governor Fenton; for I remember seeing him and his staff on horseback. Besides the great crowd, my most vivid remembrance is of the Seventy-ninth Regiment of Highlanders and of another regiment whose brilliant

uniforms, in which there was a good deal of red, particularly impressed me. This regiment was the Fifty-fifth, called the *French* Regiment or the Lafayette Guards, because recruited principally from men of that nationality.

About thirty years ago, I lived not very far from Union Square in what had been the old village of Chelsea. My favorite walk on summer evenings was through Fourteenth Street, Union Square, Broadway and Twenty-third Street. I remember one evening passing two young fellows on the Square, who were evidently discussing that never-ending question of what one would do if he were rich; for as I passed them, I heard one say to the other: "If I were rich, I would have a *new necktie every day*." I give this simply to show how various are the desires of the human heart. I trust the young fellow has been able to achieve his aspiration in the many years that have since elapsed.

When the cable road was built on Broadway, it was customary for the cars to take the double curve from the west side of the Square into Broadway at full speed, the company stating that it was impossible to let go and grip the cable while on the curve—and the authorities believed them. So many accidents occurred here that the place became known as "deadman's curve." At last, the authorities threatened to do something—and the car company immediately found a contrivance for picking up and letting go the cable as successfully as on a straight course.

The idea of a surface car line on Broadway had its inception as early as 1850, and a company of thirty was incorporated for the purpose. This corporation, of which Jacob Sharp and John L. O'Sullivan were the prime movers, secured from the Common Council in December,

From Union Square to Forty-Second Street 229

1852, a franchise "to lay a double track in Broadway and Whitehall or State Street from the South Ferry to Fifty-seventh Street; and also, hereafter to continue the same from time to time along the Bloomingdale Road to Manhattanville." In addition, the company was to give free transfers to omnibus lines at a number of cross streets and to pay an almost nominal sum to the city for the privileges granted. The motive power was to be horses, the only known power at that time for street traction purposes. In granting the company the right to extend their line to the terra incognita of Harlem, the aldermen little thought how promptly the Manhattanville section would be built up and that their generous grant would in the near future prove to be of immense value.

As Broadway was then the chief residential street of the best society of the city, strong objections were made, and the company was enjoined from building the road. The matter was carried into the courts, where the fight lasted for over thirty years. The aldermen and assistant aldermen who, notwithstanding the vetoes of the mayor, granted this and other franchises without adequate compensation to the city, were denominated "The Forty Thieves," as each board consisted of twenty members. William M. Tweed was at this time an alderman, and Richard B. Connolly, his coadjutor in the later infamous Tweed ring, was already known in political and municipal affairs as "Slippery Dick." As a result of failing to obey an order restraining them from granting the franchise, many of the aldermen were fined and one was imprisoned for contempt of court. When the railroad matter was finally settled in 1885, most of the aldermen of 1852 were dead and not more than half a dozen of the original incorporators were alive.

Between the granting of the franchise in 1852 and the construction of the road in 1885, the fight against it was so bitter and politics entered into it so largely that the contest had its effect upon the election of both state and city officials. In 1863, Commodore Vanderbilt stole a march on Jacob Sharp by getting the aldermen to grant him a franchise for the extension of the Fourth Avenue surface road down Broadway from Fourteenth Street to the Battery. He was the controlling power in the Harlem railroad which owned the Fourth Avenue line, the first surface car line in the city. In furtherance of his plan, the block between Thirteenth and Fourteenth streets on Broadway was torn up; but an injunction stayed the work, and the block remained in a disgraceful condition for two years while the matter was being adjudicated.

In 1864, the Broadway and Seventh Avenue car line was established, and the cars were run on Broadway above Union Square, continuing through University Place below Fourteenth Street. Sharp was one of the directors of this line and it became the backer of the Broadway line and the corporation through which the financial manipulations of the Broadway Surface Company, as Sharp's line was officially known, were made. The principal difficulty experienced by the exploiters of the road was in getting the consent of property owners on Broadway below Fourteenth Street. At last, in 1883, Sharp succeeded in having passed at Albany a general railroad act which permitted the aldermen to offer the franchise of a street railway for sale or not, "at their option."

On August 6, 1884, the aldermen, with only one dissentient vote, gave permission to lay tracks on Broadway; but the mayor promptly vetoed the resolution. A tax-

From Union Square to Forty-Second Street 231

payer named Lyddy then enjoined the board from passing the resolution over the veto; but Lyddy was bought off, and at nine o'clock on the morning of August thirtieth, the eighteen aldermen in favor of the franchise were called secretly together and repassed the resolution granting the franchise. No notice of the meeting was sent to those aldermen opposed to the grant, and the city got little for a franchise so valuable that two millions of dollars had been offered for it. The feeling of the public in regard to this flagrant abuse of power is shown in a cartoon of *Harper's Weekly* at the time. Two strangers inquiring their way are saying to a New Yorker: "We want Broadway and Tenth Street." The reply was: "Broadway has already been given away; but if you make haste, you may be able to secure Tenth Street from the aldermen."

The act of the board had hardly become public before injunctions were at once applied for. The Supreme Court appointed a commission to examine into the matter and to report upon the case. It was shown in the senate investigation that some members of the commission were connected with the interested parties. Upon a decision of the Supreme Court in favor of the Broadway surface railway, Sharp lost no time in laying tracks and securing equipment, buying up all the stages and horses of the omnibus lines, many of whose drivers he later used on the horse cars. The last bus ran on Broadway below Fourteenth Street on June 20, 1885, and the first public horse-car ran over the route from Fifty-seventh Street to the Bowling Green the next day. The cost of building the road was about \$138,000, but the company was financed for over two millions.

The action of the Board of Aldermen aroused the ire of the public, and the State Senate began an investigation.

Their counsel was Roscoe Conkling, and the leaders of counsel for the railroad were James C. Carter and Elihu Root. One of the striking features of the investigation was the inability of Sharp to remember anything about transactions involving the drawing of checks amounting to over half a million dollars, though his memory was wonderful in regard to other matters. The Senate committee found that no legal authority had ever existed for the construction of the Broadway surface road; that the Broadway Surface Railway Company was a sham and a scheme shaped in conjunction with the directors of the Broadway and Seventh Avenue Company; that bribery had been employed and the city defrauded in the granting of the franchise, and that the franchise should be revoked.

This was followed by the arrest of Alderman Jaehne, one of the "solid eighteen," on March 18, 1885. Of the twenty-two members of the Board of Aldermen that passed the franchise in August, 1884, all but two were found to be implicated. One of the two, Hugh J. Grant, later became mayor of the city. Of the remaining twenty, two were dead and three fled at the time of Jaehne's arrest. The others were indicted and tried for bribery and suffered various degrees of punishment from fines to imprisonment. The arch briber, Jacob Sharp, suffered imprisonment. It was shown that the price paid for votes was as high as \$20,000.

In the thirty-three years during which the conflict for the surface road had been carried on, the character of Broadway had changed completely. It was no longer a select residential thoroughfare, but it had become the main artery of the city's trade, and the advent of the horse-cars was hailed by the merchants with satisfaction. In a little more than five years the question arose of

From Union Square to Forty-Second Street 233

changing the motive power to cable. The public was strongly opposed to it; but other cities had already introduced the cable, and New York was obliged to get rid of the antiquated horse-car, and the railway company finally won out. For months, the street was torn up from end to end and business was in a demoralized condition; but the work was at last done and the first cable



BUCK'S HORN TAVERN, TWENTY-SECOND STREET AND BROADWAY, IN 1812
(From Valentine's *Manual*, 1864)

cars were run in June, 1893. The change from the small, bumpy, and slow moving horse-car satisfied the public; and when, on September 5, 1898, an accident happened to the power house at Houston Street and the cars had to be hauled by horses from Thirty-fifth Street to the Bowling Green, their reappearance was greeted with derision. Then came the final change to electric traction. Overhead trolley wires with their potentiality of danger in a great thoroughfare like Broadway were

out of the question, and the underground trolley was decided upon. Other city lines were changed first; and as they worked successfully, even with heavy snow on the ground, the work of changing on Broadway was begun in September, 1898. It was expected by the railway people that the change would be effected by December of the same year; but it was not until May 26, 1901, that the cars were running by electric traction.

This, briefly, is the history of the Broadway Surface Railway Company—a history replete with bribery, corruption, “Boodle” aldermen, iniquitous legislatures, and complaisant courts.

At Twenty-second Street and Broadway was situated the Buck's Horn Tavern, which is spoken of in 1816 as “an old and well-known tavern.” It was ornamented with the head and horns of a buck and was set back a short distance from the street about ten feet higher than the present grade. It was a favorite road-house for those who drove out upon the Bloomingdale Road (Boston Post-road). Almost opposite the tavern, the Abingdon Road (Love Lane) followed approximately the line of the present Twenty-first Street as far west as the Fitzroy Road (Eighth Avenue). The drivers of that day used to come as far as the Buck's Horn, then turn through the quiet and shady Love Lane to Chelsea, and thence by the river road through Greenwich village back to the city across the Lispenard meadows. Three hotels still stand in this section between Union Square and Twenty-third Street; these are the Continental, at the northeast corner of Twentieth Street; the Bancroft, at the corner of Twenty-first Street, and the Bartholdi, at the southeast corner of Twenty-third Street.

Nearly on the site of the old Buck's Horn Tavern, Abbey's Park Theatre stood in the seventies and eighties.

From Union Square to Forty-Second Street 235

The stock company was one of the best in New York, containing several actors who later joined Daly's company. Between seasons many well-known actors appeared; among them, Mrs. Langtry, who made her American début upon this stage. The house was planned by Dion Boucicault, but he got into difficulties and was



THE SITE OF THE FLATIRON BUILDING

not its manager when it opened in 1874. It came under the management of Abbey on November 27, 1876, the actress Lotta being his financial backer. Among the plays first given here was *The Gilded Age* in which John T. Raymond appeared as the protagonist, Colonel Mulberry Sellers. The play was founded on Mark Twain's story of the same name, and I was present on the opening night and heard the famous humorist

make one of his characteristic speeches. The house was destroyed by fire, October 30, 1882, several hours before the evening performance, and was not rebuilt.

The high building at the junction of Broadway and Fifth Avenue is one of the curiosities of New York architecture, and from its resemblance in shape to the common household utensil is popularly called the "Flat-iron Building." Its site was owned by Eno of the Second National Bank, who also owned the Fifth Avenue Hotel property. The triangular block was occupied for many years previous to the construction of the "Flat-iron" by a row of two-story buildings used as shops and offices, and at the Twenty-second Street boundary by a tall building called the Hotel St. Germain, the whole presenting an anomalous appearance upon one of the most beautiful squares in New York, with the trees and lawns of Madison Square Park so prominent in the view. At the time that the Fuller Company was constructing the building to its dizzy height, the streets of the city were torn up and gouged out by the workmen on the subway. A French visitor was moved to remark upon the idiosyncrasies of the American people. "I look up zare," he said, "and zay are going up to heaven; I look down zare, and zay are digging down to—ze ozzer place."

Which recalls the remark of another Frenchman, Lafayette, who, upon being shown the improvements in this vicinity during his visit in 1824 and especially the plans for the continuation of Broadway above Madison Square, asked facetiously: "Do you expect that Broadway will reach to Albany?"

At Twenty-third Street, the great Boston Post-road turned to the eastward, running diagonally across the present park and following its wandering course up the east side of the city to Harlem, while the Bloomingdale

From Union Square to Forty-Second Street 237

Road continued in a comparatively straight course toward the upper part of the west side of the island. The Boston Road was closed in 1839. Where its road-bed used to be is the statue of William H. Seward, who was Governor of the State and United States Senator from New York. He was the favorite of many of the dele-



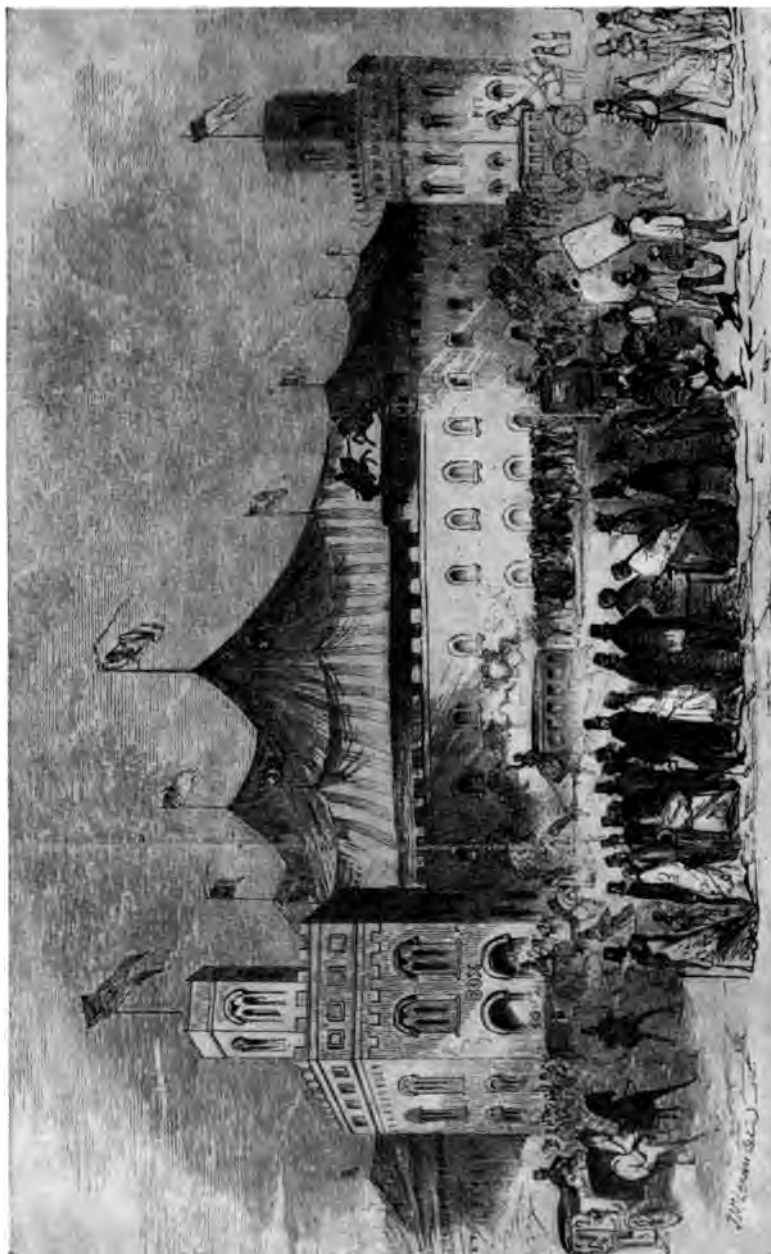
MADISON SQUARE PARK AND GARDEN

gates to the Republican Convention at Chicago in 1860, but Abraham Lincoln beat him for the nomination. Lincoln made him his Secretary of State, and he held that position during the Civil War. The wedge-shaped plot of land between the two roads was a pasture in 1815, through which a small stream found its lazy way to the East River, opening out here in the park into the Gramercy pond. Another portion of the land was

used as a potter's field from 1794 to 1797, when the burial ground was removed to Washington Square. In 1806, a United States arsenal was erected on a plot of ground extending over the site of the Worth monument; it was turned into a House of Refuge for juvenile delinquents in 1824 and was burned in 1838, when another building for the delinquents was erected in Twenty-third Street near the East River.

The commission of 1807 believed that a place for the drilling and manœuvres of the military organizations was necessary and so laid out here a parade ground, which was to extend from Twenty-third Street to Thirty-fourth and from Third Avenue to Seventh. In 1814, the limits of the parade were curtailed to Thirty-first Street and between Fourth and Sixth avenues; at the same time it was called Madison Square. Like Union Square, the plot was occupied for many years by squatters; but in 1845 Mayor Harper devoted his attention to public improvements and the park was reduced to its present size and cleared up.

On the west side of Madison Square, between Twenty-third and Twenty-fourth streets, there stood for about thirty years the "Madison Cottage," kept by Corporal Thompson. This house had formerly been the homestead of John Horn, who owned the land where Madison Square is now located. When the improvements were made in this vicinity, the old homestead was moved from the bed of Fifth Avenue to the site described above. It was a favorite road-house on the Bloomingdale Road, and at certain times of the year a cattle fair was held in the adjoining lot. In 1853, the Cottage gave way to Franconi's Hippodrome, a two story, brick building, where performances of a superior quality were given. In 1858, the Hippodrome in turn gave way to a magnificent



FRANCONI'S HIPPODROME, TWENTY-THIRD STREET AND BROADWAY

marble hotel, which was for many years the most notable in New York. This was the Fifth Avenue Hotel, which was the usual stopping place of most of the presidents after 1860 when they visited the city.

When Arthur was President, he received here the first Korean embassy that visited the country. The interpreter was a naval officer named Foulke, a classmate of the author. It was here that in 1884, during the Blaine-Cleveland campaign, the Rev. Mr. Burchard



THE CORNER OF FIFTH AVENUE AND TWENTY-THIRD STREET, 1852
On this site now stands the Fifth Avenue Building

made use of his famous saying in referring to the Democratic party as the party of "Rum, Romanism, and Rebellion." The alliterative remark, made in the presence of Mr. Blaine, went unrebuked at the time; and as it was repeated in the public press throughout the country, it gained such wide notoriety as to aid materially in the defeat of Mr. Blaine for the presidency. The hotel also sheltered the famous "Amen Corner," where the politicians, journalists, and newspaper men used to gather in social intercourse, resulting in an annual



From a photograph

FIFTH AVENUE HOTEL AT TWENTY-THIRD STREET

dinner somewhat resembling that of the famous "Grid-iron Club" of the national capital. At these dinners gather the jurists, editors, journalists, and politicians, and current affairs are burlesqued in such a manner as to make lots of fun, at the same time conveying a moral. The hotel was demolished in 1908, making way for the great office edifice now occupying the site.

The Bloomingdale Road was in colonial times a country road leading to the hamlet of Bloomingdale and to the farms and country residences of wealthy citizens on the west side overlooking the Hudson. In 1760, this road was widened to four rods to about the present Fortieth Street, and remained so until the improvements in this section subsequent to 1845. It was lined with farmlands belonging, on the west, to Matthew Dyckman, Jacob Horn, Isaac Varian, James Stewart, Samuel Van Norden, extending on both sides of the road, Mary Norton, and L. Norton as far as Forty-fourth Street. On the east side, above the arsenal, were the Samler, William Ogden, and John Taylor farms, some land belonging to the corporation and the farm of Arthur Kind, extending to Forty-fifth Street. Many of these farms both above and below this immediate section, were the country places of well-to-do New York merchants who had their city homes and shops below Canal Street. There was no Newport, Lenox, or Bar Harbor in those early days to take the people away from the island; and if there had been, there were no luxurious boats or Pullmans to whisk them hundreds of miles in a few hours.

After the development of the steamboat, Ballston Spa became the rendezvous of the best society during the summer time. It was not until the middle of the nineteenth century that Saratoga Springs usurped its place to be in its turn more or less deserted for Long Branch,

From Union Square to Forty-Second Street 243

Lenox, Bar Harbor, and Newport. Perhaps the lives of these people, their *home* lives especially, were all the more contented; for they could enjoy the pleasures of a country life with their families, and yet not be too far away from business in case of necessity. They took life more quietly, but enjoyed it thoroughly. There were not that rush, that hustle, that nervous strain and feverish excitement, which are, perhaps, the distinguishing features of our own epoch; yet the citizens acquired competencies, brought up and educated their children, and were not unacquainted with such comforts and luxuries as the time afforded.

The "unearned increment" of these farms and country seats strung along Broadway—Great George Street, the Middle Road, the Bloomingdale and Kingsbridge roads—from the Commons northward to Spuyten Duyvel Creek, has rendered the descendants of these early owners wealthy beyond the dreams of Croesus. They still constitute the best society of New York, the old Knickerbocker society, which includes not only the descendants of early Dutch and English settlers, but also those of the sturdy and energetic sons of New England who flocked to the city after the Revolution until about 1840, and who became our great merchants, bankers, and financiers. It was about this later date that the stream of new life began running from the other side of the Atlantic in successive and ever strengthening waves—Irish, Teutonic, Scandinavian, Hungarian, Polak, Semitic, Italian—and New York began to assume the cosmopolitan aspect it wears to-day.

On the west side of Broadway, at Twenty-fifth Street, the Hoffman House was located in the eighties and soon became one of the sights of the city on account of the paintings displayed in its barroom—all of them by

the greatest of American and European artists—the especial object of interest being Bouguereau's *Nymphs and Satyr*. The Albemarle Hotel adjoins the Hoffman House on the Twenty-fourth Street corner; and at the southeast corner of Twenty-seventh Street is the Hotel Victoria, at one time the home of the late President Cleveland after his first term of office.

At the junction of Broadway, Fifth Avenue, and Twenty-fifth Street is a small, triangular park, in which is a granite obelisk, known as the Worth Monument. If we read the bronze bands which are around the stone, we find inscribed Chippewa and Lundys Lane of the War of 1812 and nearly every battle of the Mexican War in which either Taylor or Scott fought; for Major-General William J. Worth was the right hand man of both these commanders. Worth was a native of Hudson and a very distinguished officer. He died in Texas in 1849, and his body was brought here later. After lying in state in the City Hall, it was buried with imposing ceremonies on November 25, 1857, under this monument erected by the City of New York. It has become customary in late years to erect reviewing stands abreast of the monument when parades and processions pass down Fifth Avenue to the Washington Arch, or up the avenue to points above. Here the reviewing officer, whether president, governor, mayor, or other distinguished person, takes his stand.

Before leaving this section, we would recall the beautiful arch and colonnade erected in 1899 when Admiral Dewey returned from Manila. The arch was miscalled the "Dewey" arch. It was, in fact, a naval memorial arch; and upon it and the columns were the names of John Manley and John Paul Jones, Decatur, Hull, Perry, Stockton, Farragut, Porter, and a host of



THE WEST SIDE OF MADISON SQUARE SHOWING THE WORTH MONUMENT

others who have carried the flag upon the seas and added lustre to it in all of the wars in which the United States has been engaged from the Revolution to the present. The whole affair was made of "staff," and in the course of several weeks became so dirty and bedraggled that it had to be removed. It was intended



THE NAVAL MEMORIAL ARCH AND COLONNADE, 1899, BROADWAY
AND FIFTH AVENUE

to perpetuate the arch and colonnade in marble, and subscriptions were started with this end in view; but for some reason—perhaps because the admiral became too prosaic an individual by getting married—the scheme fell through. It is a great pity; for the Farragut statue opposite the Worth Monument is the only memorial in New York which tends to do honor to that service



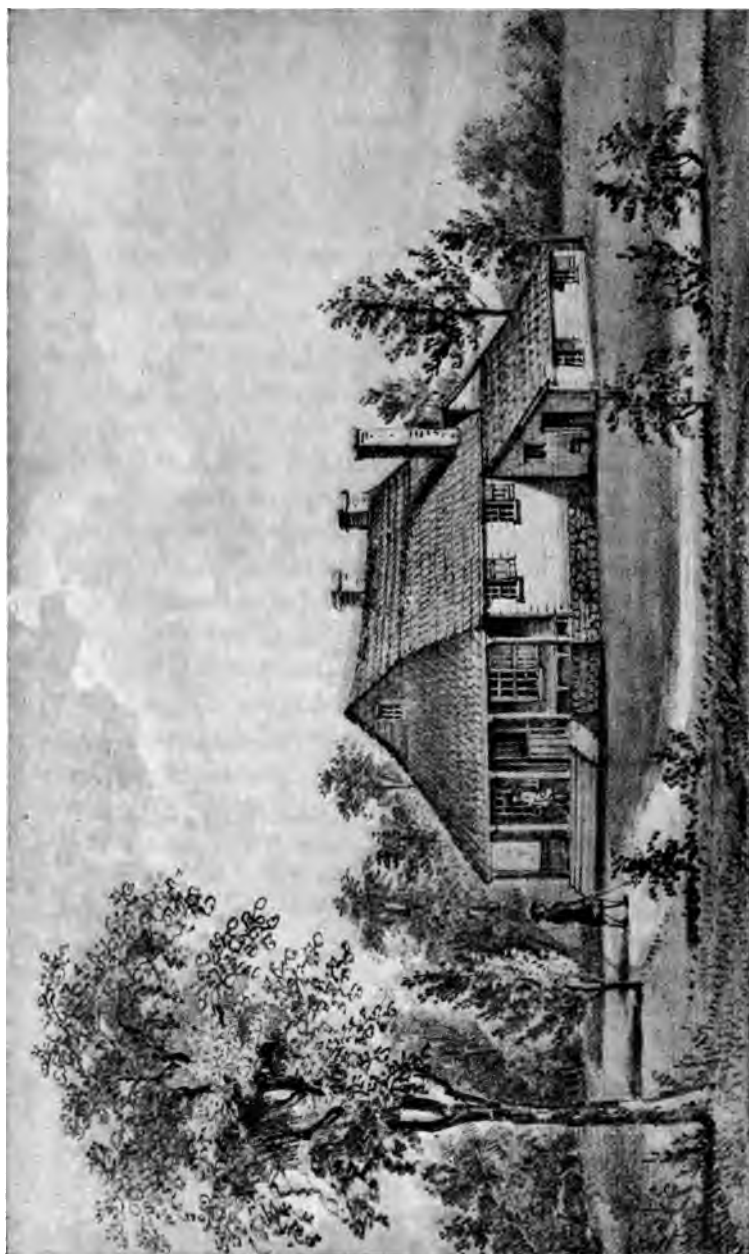
From Valentine's *Manual*, 1864

THE VARIAN TREE IN BROADWAY BETWEEN TWENTY-SIXTH AND
TWENTY-SEVENTH STREETS, 1864

that has always distinguished itself in time of war, and which is immediately forgotten in time of peace.

Twenty years ago, this section between Twenty-third and Thirty-fourth streets was the liveliest in the city. Here were located many of the popular hotels; and in the adjoining territory was the police precinct known as the "Tenderloin," to be the commander of which was the ambition of many police captains, as after one or two years of it they were assured of being able to retire with *at least* a competency for their declining years.

Besides the hotels mentioned, the Hoffman and the Albemarle, there were the Gilsey at Twenty-ninth Street on the east side, the Grand at Thirty-first Street, just above, now called the New Grand, the Coleman House on the west side between Twenty-seventh and Twenty-eighth streets, the Hotel Martinique at the northeast corner of Thirty-second Street, and the Sturtevant at 1186 Broadway, a favorite stopping place for officers of the army and navy. The last two have disappeared, the Gilsey is termed the New Breslin, and the Imperial at Thirty-first to Thirty-second streets, the finest hotel of all, has been erected and enlarged within less than fifteen years. Where the Gilsey House now stands was the field of the St. George Cricket Club, which was formed by the Englishmen who patronized Clark and Brown's English chop-house in Maiden Lane; the grounds of the club are now on Staten Island. At the southeast corner of Twenty-sixth Street, Delmonico's up-town restaurant was located from 1876 to 1888, when the Café Martin took its place and succeeded to its popularity. There are a number of well-known restaurants and Rathskellers on this part of the thoroughfare. One of the last relics of the olden time to disappear was a tree



From *Valentine's Manual*, 1856
249

THE OLD VARIAN HOUSE, BLOOMINGDALE ROAD

on the west side in front of Number 1151, near Twenty-sixth Street, which had been at the gateway of the old Varian farm near the homestead; it stood until about 1890.

The San Francisco Minstrels moved up-town between Twenty-eighth and Twenty-ninth streets, on the west side, in 1874, and with Birch, Wambold, and Backus ran successfully for several years. J. H. Haverly secured control on December 1, 1883, and ran his "Mastodon," or "Megatherian," Minstrels for some time. He was obliged to go back to the paleozoic age for an animal big enough to represent the size of his show, with eight end men and the company in proportion. The house was the Comedy Theatre under Haverly and was run as a combination house. Dockstader had the place for a while and gave his amusing monologue *Misfits*. The house belongs to one of the Gilsey family, and it has been through all sorts of theatrical vicissitudes down to 1909, rejoicing then in the name of the Princess Theatre. "Sam" T. Jack ran it for some time with a somewhat risky show. He appeared one morning in the Gilsey office, after he had signed the contract, with an old valise and several bundles tied up in newspapers, and notified the clerk he had come to pay his first six months' rent. The clerk expected a check; but instead of producing one, Jack tumbled his bundles onto the table and said: "Here it is; count it and see if it is right." An examination showed the bundles to contain a collection of bills of all denominations, mixed up in apparently inextricable confusion. One of the Gilseys and the clerk put the bundles into a cab and drove to the bank, where, after two hours' work, assisted by several of the bank clerks, they succeeded in sorting out the mixture and found it correct to the last dollar.

From Union Square to Forty-Second Street 251

Lester Wallack moved into his up-town theatre at the northeast corner of Thirtieth Street in February, 1881, but the building was not ready for opening until January 4, 1882. The exterior of the building has never been completely finished. Here Wallack had an excellent stock company as before; but the house never became so famous or so popular as the old Thirteenth Street theatre—perhaps, because a new generation of theatre-goers had grown up and the actor-manager was getting old. He retired from active management, and the house opened as Palmer's Theatre on October 8, 1888, to become and remain Wallack's once more on December 7, 1896.

The oldest theatre in this neighborhood was originally Banvard's Museum and Theatre at 1221 Broadway, near Thirtieth Street. It was the first building in the city erected expressly for museum purposes, and was opened June 17, 1867. It became Wood's Museum and Metropolitan Theatre in 1868, and Wood's Museum and Menagerie in 1869. Very good plays with first-class actors were given under both managers, as I can personally testify. In 1877, it became the Broadway Theatre, and two years later it became Daly's, remaining under the management of Augustin Daly until his death. It was the one theatre where the visitor could find the perfection of acting, management, and presentation, whether the play were a French or German farce or a Shakesperian revival. Ada Rehan, John Drew, Mrs. Gilbert, James Lewis, George Clarke, and others were known, admired, and loved by a generation of theatre-goers.

The Brighton theatre at 1239 Broadway opened with a variety show on August 26, 1878; and after many changes of names, became the Bijou Theatre, December 1, 1883.

The Manhattan (or Eagle) Theatre stood on the west

side of Broadway between Thirty-second and Thirty-third streets. It was opened with a variety show, October 18, 1875; later, it became the Standard Theatre, becoming the Manhattan again August 30, 1897. It was the first house in New York to present Gilbert and Sullivan's *H. M. S. Pinafore* which became so popular that it was played at over half a dozen theatres at the same time; that was before the days of international copyright. Towards the end of its career, it was about the only theatre of prominence in the city outside of the theatrical trust. At the last it became a moving-picture house, and was torn down in 1909 to make way for Gimbel Brothers' big department store.

Two other theatres have entrances from Broadway: Daly's old Twenty-eighth Street house, and Jo Weber's. The first began as Apollo Hall, and later became Daly's Fifth Avenue Theatre. After Daly's removal, it became Harry Miner's Theatre and was burned out January 2, 1891; it is now Keith and Proctor's. The other theatre on Twenty-ninth Street was originally Weber and Field's, where those amusing comedians gave very funny burlesques of the passing shows. After the dissolution of their partnership, it became Jo Weber's Theatre.

The Union Dime Savings Bank stood on Thirty-second Street, facing Greeley Square, from 1876 to February, 1910. From in front of the bank the old Bloomingdale stages had their point of departure before going out of existence altogether. About fifty years ago, the property belonged to Richard F. Carman, who asked \$90,000 for the plot, but took \$87,500, remarking to his agent with a chuckle of satisfaction as he closed the bargain: "I guess that fellow's stuck." Such was the opinion of many who considered the price beyond all reason for property in the neighborhood of Thirty-fourth Street;



Photo by Geo. P. Hall & Son
HERALD SQUARE AT THE JUNCTION OF BROADWAY AND SIXTH AVENUE SHOWING THE HERALD BUILDING
IN THE CENTRE

yet, in 1874, when the savings bank took title, it paid \$275,000, or about seventy dollars a square foot for approximately four thousand square feet. At the sale in October, 1906, the bank received about two hundred and fifty dollars a square foot; and the purchaser sold to an English syndicate in June, 1909, at a price which is stated to have been in the neighborhood of three hundred and seventy-five dollars a square foot, a value for city property only exceeded so far by the plot at the corner of Broadway and Wall Street. This will give some idea of the increment in land values in this vicinity within half a century.

Broadway crosses Sixth Avenue at Thirty-fourth Street; and from Thirty-second to Thirty-fifth, there is an open space, except for two triangular parks. The lower one contains a statue of Horace Greeley and is called Greeley Square. The upper space contains a statue of William E. Dodge, one of New York's famous merchants, but since it stands in front of the *Herald* building, it is called Herald Square. The crossing here at Thirty-fourth Street is probably the most dangerous and the most congested spot on the whole line of Broadway at present. Though the houses on the west side from Thirty-second to Thirty-fourth Street, and on the east side above the latter to Thirty-fifth Street are actually on the line of Sixth Avenue, they are numbered as being on Broadway.

There is now in course of construction on the block between Thirty-third and Thirty-fourth streets, on the east side, the Hotel McAlpin, which is to be a commercial hotel twenty-five stories high, with stores on the ground floor, one of which at the Thirty-fourth Street corner has already been rented at twenty dollars a square foot, the highest rent paid in New York. The hotel is to be

From Union Square to Forty-Second Street 255

the largest in the city and will cost for building, furnishings, lease, etc., over thirteen millions of dollars.

When the congregation owning the Tabernacle sold out their property in lower Broadway, they established themselves at the northeast corner of Thirty-fourth Street and remained until March, 1902, when they moved temporarily to Mendelssohn Hall in Fortieth Street near Broadway until such time as their new Tabernacle was ready for them. While at Thirty-fourth Street, the Rev. Dr. William Taylor continued to uphold the fame of the church. The wedge-shaped block between Thirty-fifth and Thirty-sixth streets, occupied by the New York *Herald* and the *Evening Telegram* was previously occupied by a building the upper floor of which was the armory of the Seventy-first Regiment of the National Guard. The newspapers introduced an innovation in exposing to public view the great presses upon which the papers are printed and folded when they took possession, August 20, 1893; and the windows overlooking the press-room are always occupied by curious and interested spectators.

For many years, "Parker's," one of the most popular restaurants of the city, was located at 1305 Broadway; but it was a simple and unpretentious place by contrast with the modern Broadway establishments.

No section of the city has shown such remarkable advance as this portion has in the last decade. Macy's opened here on November 8, 1902; Saks & Co., a Washington firm, a year or so earlier; and at this writing, the Gimbel Brothers from Philadelphia have just opened on the block below another mammoth store. This region is becoming the greatest retail section of the city. This is due to a great extent to the fact that within the past five years the Pennsylvania Railroad has erected a great

station a few blocks west and has connected this with New Jersey and Long Island by means of tunnels under the city and under the two rivers.

Broadway from Thirty-fourth to Forty-seventh Street has been for the last few years the locality where the gay life of the metropolis has been most readily seen. Here are congregated great hotels, famous restaurants, and theatres; and the brilliant illumination at night by the countless electric lights has caused this section of the avenue to be called the "Great White Way"; and no stranger has seen New York who has not traversed it.

A quarter of a century ago, the south side of Union Square was the lounging place of many actors seeking employment at the theatrical offices in that neighborhood; and the section was called the "Rialto." With the upward trend of the theatres and theatrical offices, the "Rialto" has moved to this section of Broadway; and in the "off" season, the sidewalks are crowded with actors and actresses seeking engagements.

It is to this part of the town that the heart of the exiled New Yorker turns, and it is hither that the footsteps of visitors bent on gaiety naturally and inevitably find their way. The occupants of stores and theatres as far down as Twenty-third Street claim to be a part of it all—and they were ten years ago—but they cannot stop the law of progress up the famous thoroughfare. From abreast of the City Hall Park, in the first half of the nineteenth century, gay fashion has gradually worked its way northward to this present section. Perhaps, at the end of this century, the "Great White Way" will be as quiet and colorless as is now the section of Broadway below Fourteenth Street, while the gay populace of that future time will find its pleasures in the



Photo by Geo. P. Hall & Son
NIGHT SCENE ON THE "GREAT WHITE WAY," LOOKING TOWARD THE TIMES BUILDING FROM HOTEL ASTOR

neighborhood of Kingsbridge. This seems to be the law of the street. When that day comes, Manhattan Island will have lost the greater part of its population and will be devoted almost entirely to business; while the enormous mass of the people will live in the suburbs of Westchester County, of New Jersey, and of Long Island, carried daily to and from their occupations at rates of speed now undreamed of, and by means of transit which exist at present only in the dreams of visionaries.

Yet, between Thirty-fourth and Forty-second streets, Broadway was sixty years ago little more than a country lane; and there are still many insignificant buildings along the thoroughfare. Beginning with the year 1838, various acts were passed affecting the laying out and widening of the Bloomingdale Road and Broadway between Twenty-first and Forty-fifth streets.

Among the hotels between Thirty-fourth and Forty-second streets were, and are, the Marlborough on the west side between Thirty-sixth and Thirty-seventh streets; the Normandie at the southeast corner of Thirty-eighth Street; the Vendome at Forty-first Street; the Albany, the most recent, between Fortieth and Forty-first streets, both on the east side, and the Knickerbocker at the southeast corner of Forty-second Street. This last is one of the Astor properties and occupies the site where stood for many years the Saint Cloud Hotel. On the west side, below Forty-second Street, the Café de l'Opera opened in December, 1909. This was the most gorgeous and extravagantly fitted restaurant the city has ever seen, costing, so it is stated, over a million of dollars. The news spread of its high prices, there was poor service, and its patrons were obliged to wear evening dress; as a result, it closed its doors four months after opening. After various vicissitudes with

From Union Square to Forty-Second Street 259

the creditors, lasting several months, the place was acquired by Louis Martin, rearranged and refurnished, and opened on Christmas Eve, 1910. Upon the same site at first stood the Rossmore, later the Metropole, and the Saint Charles, upon land which is among the highest in the lower part of the island and which has been a hotel site for over forty years. Upon the angle formed by the junction of Seventh Avenue and Broadway, there was erected, in 1910, the Heidelberg building with its great tower designed for advertising purposes. At this time (January, 1911), it is rumored that the famous Chicago house of Marshall Field & Co. has acquired the Marlborough Hotel property for a great department store.

At the northwest corner of Thirty-fifth Street a building called the Coliseum was opened with a panorama in 1873 and was run until the following year, when it was taken down and removed to Philadelphia during the Centennial Exposition. October 11, 1876, the New York Aquarium took its place with a theatre, and later, a circus attached. The place was very popular until 1883, when it was torn down and the New Park Theatre was erected, opening on October fifteenth. Harrigan took possession and opened on August 31, 1885, after the destruction of his New Theatre Comique. It was called Harrigan's Theatre and was successful, but the rent ate up the profits and Harrigan was obliged to give it up. It then became the Herald Square Theatre on September 17, 1895, and has retained that name until the present.

After the destruction of his Park Theatre at Twenty-second Street, Henry E. Abbey had no house that he could call his own until 1893, when he opened the theatre at the northeast corner of Thirty-eighth Street, where

he introduced Irving, Bernhardt, and other foreign actors of high rank, opening with the first named on November 8, 1893. On September 14, 1897, the house was opened as the Knickerbocker, a name that it still retains.

The Casino, at the southeast corner of Thirty-ninth Street, was opened October 21, 1882, with *The Queen's Lace Handkerchief*. The building is in the Moorish style, and has been, more than any other theatre in New York, the home of comic opera. Among its greatest successes were *Erminie* and *Florodora*, the latter of which seems to have been unfortunate for many of its participants, as several murders and numerous scandals in which *Florodora* girls were concerned filled the columns of the daily papers and set the town by the ears for some time during and after the run of the play.

Between Thirty-ninth and Fortieth streets on the west side, taking up the entire block to Seventh Avenue, is the Metropolitan Opera House, which opened October 22, 1883, with Henry E. Abbey as manager. The house has been devoted almost exclusively to grand opera, as it is too great in size to be an ordinary theatre. It has also been the scene of many great gatherings on patriotic occasions, of many public balls, and of concerts, as well as of several fairs. The history of the operas produced and of the great artists and singers who have appeared here would fill a book larger than this. Its interior was destroyed by fire in September, 1892, but was rebuilt in the following year.

Opposite to it on the south side of Fortieth Street is the Empire Theatre, whose entrance is from Broadway. It was opened January 25, 1893, under the management of Charles Frohman, and has been famous, not only for its early stock company, but as the New York home of

From Union Square to Forty-Second Street 261

such actors as John Drew, Maude Adams, and similar stars.

The Metropolitan Casino, at the southwest corner of Forty-first Street, was dedicated on May 27, 1880, and opened as a concert hall by Rudolph Aronson on October 10, 1881; to be followed later by Rudolph Bial and his orchestra with concerts and comic operas. On October 20, 1884, owing to bad business, the house became the Cosmopolitan Skating Rink. As early as 1887, a firm of which Bailey the circus man was an original member was started for the purpose of securing the property and opening it as a regular theatre. The house was rebuilt and opened March 3, 1888, as the Broadway Theatre. One of its greatest successes was the spectacular play of *Ben Hur*, founded on General Lew Wallace's famous story of the same name.

CHAPTER XI

FROM FORTY-SECOND STREET TO NINETY-SIXTH



WHEN we cross Forty-second Street we are in the very heart of the "Great White Way." Hotels, theatres, and restaurants abound, and the owners and purchasers of property seem to be imbued with a perfect mania for tearing down and rebuilding. On the triangular block between Broadway and Seventh Avenue is the high building of the New York *Times*, from which the open space from Forty-third to Forty-seventh streets gets its name of Times Square. The plot was occupied from as long back as I can remember with a block of two-story buildings, containing a private school and several quiet stores, which seemed to be almost out of the business of the vicinity. About 1890, a hotel-keeper named Regan erected a building on the south side of the plot and ran it with a bar and famous Rathskeller. In 1900, the underground railway was commenced, and about the same time the *Times* decided to erect its great building on the entire plot. The Regan building was one of the earliest of the skeleton, steel and concrete construction, and its demolition after about



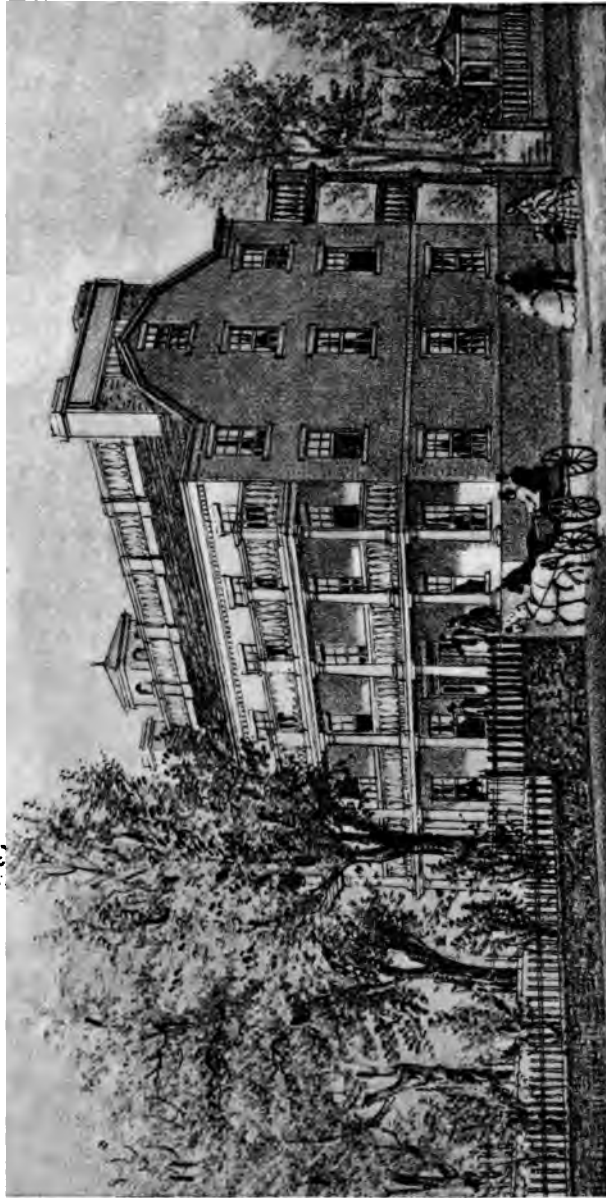
Photo by Geo. P. Hall & Son

A VIEW IN TIMES SQUARE, SHOWING TIMES BUILDING

ten years of existence was watched by the architects and civil engineers with a great deal of interest in order to see the effect upon the steel framing. As it was torn to pieces, it was found that everything was as good as the day it was put into the building. An immense, deep hole in the solid rock was necessary for the new building; for the subway was to pass under it, and its foundations were to carry not only the Times building itself, but the tracks of the subway also, and to be able to withstand the vibrations of the passing trains. In many respects, therefore, the building is one of the most wonderful in New York; and until the Singer building was erected, it was the highest structure in the city, if we figure from the lowest foundations, where the presses are located, to the top of its high tower.

For many years before this open space became Times Square, it was the location of businesses connected with the manufacture and repair of carriages and harness; and in imitation of the locality in London devoted to similar activities, it was popularly, though not officially, known as "Long Acre Square." Then it became devoted to the automobile industry, but now even that has departed to the section above.

One Revolutionary event is connected with Times Square. On the fifteenth of September, 1776, the British landed at Kip's Bay from Long Island with the intention of cutting off the American Army, then in full retreat. The greater part of the army was well up on the Bloomingdale Road, but Putnam with four thousand troops was still in the city. Washington despairingly attempted to prevent the landing of the British on the shore of the East River, but his troops fled almost before a shot was fired. Word had been sent to Putnam to join the chief, and he hurried his troops out of the city. Guided by



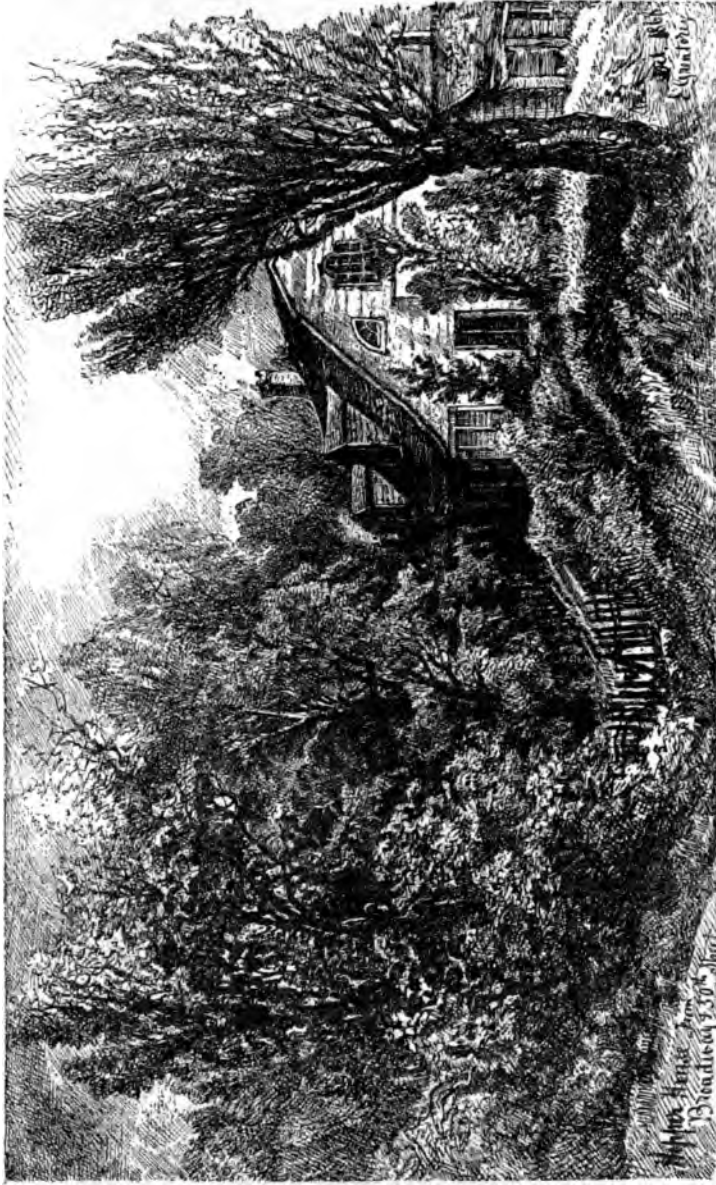
Valentine's *Manual* for 1861

HAVEMEYER MANSION IN 1861, BETWEEN FIFTY-EIGHTH AND FIFTY-NINTH STREETS AND EIGHTH AND NINTH AVENUES

Aaron Burr over the Middle Road from the fortifications above Canal Street, he managed to escape the cordon of British troops being thrown across the island and joined the chief on the Bloomingdale Road at this point, barely getting through in the nick of time. A tablet to commemorate this joyful meeting of the two generals was erected on the west side of the square some years ago by the Sons of the Revolution.

The section of Broadway from Forty-fifth to Seventy-first Street was laid out and widened under a series of acts beginning about 1845 and extending to 1869. For some time after the earlier of these dates, the Bloomingdale Road was a country lane, lined with farm lands and homesteads. We have already given those above Twenty-third Street to this point. Continuing above on the east side as far as Sixty-fifth Street, we find farms belonging to Medeef Eden, Emmet (to about Forty-ninth Street), Andrew Hopper, Cornelius Harsen, Deborah Burton, Catherine Cosine, Jane Ackerman, Rachel Cosine, and John H. Tallman. On the west side for the same distance were farms belonging to John Jacob Astor, (a portion of the Eden farm on which the Hotel Astor now stands), Francis Church, Philip Weber, Andrew Hopper, Striker, Jacob Hayes, John Cosine, Hegeman, Sarah Slack, and Havemeyer. Many of these farms extended down to the Hudson River even in 1800, and most of them had originally done so, but had been divided up among new owners; and even the names given here might not answer for a different period. The history of nearly all of them would be interesting had we the space to give it.

During the spring of 1910 real estate interests were especially active in connection with the old Hopper farm which was on both sides of the road. The first



From an etching by Eliza G. Catlin

THE HOPPER HOUSE AT BROADWAY AND FIFTIETH STREET

of the name was Andries Hoppe, who came to New Netherlands in 1652. His son, Mathjes Adolphus Hoppe, bought a farm extending diagonally across the road between Forty-eighth and Fifty-fifth streets down to the shore of the Hudson River. His heirs inherited the property, which in time became divided up among them and passed to other owners. One of the old Hopper homesteads stood for a century and a half at Fiftieth Street and Broadway until 1883, when William H. Vanderbilt bought the property, and the old house was razed to make way for the American Horse Exchange. Andrew Hopper (1736-1824), for whom this house had been built by his father, John Hopper, the second owner, was a merchant of New York, having a place of business in Chatham Street. His town house was at Ann Street and Broadway, the Hampden Hall of the Liberty Boys, which later became the site of Scudder's and Barnum's museums.

The first theatrical enterprise to locate in this vicinity was the large structure on the east side of Broadway between Forty-fourth and Forty-fifth streets, erected by Oscar Hammerstein upon the site of a building which had been the armory of the Seventy-first Regiment. Under one roof, there were a great music hall, a concert hall, and a theatre, the intention being to admit to all for one entrance fee. It was known as Hammerstein's Olympia, and the first performance was given in the Lyric Theatre on November 25, 1893. The management passed from Hammerstein; and the music hall part became the New York Theatre in December, 1898, while the Lyric became, on August 29, 1899, the Criterion, under the management of Charles Frohman.

Within the last few years, a new course has been pursued in theatrical management in New York and

From Forty-Second Street to Ninety-Sixth 269

throughout the country. The tendency has been for a great many theatres to come into the control of a few managers or firms, constituting what has been termed the "Theatrical Trust"; so that dramatic companies outside the combination have sometimes had difficulty in getting into New York houses. Another marked change has been the increase in the price of seats, and the elegance of the newer theatres. It is a far cry from the thirteen, twenty-five, and fifty cents of the best theatres of half a century ago to the dollar, dollar and a half, and two dollars of the present; and these prices are nearly always supplemented by an additional dollar paid to the ticket speculators who manage, notwithstanding the *advertised* efforts of the box-offices, to get the best seats in the house before any one else has a chance at them.

Among the fashionable restaurants and hotels located here for several years are Shanley's, Rector's, Churchill's, the Hotel Cadillac, and the Hotel Astor. Several of these are putting up new buildings, so that in another year or so there will be a group of some of the finest hostelries in New York. The side streets contiguous to Times Square are also devoted to restaurants and theatres. The celebration of New Year's Eve in this neighborhood has become, so it is stated in the daily papers and by those who have been present, a grand orgy after midnight, putting to blush the wildest capers of the Moulin Rouge, Maxim's, and other notorious places in Paris. For this occasion it is necessary to engage tables a long time ahead, and in the way of drink nothing but champagne is served upon the night of the thirty-first of December.

Rector's new hotel and restaurant at the southeast corner of Forty-fifth Street was opened on the twenty-

seventh of December, 1910. It cost upwards of three millions of dollars, but its construction is remarkable for the speed with which the old buildings were torn down and the new one erected and furnished—all within a period of eleven months.

The most prominent building on the west side of the square is the Hotel Astor, situated on the old Eden farm and belonging to the Astor estate. It was opened in September, 1904, by William Muschenheim, formerly steward, or commissary, at West Point, who had for several years previous run a restaurant, very popular with college and similar societies, called "The Arena," in West Thirty-second Street near Broadway. Mr. Muschenheim has one of the finest private collections of maps, documents, papers, and prints relating to old New York to be found in the city, and many of these are exposed on the walls of the hotel. The hotel is probably the most popular and moderate priced of the really first-class hotels in New York. It has sheltered many ambassadors, special embassies, and distinguished foreigners, and is the favorite banqueting place of many societies, including some composed entirely of women.

On the streets opening out of Times Square, and within a radius of half a mile, are numerous theatres erected within the past five years. Among those on Broadway itself, are the Globe, above Forty-sixth Street, the Astor, at the corner of Forty-fifth Street, and the Gaiety, at the corner of Forty-sixth—all on the west side; Cohan's, on the east side between Forty-second and Forty-third streets, and still others are projected for the immediate future. To be bromidic: "It's hard work to keep track of them; they spring up like mushrooms, almost in a single night."

From Forty-Second Street to Ninety-Sixth 271

With so many theatrical enterprises located on Broadway, it is natural that plays should be written about the great thoroughfare. Two of them—comedies, of course—are *The Man Who Owns Broadway*, and



THE NEW BROADWAY TABERNACLE

Forty-Five Minutes from Broadway. Numerous songs have sounded the glory of the street and have become popular. When the American fleet on its world encircling cruise of 1908-9 left New Zealand, the farewell song of our English cousins of the Antipodes was *Give my Regards to Broadway*, a song that stirred the heart

of every American sailor, as he remembered, or anticipated, the joys of the great highway.

The triangular block at Forty-seventh Street, Broadway, and Seventh Avenue, now occupied by Floyd & Co., auctioneers, was formerly the site of St. Martin's Hall, inaugurated February 11, 1850, for lectures, assemblies, and other social affairs for the up-town folks. The plot cannot long remain in its present condition, and a theatre or hotel will some day soon occupy the site. Above Forty-seventh Street, the thoroughfare is in a transition state; there are carriage factories and showrooms, automobile ware rooms, apartment houses, hotels, vacant lots, and some of the old buildings, including several cottages of the days when this was a country road. The site at Numbers 1634-1642, on the old Hopper farm, was occupied by the American Horse Exchange until 1910, when the Winter Garden Theatre was erected by the Shuberts. The Exchange was from 1883 the up-town Tattersall's where horses of the best breeds, carriages, and harness were sold, usually at auction. At the northeast corner of Fifty-sixth Street is the modern Tabernacle, first opened for service in March, 1905, and the legitimate successor of the other two which have stood on Broadway; it is a very ornate building, the corner-stone of which was laid in 1903. At Number 1684, the Metropolitan Roller Skating Rink has been in operation since 1906. The building which it occupies has been an armory of one of the city batteries, a bicycle academy, and various other things during the past thirty years.

At the northwest corner of Forty-ninth Street, the Old Guard had its armory from 1898 to 1908. This is not a part of the regular military force of the State, but it has peculiar privileges, and is usually detailed as an escort for any distinguished person who reviews parades

From Forty-Second Street to Ninety-Sixth 273

or processions. From a social standpoint, it ranks higher, possibly, than any other military organization in the city, and it partakes more nearly of the nature of a social club than do the regular regiments. The vast majority of the rank and file of the national guard organizations are young men, while those in the Old Guard have passed the meridian of life, having seen active and



From Valentine's *Manual*, 1864

THE OLD HALFWAY HOUSE AT THE JUNCTION OF BROADWAY, EIGHTH AVENUE, AND FIFTY-NINTH STREET

strenuous service elsewhere. The City Guard was formed in 1833, and at the same time a rival organization, called the Light Guard, was formed out of the old Blues, dating from 1762. After the Civil War, the survivors of the two organizations united to form the Old Guard on April 22, 1868. The distinctive white uniform and great bearskin hat always attract attention, and the veterans are held very high in popular estimation.

At Fifty-ninth Street is the entrance to Central Park, and where Broadway, Eighth Avenue, and Fifty-ninth Street cross is an open space called "The Circle." Its centre is occupied by a fine column and base called the Columbus Statue, presented to the city by the Italian residents in 1892 in commemoration of the four hundredth anniversary of the discovery of America by their fellow-countryman, whose statue surmounts the column.

Just north of the monument is a triangular plot, which for many years was occupied by Durland's Riding Academy, a very popular place of its kind in the nineties. The plot is now vacant and is awaiting development by William R. Hearst. Here is another theatrical centre within a few blocks, and nearly all the buildings have been erected within the past five years. There is the Majestic at Fifty-eighth Street, the Circle at Sixtieth, the Colonial at Sixty-second, and the Lincoln Square at Sixty-sixth. The houses are generally devoted to vaudeville, light opera, moving pictures, and similar entertainments that do not call for anything from their audiences except laughter.

With the section of the Bloomingdale Road above Fifty-ninth Street I was somewhat familiar in my boyhood before 1870, as I used to visit friends who lived here, and I have also ridden in the old stages. Near-by was the residence of Fernando Wood at Seventy-seventh Street. In recent years, the name of Lincoln Square has been given to this immediate locality where Broadway crosses Columbus Avenue at Sixty-sixth Street.

The Western Boulevard, or simply the Boulevard, as it was commonly called, was the work of the Tweed ring; and the highway was opened in 1868. The assessments levied upon the property owners contiguous to the old Bloomingdale Road were more than many of them

From Forty-Second Street to Ninety-Sixth 275

could pay, and they either lost their property or it became



THE COLUMBUS MONUMENT AT FIFTY-NINTH STREET

heavily encumbered. Like all the work of the ring, the construction was a gigantic steal; but Tweed cer-

tainly showed great foresight in laying out this **fine** thoroughfare, lined with trees whose price to the **tax-**payers was enormous. The new Boulevard followed the general direction and bed of the old road, though it **did** not follow all its windings. As most of the farm lands and estates abutted on the Bloomingdale Road, we find that many of them will be found on both sides of the modern thoroughfare. The new thoroughfare was **known** as the Boulevard until January first, 1899, when the board of aldermen changed its name to Broadway throughout its length to Kingsbridge.

As the downfall of the ring occurred shortly after the opening of the Boulevard, it was left for many years in an unpaved state, and was, in consequence, a mudhole in wet weather where vehicles frequently became stalled, and in dry weather the dust was terrific. I remember seeing the Twenty-second Regiment march to its new armory in 1891, and one could hardly see the soldiers for the clouds of dust.

The first paving of the street was ordered from Fifty-ninth to Seventy-ninth streets in 1890; and all kinds of materials have been used—macadam, asphalt, and brick. The paving was done in sections as the needs of the rapidly building locality required, the last being completed in 1907. When the section as far as One Hundred and Sixth Street was finished in 1896, the street became the favorite route of the wheelmen, who turned through the last named street to Riverside Drive and so on to Grant's Tomb. It is now a finely paved, asphalt brick pavement, and is a much patronized route for automobiles.

The armory of the Twenty-second Regiment of Engineers of the National Guard is on the east side of Broadway, between Sixty-eighth and Sixty-ninth Streets.



Redrawn by William J. Wilson from an old lithograph

SQUATTER SETTLEMENT—1858

The regiment was organized in April, 1861, at the outbreak of the Civil War and had its quarters at Seventh Street and Hall Place; it occupied its armory in Fourteenth Street near Sixth Avenue in 1864. I remember that we school children went there to see the great fair of the Sanitary Commission, which did so much to relieve the sufferings of the sick and wounded soldiers. The present armory was occupied in 1891. The regiment was mustered into the service of the national government during the Spanish War, and became an engineer regiment on February 20, 1902. A new armory, the corner-stone of which was laid December 19, 1909, is now in course of construction on Fort Washington Avenue at One Hundred and Sixty-eighth Street at a cost of about a million of dollars; and the members of the regiment hope to occupy it in the spring of 1912.

The construction of the elevated roads in 1880, and the running of the surface cars made the section west of Central Park more easily accessible than in the days of the stages, and building operations began. Previous to 1880 and even for some time after that date the vacant lots were occupied by squatters, whose ramshackle structures, goats, and multitudinous children added what we may now consider as a picturesque touch to the scene, but which at that time we thought a blot upon the landscape. Some of the children of these squatters have become rich through the increase in value of the lots which their fathers had the foresight, or good luck, to buy in those early days. About 1890, the bicycle was in its glory; and for nearly a decade the smooth asphalt of the Boulevard attracted the devotees of the wheel, the favorite ride being as far as Claremont and Grant's Tomb. The annual parades of the wheelmen were beautiful sights, especially at night, when countless

From Forty-Second Street to Ninety-Sixth 279

lights flickered along the roadway as the silent vehicles speeded swiftly along. Many shops and buildings were erected to accommodate the wheelmen and their needs; and there is no doubt that the desirability of this locality as a residence section was thus brought to the attention of many thousands and helped in its development. Now, alas! the wheel has departed; and where once bicycle shops abounded, we find their places taken by many more shops and garages for the sale and repair of the automobile. Where, in the nineties, the bicyclist had constant views of open spaces and truck gardens, now the autoist, as he dashes madly along, sees solid blocks of great hotels and apartment houses, with private houses only on the side streets.

The subway railroad is directly responsible for this; and as it belongs to this period of Broadway's development subsequent to 1895, a brief account of it may be given here. The idea of an underground railway was of old date; and I remember when a schoolboy in 1870, visiting the Beach Pneumatic Railway under Broadway abreast of the City Hall Park, where its tunnel still exists. It was in 1890 that the first rapid transit commission was appointed by Mayor Hugh J. Grant; it reported in 1891 that the tunnel franchise should be sold to the highest bidder, but capitalists were afraid to back the scheme on account of its uncertainty and the vast amount of capital involved. In 1894, the legislature created the Rapid Transit Board, which, fortunately, was composed of men of unimpeachable integrity and enterprise with no interest or concern in politics, and they went at the matter in a business-like way. The plans for the tunnel, drawn by the engineer, William Barclay Parsons, were approved by Mayor Strong in 1897; and the congested condition of the traffic lines due to the influx of

visitors on Grant's Day, April 27, of that year, showed the absolute necessity of immediate relief. The contracts were let to John B. McDonald on February 21, 1900, and work was begun shortly afterwards, four and one half years being the time allowed for the completion of the work and the running of the trains. The section of the road under Broadway begins at Forty-second Street and continues to One Hundred and Sixty-eighth Street, rejoining Broadway again at Two Hundred and Eighteenth Street and continuing over it as an elevated structure to the terminus at Two Hundred and Forty-second Street abreast of Van Cortlandt Park. The road is four tracks as far as One Hundred and Third Street and two tracks beyond.

During the nearly five years that the underground was building, Broadway was a sight to be remembered, as the work was done from the surface and the street and the car tracks had to be supported by temporary bridges of planks; and it was no unusual thing for a vehicle to fall into the excavation. As a result of this excavation, the trees planted by the Tweed ring, which had by this time begun to beautify the thoroughfare, were badly injured, and in many cases destroyed completely. In May, 1910, the central plots of the street were fenced in, sodded, and set out with plants and shrubs. In the Washington Heights section the cut was so deep that the work was done entirely below the surface by regular subterranean miners brought from the mining places of the world, and the surface was undisturbed.

The subway was officially opened to the public from Brooklyn Bridge to Broadway and One Hundred and Forty-fifth Street on October 27, 1904; to One Hundred and Fifty-seventh Street, November 12, 1904; to Two



Photo by Geo. P. Hall & Son
AT THE JUNCTION OF BROADWAY AND SIXTY-SIXTH STREET

Hundred and Twenty-first Street, March 12, 1906; to Two Hundred and Twenty-fifth Street, January 14, 1907; to Two Hundred and Thirtieth Street, January 27, 1907; and to Two Hundred and Forty-second Street, its present northern terminus at Van Cortlandt Park, August 1, 1908. At its lower end, it was opened to Fulton Street, January 16, 1905; to Wall Street, June 12, 1905; and to the Bowling Green and the South Ferry, July 10, 1905. In the Washington Heights section, some of the stations are so deep that elevators carry the passengers to and from the surface.

So immensely popular has the subway become since its opening that it is greatly overcrowded, and other lines and extensions are projected. There are many thousands of New Yorkers who see and know nothing of their city except in the neighborhood of their homes and places of business, between which they travel on the underground. I saw a skit in the newspaper a short time ago, which told of a business man who took an afternoon off from business and rode home on a surface car for the purpose of seeing what New York looked like and what changes had taken place while he had been riding underground for five years or more. He was astonished at the changes, and said he felt like repeating the experiment occasionally in order to get acquainted with his own city.

In colonial days, many of the wealthy merchants had country-seats near the bank of the Hudson. Some of these gentlemen were loyalists during the Revolution and, in consequence, lost their property by confiscation; among the owners we recognize many Dutch and Huguenot names. The principal owners as far north as Ninety-sixth Street were John H. Tallman, Bogert, G. Kimberly, John Gottsberger, John Hardenbrook,

From Forty-Second Street to Ninety-Sixth 283

Jacob Harsen, Sarah McGill, Stephen Jumel, Jacob Lorillard, Richard Somerindyke, John C. Vandenheuvel, John McVickers, Brockholst Livingston, James Hamilton, and David M. Clarkson.

There is one name among the owners of property here that was still more famous in colonial days, but which we do not find after the Revolution—that of Oliver De Lancey. He was a loyalist during that struggle and was made a brigadier, commanding a brigade of loyalists and refugees, recruited principally from the Tories of New York, Westchester, and Dutchess Counties, and from Connecticut, New Jersey, and Long Island. His house, a fine colonial mansion, faced the Bloomingdale Road near Seventieth Street; and in it De Lancey extended a generous hospitality to the best society of the province.

During 1776 and 1777, the British, and especially the loyalist battalions, overran the surrounding country on all sides of New York and perpetrated many outrages. In November of the latter year a party of Americans, intent on retaliation for the outrages inflicted on their fellow-countrymen, rowed down the river and surprised and captured the guard stationed at the landing near De Lancey's. They then pushed on to the house which, besides the servants, was occupied at the time by Madam De Lancey, her daughters, Mrs. Cruger and Miss Charlotte, and a visitor, Miss Elizabeth Floyd of Long Island. The young ladies were about sixteen years of age. According to Judge Jones, the Tory historian of the Revolution, the Americans treated the ladies with insult and brutality, even attempting to abduct Miss Floyd, who managed to escape from their grasp. The ladies fled from the house in their night clothes, and the mansion was looted and fired. Madam De Lancey

concealed herself under a porch until the intruders had retired. Madam Cruger fled through the night and was lost; at daylight she found herself seven miles from the house and was obliged to seek shelter in a farmhouse. The two young girls, shoeless and stockingless, fled across the fields and found refuge in a swamp, where they stood in the icy water up to their knees until daylight, when they sought the Apthorpe house and were taken in



From Valentine's *Manual*, 1863

THE SOMERINDYKE ESTATE ON BLOOMINGDALE ROAD, NEAR
SEVENTY-FIFTH STREET

and cared for. The fine mansion was completely destroyed, but was not rebuilt, as the De Lancey property was confiscated by the State under the laws against the loyalists.

The following advertisement of May 8, 1732, taken from the city's oldest paper, the *New York Gazette*, will show how different this section was at that time from what it is to-day, with its enormous apartment houses and hotels.



THE APTHORPE MANSION, BLOOMINGDALE

In the out ward of the City of New York near to the seat of Mr. De Lancey called Bloomendal, there is to be Sold a Plantation with a very good Stone House, Barn and Orchard, containing about four or five Hundred Apple Trees, and a Pair Orchard, with a great many fine Grafted Pairs. [sic] The Land is very well Timber'd and Watered: It has a very fine Brook very convenient for a Fish Pond, containing about Two Hundred and Sixty Acres of Land and six Acres of Meadow, situate, lying and being near Bloomendal as aforesaid. Whoever incline to purchase the same may apply to Thomas De Key, now living on the Premises, and agree on reasonable Terms.

The Apthorpe House stood until 1892 on the block between Ninetieth and Ninety-first Streets and Columbus and Amsterdam Avenues in the centre of a farm which originally consisted of two hundred acres. It was built about 1765 and was a fine mansion with columns in front. The gentleman who built the house was Charles Ward Apthorpe, a wealthy lawyer of New York, who, though a personal friend of Washington, was a loyalist of a mild type. In consequence, he lost his estates in Massachusetts, but his New York property was untouched as he died in the old mansion in 1797. It came into the possession of Brockholst Livingston, and later into that of Colonel Thorne, who had married Miss Jauncey, whose family were great landowners in this vicinity, and it continued to be the scene of social events for half a century longer, when it became a public house and picnic ground under the name of Elm, or Wendell Park. During the Civil War, the extensive property was used for encamping and drilling recruits before sending them to the front.

The Protestants from the north of Ireland, commonly called Orangemen, held a picnic in Elm Park on the

From Forty-Second Street to Ninety-Sixth 287

anniversary of the battle of the Boyne, July 12, 1870. As they marched up the Boulevard, then in course of construction, some of the airs played by their bands aroused the ire of the Catholic Irish laborers upon the street, who began to stone the procession. A small-sized riot ensued, in which shots were exchanged and three persons were killed and several wounded, some of whom died afterward. The Orangemen announced their intention of parading in 1871, and the Catholic Irish threatened to break up the celebration. The parade was prohibited by the chief of police the day before which it was to occur. Upon this becoming known, several of the public business and commercial bodies held indignation meetings and asked: "If the Irish Catholics are permitted to parade unmolested on St. Patrick's Day, why have not the Protestant Irish an equal right to do the same thing under police protection?" Governor Hoffman was telegraphed for; and after consultation with leading citizens, revoked the police order prohibiting the parade and ordered out the militia to protect the paraders.

In view of possible disorder, all of the Orange lodges, with one exception, gave up the idea of a parade and sought various picnic grounds outside the city. Escorted by five regiments, Gideon Lodge, with less than one hundred men, started on the designated line of march for Elm Park. The streets were filled with spectators, and there was no disturbance until the procession reached Eighth Avenue between Twenty-fourth and Twenty-fifth streets; then a shot was fired and a storm of stones and missiles was hurled at the procession from the neighboring house tops. Two of the regiments fired volleys without authorization, and, as a result, fifty-four spectators were killed or mortally wounded, while many

others received injuries. As is usual in such cases, among those hurt or killed were many innocent lookers-on. Three of the soldiers of the Ninth Regiment were killed, and many others received injuries from stones and brick-bats. The marks of the bullets are still discernible upon some of the houses in Eighth Avenue. These two affairs of 1870 and 1871 are known in the history of the city as the "Orange Riots."

The Aphorpe house is also connected with the greatest name in American history. After the fiasco at Kip's Bay and the escape of Putnam's division on the fifteenth of September, 1776, Washington took up his quarters in the mansion. Preparations were made for supper, when the approach of the British was announced and the Americans made a precipitate retreat, leaving their meal to be eaten by Howe and his staff, who made the house their headquarters for several days.

The Dutch, with fervent patriotism, having named the city at the lower end of the island New Amsterdam, proceeded to name places in the vicinity of New Amsterdam after *home* places of which they were reminded in this new land. Thus, a beautiful village near *old* Harlem called *Bloemendaal* and famous for its horticultural nurseries gave its name to this section not far removed from the New Harlem on the island of Manhattan; and it is only a step from *Bloemendaal* to Bloomingdale. Owing to the large estate of Jacob Harsen between Sixty-sixth and Seventy-second streets, it was also called Harsenville. Harsen's Lane led from within the present Central Park from Sixth Avenue, westward between Seventieth and Seventy-first streets to Columbus Avenue, and thence to the Bloomingdale Road half a block south of Seventy-second Street.



Drawn by Eliza Greathorex

THE CHURCH AT BLOOMINGDALE

Harsen's House was at Seventieth Street and the Bloomingdale Road.*

The Bloomingdale Reformed Dutch Church at Sixty-eighth Street and Broadway is the successor of the original church established near the same site in 1805. It probably owed its birth to the prevalence of yellow fever in the city and the desire of those who fled to this locality to have church services. In 1813, Andrew Hopper, of whom we have already spoken, was married here a second time. Some generous elder of the church society gave to it a large plot of ground for a parsonage, and its increment in value saved the church from extinction. When the Boulevard was opened, the old church edifice was in its path and had to be removed; but the immense value to which the parsonage lot attained enabled the church society to erect the present beautiful structure.

Rutgers Riverside Presbyterian Church is at Seventy-third Street. It was first organized in 1796 under the name of Rutgers Presbyterian Church and had its origin in the desire of expansion on the part of the New York Presbytery after the recovery of the city by the Americans from the British. A lot was donated by Henry Rutgers of the Reformed, or Dutch Church upon his property at the corner of Rutgers and Henry streets; and a frame edifice was built and opened on May 13, 1798. By 1841, the congregation had so increased that a stone church was built upon the same site; twenty years later, the neighborhood had so changed and the congregation had grown so small that the property passed to St. Teresa's

* It must be remembered that these streets did not exist, even on paper, until the acceptance of Randall's map of 1821 by the commission of 1807; and that the actual cutting through of streets above Fifty-ninth, except in some few cases, did not begin until after 1860.

From Forty-Second Street to Ninety-Sixth 291

Roman Catholic Church, which still occupies the same site. Rutgers formed a union with the Madison Avenue Church of that time at the corner of Madison Avenue and Twenty-ninth Street, which had been opened for public worship in 1844. In 1875, a new and larger structure was erected; but by 1881 the same conditions of change in population were met as in Henry Street, and the church was closed, to reopen six months later for a period of three years during which the church lost steadily. At the end of 1884, it was determined to close the historic church and dissolve the society, but another attempt to revive it was made in 1886. At the end of two years, it was seen that this effort also was fruitless, and it was determined to build west of Central Park. The church on Madison Avenue was sold to the Masons of the Ancient Scottish Rite; and the new chapel at the Boulevard and Seventy-third Street, under the name of Rutgers Riverside, was opened September 23, 1888, to be followed later by the present fine edifice, which was opened January 19, 1890.

Christ Protestant Episcopal Church is also an historic church. It was organized in 1793 and was first placed on a site on Ann Street, which it vacated in 1823 to occupy a newly consecrated edifice in Anthony Street which had formerly been occupied by a theatre. The building in Ann Street was sold in 1827 to the Roman Catholics, then poor in wealth and population, and was long used by them as a church. The church in Anthony Street was completely destroyed by fire, July 30, 1847, but it was rebuilt and reoccupied until 1854, when the society moved to West Eighteenth Street, remaining there until 1859, when a new church was erected at Fifth Avenue and Thirty-fifth Street. When this last edifice was burned in 1891, the society moved to its

present location on the Boulevard. The original Ann Street structure was destroyed by fire in 1834.

The other churches in this vicinity south of Ninety-sixth Street are all of more recent organization. They are: Manhattan Congregational at Seventy-sixth Street, organized 1896; Roman Catholic Church of the Blessed Sacrament at the southeast corner of Seventy-first Street, organized 1887; the First Baptist Church at the northwest corner of Seventy-ninth Street, organized in 1891; and the Evangelical Lutheran Church at the northeast corner of Ninety-fourth Street, organized 1897.

Wherever Broadway crosses one of the avenues of the island, we find at the crossing, or near it, an open space of a block or more to which the name of "park," or "square" is given, and that the cross street is usually broader than those above or below it. This is the case at Fourteenth, Twenty-third, Thirty-fourth, Forty-second, Fifty-ninth, Sixty-sixth, and Seventy-second Streets, where Broadway crosses University Place, Sixth, Seventh, Eighth, Ninth (or Columbus), Tenth (or Amsterdam) Avenues respectively. To the space from Seventieth to Seventy-third Street, at the last-named crossing, has been given the name of Sherman Square in honor of the great general. In the triangular plot at the upper end of Sherman Square is a marble statue of Giuseppe Verdi, the great Italian composer. On the base of the pedestal are several marble figures representing some of the principal characters from his operas. The monument was built by subscriptions obtained from Italian residents, principally through the efforts of one of the Italian papers of the city, and was unveiled on October 2, 1906.

As late as 1893, there stood on a height of rock on the south side of Eighty-fourth Street east of the Boule-



Redrawn from Valentine print

BURNHAM'S MANSION HOUSE, 1835

ward, where the cutting through of the street had left it, an old colonial house, once the residence of Edgar Allan Poe, in which he wrote *The Raven*. Poe's wife Virginia was in poor health and the couple came here in 1844 and boarded with Mrs. Brennan in order that Mrs. Poe could get the pure, fresh air. In the olden time, before the surrounding land had been covered with modern dwellings, the house commanded a magnificent view both up and down the Hudson.

Another famous mansion was a stone house standing at Seventy-ninth Street, between Broadway and West End Avenue. This was built about 1759 by John C. Vandenheuvcl, a Dutch governor of Demerara, who came to New York to escape the fever and liked it so well here that he bought four hundred acres of land in this vicinity and built his country house upon it. The Vandenheuvcl town-house was opposite the City Hall Park, between Barclay Street and Park Place. The property was vacated during the Revolution, and was sold by the Vandenheuvcl heirs in 1827 to Harmon Hendricks, who leased it in 1833 to Burnham at a yearly rental of six hundred dollars. Burnham's, near Seventy-fourth Street and the Bloomingdale Road, was the most famous road-house in this section from before 1820 until the proprietor opened the still more famous Mansion House in the old Vandenheuvcl dwelling. After Burnham's occupancy, the property passed into the possession of a Frenchman named Poillon, who sold it in 1878 to the Astor estate. The old house stood until the spring of 1905, when it was demolished to make room for the enormous apartment house and hotel called the Apthorpe, which occupies the whole block in the middle of which the old house used to stand.

The Somerindyke house, at Seventy-fourth Street

From Forty-Second Street to Ninety-Sixth 295

and the Bloomingdale Road, was an interesting place, because here, so it has been frequently stated, Louis Philippe, afterwards king of the French, and his brothers taught school while in exile. Later authorities proclaim the story a myth, as the three noblemen while in this country drew upon the purse of their friend, Gouverneur Morris, for their expenses. When they returned to France and fortune, they forgot their generous American friend until he reminded them of the debt. Then they repaid, but treated the loan as a business transaction entirely. This aroused the ire of the old aristocrat, who could be as sarcastic in his old age as in his earlier days; and since they ignored the element of friendship which had entered into the loan, he demanded the interest and entered suit against them, and his heirs eventually received the money.

In 1831, a Mr. Foley rented an open space near the Bloomingdale Road and furnished pigeons for trap shooting. The sport was a favorite one, as two other similar places were opened by Batterson and Burnham within a short time later. All of these road-houses, as well as the Abbey, Woodlawn, and Claremont, were formerly the country-seats of well-known families. Of these, Claremont, belonging to the Post family in old days, and situated above Grant's Tomb, is the only one remaining, though there is a later Abbey on the heights of Fort Tryon, below Inwood.

Occupying the entire block from Eighty-sixth to Eighty-seventh Street, and from Broadway to Amsterdam Avenue, is the apartment house called the Belnord. It contains one hundred and seventy-six apartments, with from seven to eleven rooms each, and a corresponding number of bath-rooms. It is said to be the largest apartment house in the world, and contains

a population of upwards of a thousand. It was opened in 1909.

The names of some of these old places have a meaning; but the same cannot be said of many of the new. We are supposed to be a democratic people—at least we are always claiming it—yet we have our Marlborough, Buckingham, Royal, Marie Antoinette, Imperial, Em-



From *Valentine's Manual*, 1864

THE OLD ABBEY HOTEL ON BLOOMINGDALE ROAD, 1847

pire, Princess, and similar named hotels and theatres. Why not use some of the old Dutch, Knickerbocker, or Indian names? They are distinctive and their use would show that we have some historic interest in our own city. Just as a century ago, an American literature was established by Irving, Cooper, and others, so in these days we need some builders to act as pioneers for a new hotel and theatre nomenclature—a nomenclature that would mean something.

CHAPTER XII

FROM NINETY-SIXTH STREET TO ONE HUNDRED AND SIXTY-EIGHTH STREET



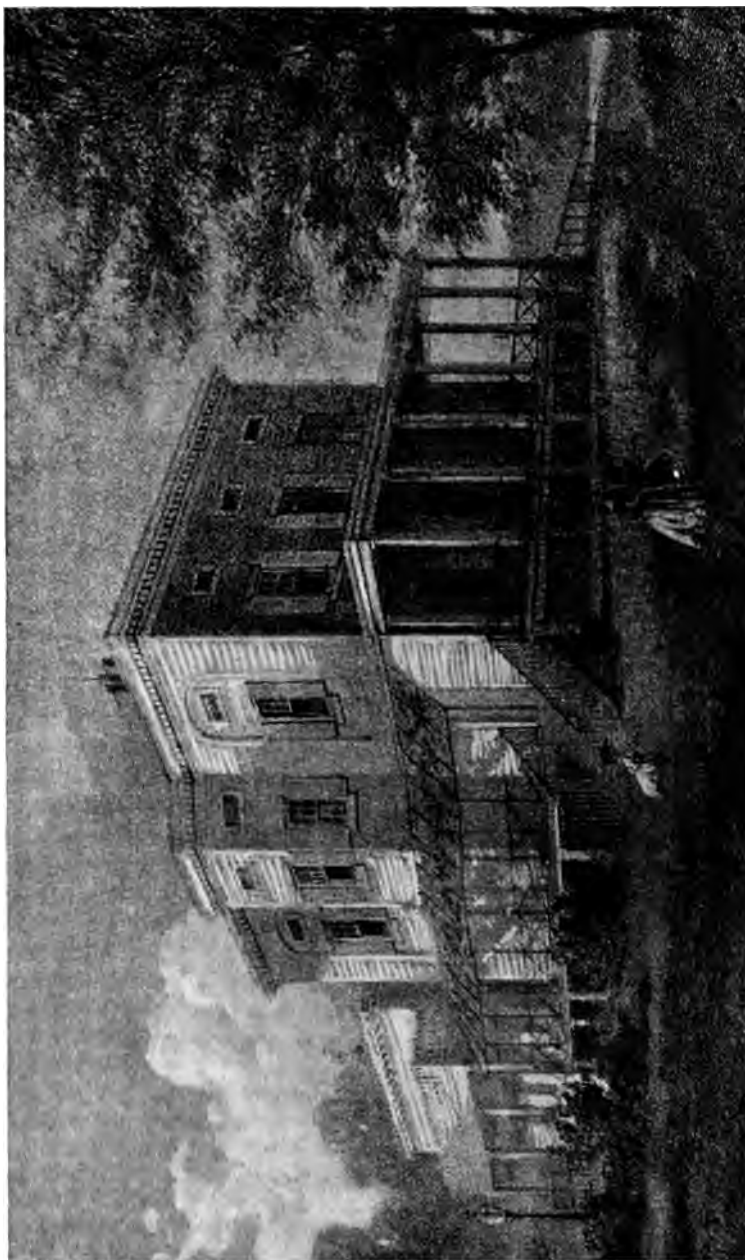
At Eighty-fifth Street, the old Bloomingdale Road wound to the eastward, returning to the line of the Boulevard at about Ninety-seventh Street. At One Hundred and Eleventh Street, it curved to the westward becoming in later days Riverside Avenue abreast of the park of that name, and did not return to the Boulevard again until One Hundred and Twenty-sixth Street was reached. Here it curved up the hill, finally turning to the northward and eastward and joining itself with the Kingsbridge Road from Harlem (the Boston Post-road, Harlem Lane, or St. Nicholas Avenue) near One Hundred and Forty-seventh Street. At One Hundred and Eleventh Street, Broadway changes from its diagonal course and continues straight up Eleventh Avenue to One Hundred and Sixty-eighth Street, where it merges itself in the Kingsbridge Road, which assumes the name of Broadway to the end of the island.

As early as October 23, 1713, there was passed: "An Act for Mending and keeping in Repair the Post-Road

from New York to Kings-Bridge," by which act, on account of the bad condition of the road, it was divided into sections to be kept in order by the different city wards through which it passed. This act also said that the roads were to be cleaned up and maintained by the "Inhabitants of All Towns, Mannors and Precincts by and through whose lands any COMMON publick Roads or highways have or shall run." There were supplemental acts in 1721, 1723, 1728, 1736, and every few years later. By an act of September 30, 1874, the Kingsbridge Road was to be opened, widened, and straightened from One Hundred and Fifty-fifth Street to the Harlem River; but it remained unpaved and badly lighted for many years afterward. From One Hundred and Eleventh Street northward we have, therefore, two roads to consider, the old Bloomingdale Road and the modern Broadway.

We have already carried the property owners as far north as Ninety-sixth Street. Above that point to Manhattan Street the principal owners were David M. Clarkson, James Stryker (Stryker Bay farm), Ann Rogers, John Jacob Astor, William Hayward, Gordon S. Mumford, James De Peyster, Nicholas De Peyster, New York Hospital (Bloomingdale Asylum), Henriques, Marx, Courtenay, and Thomas Buckley. In the old Dutch days, the land between Ninetieth and One Hundred and Seventh Streets, Eighth Avenue, and the Hudson, was granted by Stuyvesant to Teunis Ide; so that the property belonging to owners on the above list as far down as William Hayward was originally on the Ide tract.

Following the old road toward the river, we find that it is the eastern boundary of Riverside Park for some distance. Abreast of One Hundred and Twenty-third Street is the restaurant called Claremont, which commands a superb view of the river. It was erected a little



From *Valentine's Manual*, 1861

RESIDENCE OF THE POST FAMILY, NOW CLAREMONT HOTEL, BLOOMINGDALE ROAD, NEAR MANHATTANVILLE, 1860

over a century ago by Dr. Post and long remained in his family. Previous to 1812, it was occupied by Lord Courtenay, whose name appears in the list of owners above as having property below and contiguous to One Hundred and Twenty-sixth Street. Courtenay, who afterwards became Earl of Devon, came to this country, so it was supposed, on account of political or social troubles in England. One writer describes him as living as a recluse with one man servant; another, as being of a handsome and winning personality and dispensing a charming hospitality. However that may be, when the second war with England occurred, he went back to England and did not return to this country, his plate and furniture being sold at public auction. Another tenant of the mansion for some time was Joseph Bonaparte, ex-king of Spain, who resided here after the downfall of his famous brother. For over fifty years the mansion has been a favorite road-house and restaurant.

A few rods south of Claremont is the mausoleum erected by the people of the nation to contain the remains of the great commander of the Civil War, Ulysses S. Grant. His wife lies beside him. His funeral occurred August 8, 1885, and was the most imposing one ever seen in this city. The body was placed temporarily in a small, brick vault adjacent to the tomb, work upon which was begun upon his birthday, April 27, 1891. It was dedicated April 27, 1897, upon which occasion there was an imposing military and civic parade which attracted to the city hundreds of thousands of strangers. The day was one of great discomfort and suffering to the spectators along Riverside Drive, as it was cold, and a strong gale prevailed which swept up the river without hindrance. During the celebration of the three hundredth anniversary of the discovery of the Hudson and of the one hundredth



GRANT'S TOMB, RIVERSIDE DRIVE

of steamboat navigation under Fulton, in the fall of 1909, the ships of the different navies that participated were strung along the river for miles. The naval parade and illumination were witnessed by half a million people, who blackened the slopes of the park in the vicinity of the tomb so that the lawns were obscured.

Returning to the present Broadway, we find to the east of the thoroughfare at One Hundred and Tenth Street, also called Cathedral Parkway, the Protestant Episcopal Cathedral of St. John the Divine, which has been in course of construction for over a quarter of a century upon the site of the Leake and Watts Orphan Asylum, which was established in 1831. The cornerstone of the cathedral was laid September 27, 1892. On the blocks north of it are St. Luke's Hospital and Home for the Aged.

The blocks above One Hundred and Sixteenth Street on the east side were occupied from 1821 to 1894 by the Bloomingdale Insane Asylum, which had moved in the former year from the grounds of the New York Hospital at Thomas Street, and which moved in the latter year to White Plains in Westchester County.

In 1892, the asylum property was secured by Columbia College, which moved to this site upon the vacation of the property by the asylum. In 1896 the college, the ancient "King's," became a university. Adjoining Columbia on the west side of Broadway is Barnard College for the education of women; and on the north is Teachers College, the professional branch of the university for the training of teachers. Though both are separate corporations, they are closely affiliated with Columbia. Teachers College located here in the fall of 1894, and Barnard in the fall of 1897. In One Hundred and Twentieth Street,



Photo by Geo. P. Hall & Son

COLUMBIA LIBRARY AND CAMPUS

adjoining Teachers College is the famous Horace Mann School, a private institution.



TABLET IN WALL OF ENGINEERING BUILDING, COLUMBIA UNIVERSITY

The university and college buildings, constructed in the best styles of modern architecture, constitute an im-

posing group upon the plateau of Morningside Heights. The library building, containing in the neighborhood of 450,000 volumes, is probably the most notable. It is a gift to the university from its former president, the Hon. Seth Low, as a memorial to his father, an old New York merchant. One of its striking features is its great dome, which has been copied in a smaller degree in the construction of Earl Hall on the west of the library building. One of the professors who was abroad during the construction of the Hall, was asked on his return how he liked it. He scrutinized the new building and then let his gaze wander over the dome of the library. "It looks to me," he said dryly, "as if the library *had laid an egg*." Upon the Broadway side of the west hall, is a bronze tablet commemorative of the Battle of Harlem Heights and the death of Lieutenant-Colonel Knowlton.

As the tablet indicates, we are upon historic ground. From One Hundred and Tenth Street north to Manhattan Street, the ground is quite elevated and was called, from early days, Harlem Heights, though now known, from the public park contiguous to the plateau, as Morningside Heights. In the days of Stuyvesant, the property from One Hundred and Seventh Street to One Hundred and Twenty-fifth Street had been granted to Jacob De Kay, though by the time of the Revolution several farms occupied the original tract. Manhattan Street, called in olden times the "Hollow Way," is a natural valley leading down to the river between the high lands lying north and south of it, and was from the earliest times of the Dutch a road leading down to the ferry to New Jersey.

On the morning of September sixteenth, 1776, the American army was encamped north of the valley, and the British to the south of it, Howe's headquarters being in the Apthorpe House, and Washington's in the Morris

House. The Chief was anxious to know the disposition of Howe's troops, and it is probable that it was about this date that Hale had volunteered to find out and had started on his fatal journey. At daybreak on the morning of the sixteenth, two detachments of the Rangers under Lieutenant-Colonel Knowlton and Major Leitch, a young Virginian, were started from the Point of Rocks on the north side of the Hollow Way for the purpose of getting in the rear of the British on Vanderwater's Heights (Columbia University grounds). A body of Americans was also advanced in a frontal attack; but through some error, firing began too soon and the flanking bodies were exposed to danger, but managed to return safely to the main body.

One of the buglers with the British troops at "Claremont" sounded the fox chase, and the Americans took up the contemptuous challenge. A body of volunteers was sent into the Hollow Way to draw the enemy, while Knowlton and Leitch were sent again to fall upon their rear. The ruse was successful, and the British rushed down the bank to the attack, but were driven back. The Rangers instead of falling upon the rear of the enemy thus fell upon their flank. In the hot fighting that ensued Knowlton was mortally wounded, dying an hour later. He fell, crying: "I do not value my life, if we but get the day." Leitch was also badly wounded and died from his wounds two weeks later. Both officers were buried in what later became Trinity Cemetery. Notwithstanding the fall of their leaders, the patriots fought with spirit, forcing the British back as far as a buckwheat field at about One Hundred and Twentieth Street, and from this position back to the one near One Hundred and Sixteenth Street, where Knowlton had first attacked them early in the morning. Things were

going hard with the British, and Howe ordered up reinforcements from McGowan's Pass; but Washington did not wish to bring on a general engagement, and, having shown the British his mettle, withdrew his victorious troops.

The battle lasted about two hours and resulted in the death of sixteen Americans, the attacking party; while the enemy reported fourteen killed and seventy-eight wounded. While the so-called battle was little more than a large skirmish, it put new heart into the Americans. They were unprovided with shoes, clothing, blankets, guns and ammunition, they were disheartened by the defeat at Long Island and the loss of New York, they had been on the run for days, yet here they had taken the offensive against several of the crack regiments of the British army and had routed them; the British regular was no longer invincible.

At the northern end of the park on the Heights are remains of fortifications which were erected during the War of 1812. These were quite extensive in this region and had been constructed to command the westernmost entrance to New York from the north: other forts and block-houses being erected in the present Central Park to command McGowan's pass through which the eastern post-road passed. While many of our historic sites and buildings have disappeared during the development of the city (and most of them from necessity) it is pleasant to know that the few that remain are being so carefully guarded and marked by the various associations which have grown up within the past twenty years. May the good work go on!

Abreast of the university buildings, the underground railway emerges from the subway and is carried across the valley of Manhattan Street by means of a viaduct, enter-

ing the subway again upon the north side at One Hundred and Thirty-fifth Street. The village of Manhattanville formerly occupied this section through the valley as far east as Seventh Avenue. I remember when the Eighth Avenue horse-car route was extended as far as One Hundred and Twenty-fifth Street, and we considered we were securing wonderful transportation. At One Hundred and Twenty-fifth Street, we cross into the ancient town of New Harlem, whose southern, or western, boundary line extended from the Hudson, just south of the Fort Lee Ferry at Manhattan Street, in a straight line diagonally across the island to Seventy-fourth Street and the East River; the other boundaries were the East, Harlem, and Hudson Rivers.

Midway between Broadway and Amsterdam Avenue, and extending from Lawrence Street to One Hundred and Thirty-third is a section three blocks long, called "Old Broadway." It is a relic of past times and marks the ancient bed of the Bloomingdale Road, several fine trees still lining its course. Hamilton Place above gives an approximate idea of the continuation of the old road to its junction with the Kingsbridge Road near One Hundred and Forty-eighth Street. Upon *Old Broadway* at One Hundred and Thirty-first Street is the R. C. Church of the Annunciation, organized in 1840. At the same location is Manhattan College, founded by the Christian Brothers in 1853, and constituting one of the leading secular educational institutions of the Catholic Church in the city.

In 1899, I moved into the suburbs and did not revisit upper Broadway until the spring of 1910. As a cyclist, I was familiar with the appearance of the street and its scenes of semi-rural beauty, with occasional mansions of the olden time. It did not seem possible that such

changes could have been made in eleven years as those I saw on my later visit. Of all the old country places only one remained, that at the northwest corner of One Hundred and Fifth Street; and it was crowded up against the side of a great apartment house with a small plot in front of it, still green with grass and shrubbery. It looked lost amid such surroundings, but still retained its look of quiet dignity among the bricks and mortar that had usurped its former extensive grounds. From Manhattan Street north to One Hundred and Sixty-eighth, there was an almost unbroken line of "flats" on both sides of the thoroughfare; and the side streets, with their heavy pitch to the Hudson, were almost equally built up.

On the west side of the island, and north of the Harlem boundary line just mentioned, the lands belonged in common to the settlers of New Harlem as secured to them by the *grond brief* of Governor Stuyvesant under date of March 4, 1658, afterwards confirmed to them by English grants of Nicolls and other proprietary and royal governors. The first grants below One Hundred and Seventy-fifth Street were made during Kieft's time to Jochim Pieters and were known as Jochim Pieters's Hills. These are the present Washington Heights, also called in former days Carmansville, after David Carman, one of the large property owners upon the Heights. During the time of Governor Andros, he granted to some of his favorites lands claimed by New Harlem; and the Harlem settlers, fearing that other common lands would be taken from them, petitioned the governor and obtained his consent in 1676 to a division of the common lands among themselves in severalty. They began with the Kieft grants, and in 1691 and 1712, made further divisions under fear that Dongan and Hunter would follow the example of Andros and give their lands to outsiders. A considerable

farm just north of the boundary and taking in the ferry site came into possession of Pieter Van Oblinus; but just how he secured possession is not clear, as the tract had been common land of the settlers. Perhaps, as he was one of the leading magistrates and officers of Harlem, he may have managed to secure it by means which we moderns call "graft." There were twenty-six lots in this first division of the Harlem common lands; and among those who drew these we find such names as Tourneur, Vermilye, Brevoort, Bussing, Delamater, Waldron, Dyckman, Low, Delavall, and Van Oblinus (Pieter and Joost). In the agreement concerning the division, we find there was a clause securing the maintenance of the Kingsbridge Road, the old Indian trail leading to the north end of the island.

Coming down to the early part of the nineteenth century, we find the owners of these lands to be James Byrd, John Barrow, John Lawrence, Nicholas Delonguemare, Elizabeth Hamilton (the widow of Alexander), Samuel Broadhurst, Beekman, *Trinity Cemetery*, *Audubon Park*, Samuel Watkins, Ebenezer Burnall, Robert Dickey, Hannah Murray, Stephen Jumel, Arden Rosannah Bowers, Abraham K. Smedes, and Moore.

Attracted by the salubrity and healthfulness of Washington Heights, several charitable societies located among the country estates, on or near the old road or upon Broadway. The Sheltering Arms, organized in 1864 for homeless children between five and twelve years of age for whom no other institution provides, is at Amsterdam Avenue and One Hundred and Twenty-ninth Street. The Hebrew Orphan Society, founded in 1822, is on the same avenue at One Hundred and Thirty-sixth Street. At Broadway and One Hundred and Thirty-eighth Street is one of the grandest charities in the city, the Hospital



THE SUSPENSION BRIDGE AT TRINITY CEMETERY, BROADWAY AND ONE HUNDRED AND FIFTY-FIFTH STREET

and Home for Chronic Invalids, commonly called the "Montefiore Home." It was founded in 1884 and is supported almost entirely by the voluntary subscriptions from people of the Jewish faith, as a memorial to the famous philanthropist, Sir Moses Montefiore; it is open to both sexes without distinction of *race* or *creed*. The present quarters have been found to be too cramped to carry out fully the desires of the trustees, and arrangements are already completed to transfer the Home to the Borough of The Bronx on the Gunhill Road near Jerome Avenue. The new buildings are to cost \$1,500,000, and will be designed to accommodate six hundred invalids, with all modern improvements for their comfort and health. The Colored Orphan Asylum, organized in 1837, was for many years at Amsterdam Avenue and One Hundred and Forty-third Street until its removal to Mount St. Vincent. At the time of the draft riots of July, 1863, the asylum was located at Fifth Avenue between Forty-third and Forty-fourth streets. The malice of the rioting crowds was directed against every one who showed color, whether man, woman, or child, and many negroes were hanged from near-by lamp-posts. Inspired by this hatred, the mob made an attack upon the asylum and fired the buildings, which were consumed; but, fortunately, the children were withdrawn safely through a rear entrance. With the money obtained as damages from the city, that secured from the sale of the Fifth Avenue plot, and that subscribed by citizens, many of whom had never heard of the institution until the burning of the asylum, the new buildings were started on Washington Heights. The Institution for the Deaf and Dumb was incorporated in 1817 with De Witt Clinton as first president of the society; it is located at One Hundred and Sixty-third Street and Fort Washington Avenue. The New York



From Valentine's *Manual*, 1865
THE AUDUBON ESTATE ON THE BANKS OF THE HUDSON, FOOT OF ONE HUNDRED AND FIFTY-SIXTH STREET AT CARMANSVILLE

Juvenile Asylum, founded in 1817 at what is now Madison Square, long occupied a portion of the Smedes property below One Hundred and Sixty-eighth Street until its removal to Dobbs Ferry.

Trinity Church secured the plot of ground between Amsterdam Avenue and the river and between One Hundred and Fifty-third and One Hundred and Fifty-fifth streets, and opened it as Trinity Cemetery in 1843. To it were transferred at that time, and later, the bodies from the graveyards attached to St. George's in Beekman Street, St. Stephen's in Broome Street, and St. Thomas's in Broadway, as those edifices gave way to the advance of business and were sold by their congregations. Upon the stone fence at the corner of One Hundred and Fifty-third Street and Broadway is a bronze tablet erected by the Sons of the Revolution, stating that upon this height and through the cemetery grounds was constructed one of the southern outworks of Fort Washington. It was the first portion of the works to fall in the assault of November 16, 1776. When the Boulevard was constructed about 1870, the cemetery was cut into two parts connected by a suspension bridge. The grounds are laid out in terraces, and from the top of the hill the view looking down through the trees to the river is a beautiful one. General John A. Dix is buried here; and upon several occasions I have been the guest of the Grand Army post named after him, and have attended the ceremonies at his grave on Memorial Day. To look from above while the veterans wind their way up the hill to the strains of Chopin's *Funeral March* presents an affecting and beautiful scene which one long remembers. A monument in the form of an Irish cross at the northern entrance bears the name of the great American naturalist and ornithologist Audubon.

Washington Heights have only become accessible since the building of the subway. In my younger days it was a favorite walk for myself and a few companions. We took the Eighth Avenue cars as far as their terminus at Manhattanville, and then struck down to the Hudson through the Hollow Way, turning north on the railway tracks to Jeffrey's Point upon which Fort Washington was in part located; then we climbed to the top of the hill, ending our walk at Kingsbridge and returning by the railroad. The roadway over which we tramped led through one private estate after another, giving us fine views of comfortable mansions and well-kept grounds, with glimpses through the trees of the noble river below and of the Palisades opposite. Most of these mansions have disappeared, though there are several that deserve mention.

The James Gordon Bennett place occupied a part of the land upon which Fort Washington is situated. John James Audubon lived in Audubon Park above One Hundred and Fifty-fifth Street. Here he was far removed from the noise and turmoil of the city—the "crazy" city, as he called it—which he loathed with all the feeling of a man whose life had been spent principally in the open air in communion with Nature. Here he died in 1851 and was buried in Trinity Cemetery.

Audubon Park has disappeared, and in its place are a number of city blocks already filling up with great apartment houses. A few of the old mansions are to be found below the public driveway the city is constructing (Twelfth Avenue) above the tracks of the New York Central railroad. Some of those in the upper part of the old park have been converted into road-houses along the line of Fort Washington Avenue, which begins at One Hundred and Fifty-ninth Street. The block bounded by Broad-

way, Twelfth Avenue, and One Hundred and Fifty-fifth and One Hundred and Fifty-sixth streets is a notable one; for it contains a group of beautiful buildings, due principally to the generosity of Archer M. Huntington. These already completed are the American Numismatic Society's building, organized in 1858, and the building of the Hispanic Society of America, which was opened in 1908. Two other buildings are in course of construction at this writing (May, 1910), that of the American Geographical Society of New York, organized in 1852, and a small Roman Catholic Church for services in Spanish. The buildings already occupied contain: the one, a collection of coins, medals, etc.; the other, paintings, illuminated and printed books, pottery, and archæological specimens and relics from Spain, showing the progress of civilization in that country since the days of the Phœnicians.

Alexander Hamilton owned an estate in this neighborhood on the Bloomingdale Road near One Hundred and Fortieth Street, and here he erected a handsome country-house which he named the "Grange" after the home of his grandfather in Ayrshire, Scotland. The house has been removed a short distance away to the east side of Convent Avenue, where it serves as the parish house of St. Luke's P. E. Church; so that it is assured of preservation for some time, at least. From the Grange, Hamilton used to drive to and from his office in the city; after putting his affairs quietly in order, he took his last drive for his fatal meeting with Burr, without letting his "dear Betsy" have an inkling of the prospective encounter.

Of the thirteen trees planted by Hamilton in commemoration of the thirteen original States, nothing now remains but the stumps and a few fallen logs; these could

a year or two back be easily procured by the relic hunter in the playground adjoining the R. C. Church of Our Lady of Lourdes in One Hundred and Forty-third Street. When searching for them in April, 1910, I was told by a real estate agent of the vicinity that the boys who use the playground had built fires about the few remaining trees and stumps with the result of destroying them all.

South of Hamilton Grange are the extensive buildings of the College of the City of New York, situated on the summit of what used to be called Breakneck Hill, up which wound in olden times the steepest and most dangerous road in the city, a portion of the old post-road. The site is a commanding one; and its selection shows good judgment upon the part of those who are responsible for this group of fine buildings containing the highest of the city's free, educational institutions.

Mention of Burr brings to mind a still older and finer house than the Grange, and filled with associations even more historic. This is the Roger Morris, or Jumel, mansion, which stands near the Kingsbridge Road at One Hundred and Sixty-first Street. The property which it occupies was originally conveyed by the town of New Harlem to one of the settlers named Hendrick Kiersen, in March, 1696. The grant lay between the present One Hundred and Fifty-ninth and One Hundred and Sixty-third streets, from the Kingsbridge Road to the edge of the cliff overlooking the Harlem River. The present edifice was built in 1758 by Colonel Roger Morris as a home for his bride, Mary Philipse of the Yonkers. Morris and Washington were aides on the staff of General Braddock in that ill-starred officer's unfortunate campaign in the old French war. Military business brought the young Virginian to Boston in 1756, and on his return he stopped at the house in New York of his friend, Colonel Beverley

Robinson, where he met his host's sister-in-law, Mary Philipse. Tradition says that he fell in love with her, but there are no facts in the case. However, if he had proposed to her, it is not likely that she would have accepted an impecunious land-surveyor, as Washington was at that time. So he passed on, and his former companion-in-arms, Roger Morris, won the brilliant and witty Mary. During the War for Independence,



THE ROGER MORRIS, OR JUMEL, MANSION

Colonel Morris, though at first inclined to take up the colonial cause, was persuaded by his wife, so it is said, to remain loyal to the king. In consequence, he lost all his property in America by confiscation.

During the operations in this vicinity, Washington occupied the house as his headquarters from September 16th, to October 21, 1776, when he retreated to White Plains. During the British occupation of the island, it was the headquarters, off and on for over six years,

of Lieutenant-General Knyphausen, the senior officer of the German mercenaries. After the war it passed into the possession of a farmer; and while Washington was President, he and his Cabinet visited the house in July, 1790. It was in this house in the fearsome days of 1776 that Washington first met Alexander Hamilton, later offering the young captain of artillery a position on his staff, which Hamilton accepted. Thus began that close intimacy which was to be of such incalculable benefit to the country, the calm steadfastness of the older man supplementing and holding in check the brilliant genius of the younger.

The property passed into the possession of John Jacob Astor, who sold it, about 1810, to Stephen Jumel, a wealthy French merchant of New York. His wife was a beautiful New England girl of whom conflicting accounts are given.* Jumel and his wife visited France, where they moved in the best society of the First Empire, returning with many beautiful articles of furniture, the loot of French palaces and châteaux. With these they decked their rooms, extending a generous hospitality, and entertaining such distinguished visitors as Talleyrand and Jerome Bonaparte. Jumel died in 1832; and Aaron Burr, then almost an octogenarian, but still possessing those wonderful powers of fascination for women of whatever age for which he had been notorious, came a-courting the widow. She withstood his importunities; but Burr said finally that he would appear on a certain day with a clergyman and the wedding should take place. He kept his word, and Madam Jumel, to avoid a scandal, consented. Under date of Wednesday, July 3, 1833, Philip Hone says in his diary: "The celebrated Col. Burr was married on Monday evening to the

* Read *The Conqueror* by Gertrude Atherton.



TREES AND STONE WALL MARKING THE WEST SIDE OF OLD BLOOMINGDALE
ROAD, 1906. LOOKING SOUTHWEST FROM BROADWAY AT 124TH STREET.
GRANT'S TOMB IN DISTANCE

equally celebrated Mrs. Jumel, widow of Stephen Jumel. It is benevolent of her to keep the old man in his latter days. One good term deserves another."

Madam Jumel was rich and Aaron Burr was poor; but old as he was, his brilliant, but misguided, genius impelled him to attempt once more to recover the ground he had lost since the duel with Hamilton and his trial for treason. His wife's wealth was to furnish the means, and this he squandered so lavishly that she asked for an accounting. He refused. Then followed scenes between the ill-matched couple, and, after one year of marriage, a separation. Burr died in poverty and obscurity on Staten Island in September, 1836, and his widow survived him until 1865. Her last days were spent in a different fashion from those of her youth and middle age. She became a greedy and avaricious recluse, seeing few visitors, and hoarding her income, which grew to be large from the increment in value of her real estate. The final sale of her property was in 1882, or 1883; I remember driving up the Kingsbridge Road about that time and seeing the posters advertising the sale.

General Ferdinand P. Earle was the last owner of the property in 1900, and he called the place "Earlcliff." In 1901, the mansion and what was left of the once large estate passed into the ownership of the city of New York for \$235,000 for use as a public park and museum of colonial and Revolutionary relics. Two patriotic organizations, the Colonial Dames and the Daughters of the American Revolution, sought the honor of being its custodians; but the legislature was not to be overcome by the blandishments of either party, and left the decision to the commissioner of parks, fairly shirking the responsibility and putting it upon his shoulders. (Poor man!) The various chapters of the Daughters of the



Drawn by Eliza Greateorex

THE CROSSED KEYS TAVERN

American Revolution located within the city formed a general committee to take charge of the historic mansion, later forming themselves into the Washington Headquarters Association and incorporating March 17, 1904; whereupon the custody of the house was awarded to them by the park commissioner.

The house is in an excellent state of preservation and remains almost as it was originally built. It stands on a bluff; and from its cupola a magnificent view can be obtained of the Harlem Valley and its bridges; and, so it is stated, seven counties in three different States may be seen from the same vantage point. There is a commemorative tablet on the building, placed there by the Washington Heights Chapter, D. A. R., and another which bears this inscription: "This property was acquired by the city of New York under the administration of Seth Low, Mayor, and was formally opened as a public park December 28, 1903." There is also a bronze medallion of Washington at the side of the doorway. The house was opened as a public museum, May 28, 1907, and is free to the public.

At One Hundred and Sixty-eighth Street Broadway merges itself in the Kingsbridge Road which, during the rest of its course to the bridge over Spuyten Duyvel Creek, assumes the name of Broadway. At the junction of the two roads, on the west side from One Hundred and Sixty-fifth to One Hundred and Sixty-eighth streets is the new resort of the baseball enthusiasts, the American League Park.

In colonial days a stone house and tavern, called the Crossed Keys from its sign, stood on the Kingsbridge Road at about One Hundred and Sixty-fifth Street. A notice of it appeared in the *Historical Magazine* for October, 1881, which describes it as still in use.

CHAPTER XIII

FROM ONE HUNDRED AND SIXTY-EIGHTH STREET TO KINGS-BRIDGE



NE Hundred and Eighty-first Street is an important cross thoroughfare, leading from the Washington Bridge, and toward the west to Fort Washington. Holyrood Chapel of the P. E. Church, organized in 1893, is situated on it at Broadway. The Roman Catholic Church of St.

Elizabeth, organized 1870, is at One Hundred and Eighty-seventh Street, and the Mt. Washington Presbyterian Church, organized in 1846, is at Dyckman Street, where the road leads down to Inwood Station. It is a quaint, country-like church with a tall steeple painted yellow. The Holyrood Chapel was built less than fifteen years ago and the property cost about fifteen thousand dollars; the land is now worth two hundred thousand dollars, and the church has already accepted an offer for it and will move to Fort Washington Avenue. This transaction gives an indication of the increase in values of land in this vicinity.

On the river bank at Jeffrey's Neck, where is now located Fort Washington Park, was the Revolutionary fortification of the patriots, erected under the plans



From a photograph
NORTHWEST CORNER BROADWAY AND ONE HUNDRED AND EIGHTY-FIRST STREET, OPPOSITE HOLYROOD CHAPEL

of Major Rufus Putnam, Washington's engineer. The outworks of the fort extended in all directions for over a mile, and on the Jersey shore of the river was Fort Lee. It was expected that these two forts, with the obstructions placed in the river for the purpose, would prevent the passage up the stream of the British vessels; but in this expectation the Americans were disappointed, as the war vessels sailed safely through the obstructions. Much against his own judgment, Washington, instead of dismantling the fort upon his own evacuation of the island, listened to the request of Congress and left it with a garrison under Colonel Magaw. After their unsuccessful Westchester campaign, the British turned their attention to the reduction of Fort Washington. After several days of preparation, they carried it by assault on November 16, 1776, and Magaw and his three thousand troops became prisoners of war to die and rot in the New York prisons. Thus the Americans lost their last foothold on Manhattan Island. The fort was occupied by the British and was renamed Fort Knyphausen in honor of the leader of the Hessians who had taken the principal part in its capture.

We have a rather general idea that the Hessians were fit only for looting and other outrages. One has only to look at the precipitous bluff below Fort Tryon, the northernmost of the fortifications below Inwood, to realize that they could also fight upon occasion. Loaded down with paraphernalia weighing fifty pounds or more and carrying a musket weighing sixteen pounds, they stormed these bluffs and carried them in the face of the finest marksmen in the world. The lines of the old fort are plainly visible, and as they are within a public park, they bid fair to be preserved for all time. On November 16, 1901, the anniversary of the battle, an appropriate



From a photograph

BROADWAY AT DYCKMAN STREET, INWOOD, SHOWING THE PALISADES IN THE DISTANCE

monument and tablet were dedicated on Fort Washington Avenue, at the base of one of the old ramparts, the land being given for the purpose by James Gordon Bennett the younger, the proprietor of the *New York Herald*. The earthworks of Fort Tryon, just below Inwood, are easily discernible near the former residence of Will'am Muschenheim of the Hotel Astor.

Beyond One Hundred and Seventieth Street, the Kingsbridge Road finds its way down the hill on to the Dyckman meadows between a precipitous bluff on the east, the Laurel Hill of earlier days where Fort George, one of the outer defences of Fort Washington, was located, and an equally bold line of bluffs on the west continuing to the end of the island. There is a passage through these to the Hudson to which the name of Inwood is given. This is the present terminus of Lafayette Boulevard which is itself virtually an extension of Riverside Drive.

North of Inwood, the greater part of the land may be said to have constituted the old Dyckman property, though there were some other owners. Near the extreme end of the island, Governor Kieft made two grants to Matthys Jansen and Huyck Aertsen in 1646 and 1647; but the town of New Harlem later owned the tract at the wading place, of which more later, as common land. The Jansen and Aertsen tracts afterwards became the home farm of Jan Dyckman. The original home of the Dyckmans stood on the bank of the Harlem River near Two Hundred and Ninth Street but was vacated by the family during the Revolution when they left with the Americans. Upon their return, they found that their homestead had been burnt, and nothing but its ruins remained. A new homestead, still standing, was built at the corner of Broadway and Hawthorne Street; but



Courtesy of the Department of Bridges, New York City

FARMERS' BRIDGE

how much longer it will stand unless measures are taken to preserve it, is a question easily answered when we take into account the fate of other ancient buildings.

Associated with Dyckman was Jan Nagel, both of whom were young, enterprising, and progressive men, who in time secured by lot, purchase, and exchange nearly all of this upper end of the island. The Dyckmans,



STRANG HOUSE, OLD DYCKMAN HOME, BROADWAY AND TWO HUNDRED
AND NINTH STREET

both of this section and of the adjoining county of Westchester, were patriots during the Revolution, and several of them served as guides and scouts for the American marauding parties; one of them, Lieutenant William Dyckman, was killed at Eastchester near the end of the war. A monument commemorating his death and that of Lieutenant-Colonel Greene and Major Flagg of Rhode Island was erected some years ago at Yorktown Cemetery in the northern part of Westchester County. Greene and Flagg were killed at Pine's Bridge over the

Croton River during a raid of De Lancey's corps of loyalists.*

Above One Hundred and Seventieth Street, there are still several estates on the west side of the road, and the green lawns and fine trees make a scene of great beauty. As in the days of old, a number of the mansions have been converted into road-houses where the autoist may refresh himself. But the doom of these places is near at hand; for the street department of the city government is cutting through and filling in, and before many years have gone by we shall see solid blocks of houses occupying these still beautiful sites. Luckily, the configuration of the ground is such that the old rectangular plan of blocks has had to be modified, and we find avenues and streets curving and winding up the adjoining hillsides. To the east the meadows present no such problems, and it has been simply a matter of filling in the lines of the streets. The property has been on the market for a few years and is gradually being occupied; one thing in its favor being that, though it is a longer ride on the subway to business the passenger is reasonably sure of obtaining a seat in the cars instead of hanging by a strap. Incorporated in the wall of the property above Hawthorne Street on the west side is one of the old brownstone mile-stones, reading "12 miles from New York."

On the west side of the old Kingsbridge Road, on the lane leading to Fort Washington (One Hundred and Eighty-first Street) there stood in colonial days a popular tavern known as the Blue Bell. Cadwalader Colden, while on a journey to New York in October, 1753, stopped here and later wrote to his wife: "It was very well kept by a Dutchman named Vandewater, and our food and lodging were very comfortable." Tradition says it was

* See the author's novel, *A Princess and Another*.

the headquarters of General Heath who was in charge of the American defences near Kingsbridge before the evacuation of the island by the patriots in 1776. The Hessian Colonel Rahl also occupied it after the attack on Fort Washington. One of his aides fell in love with the pretty daughter of the house and promised to remain in America if she would marry him. His commanding officer, as well as the girl's parents, favored the match, and so they were married. When the Hessians were captured at Trenton, the young husband refused to be exchanged, but took the oath of allegiance to the United States and, with his wife, settled in East Jersey. When the patriots were marching into the city at the time of the British evacuation, it is said that Washington stood in front of the house while the troops marched past in review. At the same time he gave into custody a young British deserter who had married a girl at the Blue Bell the day before and who did not want to accompany his comrades on their departure from this country. The tavern was still standing in 1848, as a contemporary writer makes note of the fact; and it is further shown by an advertisement in the same year in which Stephen Dolbeer notifies his friends and the public that "he has opened the Blue Bell tavern, at Fort Washington."

"Felix Oldboy" says that the Dutchman, having found a place for his home and garden, immediately began to look about him for a place to dig a canal. We have seen how popular the section containing the canal in Broad Street became. Plans were early proposed for connecting the East and Hudson Rivers by way of the Collect Pond and the stream which took its overflow into the Hudson through Lispenard's meadow; and when the improvements in Canal Street were made, even in American days, they at first took the form of a canal

lined with trees. The old Dutch settlers proposed digging a canal from the Harlem mere by way of Matje David's Vly, the Hollow Way, or valley through which Manhattan Street leads to the Fort Lee Ferry. In 1827, a company was incorporated for the purpose of doing what had been suggested a century and a half before by using the same route. Elaborate plans were formulated, glowing prospectuses were issued, some of



THE BLUE BELL TAVERN

the stock was subscribed for, a part of the work was actually done,—and then the whole scheme collapsed.

It was reserved for the national government to carry out at last this two-century-old scheme of connecting the two rivers and to save vessels bound from one river to the other the long and hazardous trip around the island of Manhattan. The tortuous windings of Spuyten Duyvil creek did not commend that stream to the engineers, who decided to cut through the base of the limestone hill at the northern end of the island, about Two Hundred and Twenty-second Street, deepen the

Harlem, and connect it by a wide and deep cut with the western entrance of Spuyten Duyvil creek from the Hudson. Several years were spent in the work and \$2,700,000 were expended before the ship canal was opened for traffic, June 17, 1895. At the same time the city erected a great drawbridge to carry Broadway across the new waterway. When the subway was constructed, it was found that this bridge would not be strong enough to carry the increased burden, and a clever engineering scheme was devised to remove the old bridge and replace it with one suited to the increased prospective weight. The new bridge was constructed on floats and taken to the canal; then large flatboats were placed under the old bridge, and as the tide rose it lifted the floats and the bridge with them. The floats were then towed away and the new bridge drawn into the vacant place. As the tide fell, the floats fell with it and the new bridge was thus lowered into place. The plan worked so well that there was but little loss of time or interruption to traffic over the roadway. Later, the New York Central Railroad determined to wipe out the circuitous and dangerous passage through Kingsbridge. A dike was built across the Harlem River below the Farmers' Bridge, and the tracks were laid upon a shelf blasted out on the northern bank of the canal.

The Indian name of the stream connecting the East and the North Rivers was Muscoota; but from the very earliest days the part of the Harlem River nearest the Hudson was called Spuyten Duyvil creek, though how it received this name is still a question. Many reasons have been given, but none that is entirely satisfactory. The most likely is that the name was given from the spring of water which "spouted" from the hill near the



Courtesy of the Department of Bridges, New York City

end of the island; and mention is made of this spring in several of the early English grants. Another, offered by Riker, is that the Indians of this neighborhood, remembering their first encounter with the *Half-Moon* off the mouth of the creek and the firing of the falcon that killed several of them, called the creek "Spouting Devil"; but this explanation would presume on their part a knowledge of English, which they could not have possessed until sixty years afterward. Before the construction of the ship canal, the tides used to race through the creek with great rapidity, and when the two tides from the Harlem and Hudson Rivers met, the tide rips thus formed caused a great turbulence in the creek, so that the water "spouted," or was thrown into the air, a fact that will be remembered by those acquainted with the creek in those days. Upon ancient maps and records we find many variants of the name; as "Spitting devil," "Spiking devil," "Spitten devil," "Spouting devil," "Spiken devil,"—but many of these we may lay to bad spelling, as colonial orthography was no better than that of the present-day schoolboy. It is to Irving that we must go for a picturesque origin of the name.

He says:

Resolutely bent, however, upon defending his beloved city, in despite even of itself, he [Petrus Stuyvesant] called unto him his trusty Van Corlaer, who was his right hand man in all times of emergency. Him did he adjure to take his war-denouncing trumpet, and mounting his horse, to beat up the country night and day—sounding the alarm along the pastoral borders of the Bronx—startling the wild solitudes of Croton—arousing the rugged yeomanry of Weehawk and Hoboken—the mighty men of battle of Tappaan Bay—and the brave boys of Tarry Town and Sleepy Hollow. . . .

From 168th Street to Kingsbridge 337

It was a dark and stormy night when the good Anthony arrived at the creek (sagely denominated Haerlem *river*) which separates the island of Mannahata from the main land. The wind was high, the elements were in an uproar, and no Charon could be found to ferry the adventurous sounder of brass across the water. For a short time he vaped like an impatient ghost upon the brink, and then bethinking himself of the urgency of his errand, he took a hearty embrace of his stone bottle, swore most valorously that he would swim across *en spijt den Duyvel*, (in spite of the devil!) and daringly plunged into the stream. Luckless Anthony! scarce had he buffeted half way over, when he was observed to struggle violently, as if battling with the spirit of the waters—instinctively he put his trumpet to his mouth, and giving a vehement blast—sunk for ever to the bottom.

The potent clangor of his trumpet . . . rung far and wide through the country, alarming the neighbors round, who hurried in amazement to the spot. Here an old Dutch burgher, famed for his veracity, and who had been a witness of the fact, related to them the melancholy affair; with the fearful addition (to which I am slow of giving belief) that he saw the *duyvel*, in the shape of a huge moss-bonker, seize the sturdy Anthony by the leg, and drag him beneath the waves. Certain it is, the place, with the adjoining promontory, which projects into the Hudson, has been called *Spijt den Duyvel*, or *Spiking devil*, ever since. . . . Nobody ever attempts to swim over the creek after dark; on the contrary, a bridge has been built to guard against such melancholy accidents in the future—and as to moss-bonkers, they are held in such abhorrence, that no true Dutchman will admit them to his table, who loves good fish and hates the devil.

At low tide there was a natural ford through the creek which was used by the Indians and by the early settlers. This is spoken of in the early records as "*the wading place*," and was situated where the present

Broadway crosses. During the administration of Governor Lovelace, the Harlem people established a ferry to the mainland from about Second Avenue and One Hundred and Twenty-fifth Street, and Johannes Verveelen was made the ferryman. Rather than pay his



KINGSBRIDGE AND SPUYTEN DUYVEL CREEK BEFORE IT WAS FILLED IN

rates, the farmers and other travellers continued to use the ford; and so a fence was erected to prevent access to it and to oblige people to use the ferry. Several times the fence was torn down; and, finally, Verveelen made a virtue of necessity and the ferry was moved to the wading place. At the same time he was granted sixteen acres of land in what had been the Jansen grant of 1646, which the Harlem people claimed because the Jansens had not made the required improvements called for by their patent. Later, the Jansen heirs tried to recover the land; but Governor Lord Bellomont would

not sign the act of the provincial legislature restoring their right to it. From the Indian name, the place was known as Papariniman, or Paparinemo.

The ferry was the only means of getting to and from the mainland until 1693, when Frederick Philipse secured his patent for the Manor of Philipsburgh, one clause of which required that he should build and maintain a bridge across the creek, for which he could charge and collect toll, and that it should be called "The King's Bridge." He was also required to conduct a tavern for the accommodation of travellers, and the rates were fixed; but there was free passage for farmers and others on the day preceding a fair, during its continuance, and the day after, as well as to troops, their guns and their equipment, and to persons on government or public business. In 1712, the bridge was removed to its present site but its days are apparently numbered, for the creek has been completely filled in on the west and there is a scheme to fill it in on the east as far as the New York Central tracks and to use the land thus made for a baseball field. It will be a great pity to see this old landmark go. Over it crossed the retreating army of the Americans in the fall of 1776; over it they crossed again in 1783 when they came into their own again; and during the war it was used constantly by the British.

For many years, the farmers of Westchester County objected to paying the tolls upon the bridge to help fill the coffers of the manor lord; and in 1758, Jacob Dyckman, Frederick Palmer, and others succeeded, notwithstanding the active, preventive measures of Frederick Philipse, in building a free bridge across the creek at the foot of the present Two Hundred and Twenty-fifth Street. This is officially known as the Farmers' Bridge, though locally, as "Hadley's" from one of the

early land-owners in the vicinity. The free bridge was opened with a barbecue and great rejoicings on the first of January, 1759; and the ancient toll bridge was soon forced to become a free bridge, also. Dyckman erected and maintained a tavern on the Manhattan side; on the Westchester side, the bridge conducted travellers into



CENTURY HOUSE, NEAR SPUYTEN DUYVIL CREEK, HARLEM RIVER, 1861

John Archer's village of Fordham; *i. e.*, the *ham*, or town, at the ford.

The tavern became immensely popular on account of the diversion of traffic from the old bridge, but it did not pay, and in consequence Jacob Dyckman was obliged to make an assignment. His property of thirty acres was sold February 11, 1773, to Caleb Hyatt, who continued to conduct the tavern and who was succeeded by his son Jacob, so that it became known as Hyatt's Tavern, and is so spoken of by General Heath in his memoirs.

The Farmers' Bridge was destroyed by the British when at the end of the war they left this section. On the bank of the Harlem, near Two Hundred and Thirteenth Street, Jan Nagel, 2d, built a stone house in 1736, which was known for many years as the Century House. Its destruction is only quite recent. Up to within twenty years ago, boats used to ply on the Harlem from the Third Avenue bridge as far as the Century House. There were the *Tiger Lily* and several others; and the sail was a pleasant one, the boat stopping at High Bridge and other places where there were beer gardens and similar pleasure resorts, and connecting with the fast boats which formerly ran from Harlem Bridge to Peck Slip—this was before the days of the elevated railroad.

There are a good many Revolutionary associations connected with this neighborhood; for the British had two forts on Marble Hill near the end of the island. These were Fort Prince Charles and the Cock Hill Fort; they also had two pontoon bridges connecting with the mainland, one near the Hudson and the other below Fort George; in addition, Tubby Hook was also fortified. On the day of the assault upon Fort Washington, November 16, 1776, Lord Cornwallis with several thousand troops went through the creek in a flotilla of boats for the purpose of attacking the fortifications from the Hudson River side; after the fall of the fort this section remained in the possession of the British until the close of the war. Heath describes an attempt to recover Fort Independence from the enemy in December, 1776, during which the Americans attempted to place a cannon on the opposite bank of the Harlem so as to get the range of the forts on Marble Hill; but the British acted first and opened fire on them so that the patriots had to scam-

per up the bank, dragging their gun behind them. The fire from the Americans, however, sent the Hessians



OLD KINGSBRIDGE HOTEL. A POPULAR ROAD-HOUSE OF FORMER DAYS

within their forts and into the cellars of the houses for safety.

At Two Hundred and Twenty-seventh Street is a large building, giving evidences of having seen better days. It is called the Kingsbridge Hotel, but was more famous in the days of the horse as the Kingsbridge Inn, when it was a favorite road-house.

CHAPTER XIV

THE BOROUGH OF THE BRONX AND LOWER WESTCHESTER COUNTY



IN the year 1639, Cornelis Van Tienhoven, the fiscal, or secretary, of the Dutch West India Company, bought from the Indians a tract of land called Keskeskeck on the Maine, north of the Harlem River, whose eastern boundary was Bronk's kill, and western, the *Noordt*, or Hudson River; the northern limits of the tract were indeterminate. Owing to the fact that the first settler was Jonas Bronk, the eastern portion of this purchase was called "Brouncksland" and the river near his house and farm was called Bronk's River, from which we get, by easy transition, the Bronx. On November 1, 1683, the proprietary of New York was divided into twelve counties, and the land just mentioned became a part of Westchester County.

Strung along on the east bank of the Hudson was a number of Indian villages belonging to the Manhattans, the Weckquaesgeeks, the Sint Sincks and other kindred tribes of the Mohicans. Between these villages were Indian trails which were used by the incoming whites;

these, in time, developed into wagon roads, and the Albany Post-road, the present Broadway, was such an expansion of the old Indian trail with modifications as far as Albany. On the nineteenth of June, 1703, the colonial assembly passed: "An act for the Laying out Regulateing Clearing and preserving Publick Comon highways thro'out this Colony," part of which reads as follows:

And one other Publick Comon General Highway to Extend from Kings Bridge in the County of Westchester thro' the same County of Westchester Dutchess County and the County of Albany of the breadth of Four Rod English Measure at the Least to be Continued and remain for ever the Publick Comon General Road and Highway from King Bridge aforesaid to the Ferry at Crawlew over against the City of Albany.

This was the legal beginning of the post-road, but it was many years before it became a post-road in the ordinary accepted meaning of the term.

From the *Philadelphia Almanack of 1779*, we take the following extract from the table of roads from Philadelphia to Crown Point:

From Philadelphia to New York, 97; to Kingbridge, 15; to Cocklins, 22; to Crotons Riv., 12; to Peekskill, 10; to Rogers, 9; to Fifhkill, 11; to Poughkeepffe, 14; to Staatsborough, 11; to Rynbeck, 6; to Schermerhorns, 10; to Livingftons M., 14; to Claverack, 7; to Kinderhook, 14; to half way H., 10; to Albany, 10—

a total of 175 miles from New York to Albany. The place termed "Cocklins" is in Tarrytown and should be Conklin's; as we find in the town records of Greenburgh, Westchester County, under date of 1742: "fore overzeers for the Kings Roads Jacop Conklin, for the Road from tomas storm [Thomas Storm's] to the mills [Philipse's on

The Bronx and Lower Westchester County 345

the Pocantico—this would be a portion of Broadway] . . . and Joseph Conklin, Junr.”

Upon crossing the Spuyten Duyvil Creek by the ford, the ferry, or the bridge, the traveller arrived on a marshy island called Paparinemo. The Indians called this section Shorrack-kappock, and they had a village on Spuyten Duyvil, or Berrien's neck called Nipnichsen. Northward of Paparinemo was a great meadow, or marsh, through which meandered Tibbett's brook, the Mosholu of the Indians. The traveller could not, therefore, go north, but was obliged to turn toward the east through the marsh to the higher and dryer ground on the east side of the valley. Later, about 1695, a causeway was built on the line of Macomb Street, which made it easier and dryer. Upon reaching the higher ground the road divided, the main one going up over the hill and across to Williamsbridge and Boston, the other turning northward and crossing to the west side of the valley in front of the Van Cortlandt mansion; this latter was the Albany Post-road and was opened as far as the Saw-kill in 1669. About 1808, the Highland Turnpike Company filled in the marsh above the bridge and continued the road up the middle of the valley, erecting gates and charging toll; this is the approximate line of Broadway of the present.

The first white owner of this section after the purchase of 1639 was Adrien Van der Donck, a native of Holland and a lawyer by profession. He was an educated and well-to-do man, and he bought from the company and the Indians a large tract extending several miles up the Hudson. In Holland the sons of a gentleman are called *jonkheer*, and Van der Donck was always called *de Jonkheer* Van der Donck. His tract was called by the English the “Jonkheer's land”; which, by natural con-

traction, and since the Dutch "j" is pronounced "y," became the Yonkers, the name by which this section was known until about 1830, when it became simply Yonkers.

Under the provisions for forming patroonships adopted by the company in 1629, Van der Donck took steps to form his purchases of 1646 into a patroonship; but he was disliked by Governor Stuyvesant, whose arrogant will he had attempted to thwart, and he did not succeed in becoming a patroon until 1653, dying within a couple of years later. His property of *Colon Donck* (Donck's Colony) as it was called by the Dutch, or Nepperhaem, as it was called in his *grond brief*, or land patent, passed into the possession of his widow, who married Hugh O'Neale of Patuxent, Maryland, before 1651. She turned the property over to her brother, Elias Doughty, in 1666. He sold the tract to various purchasers, one of whom, Frederick Philipse, became in time the owner of nearly all that had belonged to Van der Donck as well as a great deal more, carrying his territory as far north as the Croton River. He was the richest man in the colony and was called by the English "the Dutch millionaire." In 1693, his land was formed into the English manor of Philipsborough, or Philipsburgh; at the same time he built the bridge over Spuyten Duyvil Creek and as manor-lord became responsible for the maintenance of the road to the bridge, the Albany Post-road. During the time of Governor Fletcher, Philipse was more deeply interested in the piratical and contraband trade than any other merchant, and his name was sent to England as one of those who should be investigated. He was one of the backers of Captain Kidd in Bellomont's time, and it is stated that Lord Bellomont remarked that: "If the coffers of Frederick Philipse were searched, Captain

The Bronx and Lower Westchester County 347

Kidd's missing treasures could easily be found." As a result of Bellomont's attempts to suppress the "free" trade, Philipse resigned from the council and retired to his manor about 1698 and spent the remaining years



From a photograph

THE GODWIN, FORMERLY THE MACOMB HOUSE, KINGSBRIDGE

of his life in its development. He died in 1702, at the age of seventy-six.

The first manor-lord was succeeded by his grandson, also a Frederick Philipse, and a minor at the time of his grandfather's death; and he, in turn, was succeeded by his son, Colonel Frederick Philipse, the third and last manor-lord, in 1751. Colonel Philipse was a Tory, or at least a neutral, during the Revolution and lost his estate by confiscation in 1779 under the laws against the loyalists enacted by the State legislature. He died in England in 1785, having gone there to live when the exodus of the British took place in 1783. The British

Government reimbursed him for the loss of his possessions, paying him about three hundred thousand dollars.

The bridge over Spuyten Duyvil Creek is faced by a square stone house, known as the Godwin house, which was built by Alexander Macomb in the early part of the nineteenth century and was long occupied by his widow. Edgar Allan Poe, who lived at Fordham, less than two miles away, was a frequent visitor at the Macomb house. Incorporated in the mansion, it is believed, is the old inn which was erected by Frederick Philipse in 1693 and maintained by various inn-keepers for over a century. It was known at one time as Cock's Tavern; and at another time, Cooper, in his novel of *Satanstoe*, makes the landlady a Mrs. Lighte. His hero, Corney Littlepage, and his friend Dirck stopped at the inn upon several occasions.

In the early part of the nineteenth century, General Alexander Macomb secured the right of establishing mill-dams and mills upon the Harlem River. The stream was dammed at the present Central Bridge near the terminus of Eighth Avenue, and also at Spuyten Duyvil, and a mill erected at the latter place. The scheme was unsuccessful, nor did the general's son do any better. The mill stood on the northern side of the creek, not far from the ancient bridge, and was supported by piers in the water, as well as on the land. The power was that of the tide. After the failure of the plan, the mill stood for many years unused; it was then converted into a boarding-house for workmen, but was finally deserted. It became in time a menace to life and was indicted as a nuisance, but in 1853, it took itself out of the way during a heavy storm and fell to pieces.

The old road curves around the Godwin house lot, and a short distance above is Macomb Street, the site of the original *causey* connecting the bridge with the

The Bronx and Lower Westchester County 349

village of Fordham which was situated near the present Putnam railroad station. As we proceed north, on our left is the rocky core of the island of Paparinemo, but within half a mile we are crossing the meadows contiguous to Tibbett's brook, which gets its name from one of the purchasers from Doughty of the Van der Donck land.



VAN CORTLANDT MANSION IN VAN CORTLANDT PARK

These meadows extend for a considerable distance; but if we measure the future by the past, there is no doubt that within twenty-five years, they will be drained, filled in, and built upon. Overhead, the "subway" thunders to its termination at Van Cortlandt Park, to be extended some of these days to the Yonkers line.

In the year 1788, the legislature of the State formed several new counties and divided them, as well as the existing ten, into townships. The town of Yonkers extended to Spuyten Duyvil Creek on the south. In November, 1872, the lower portion was formed into the

township of Kingsbridge; and on January 1, 1874, it became a part of the city of New York and a part of the Twenty-fourth Ward. After the formation of the greater city in 1895, it became a part of the Borough of The Bronx.

There are many historic associations connected with the spot, for here all travellers to and from Manhattan had to cross until the new bridge was erected over the Harlem near Third Avenue in 1797 and Coles laid out his new Boston Road through Morrisania. On Spuyten Duyvil neck the Americans constructed three redoubts to command the creek, and on Tetard's hill to the east, they erected a more pretentious affair, which they named Fort Independence, which commanded the bridges. When the British occupied the place in the fall of 1776, these redoubts were strengthened and formed Numbers One, Two, Three, and Four of a chain of eight redoubts along the creek and the Harlem. They served as bases for the marauding parties that went out through the country and also as havens of refuge in case of retreat.

For a number of years preceding 1905, contractors were engaged in laying an immense trunk sewer under the highway, and the different strata of soil were exposed so that one could easily trace nature's work in filling in this ancient bay. The road was regraded and repaved and the trolley line connecting with Yonkers became more pleasant to ride upon, as passengers were not subjected to the bumps of the uneven road, nor to delays in waiting for other cars on the single track road. Then followed the change in the tracks of the New York Central which did away with several of the most dangerous grade crossings in the State. As we cross the meadows, we find that they are closing in and that the land north of us is becoming higher. On our right we soon come

The Bronx and Lower Westchester County 351

to Van Cortlandt Park with a group of fine trees about the old mansion, very frequently miscalled the "manor-house."

The first wife of the first Frederick Philipse was a widow with a daughter Eva, whom Philipse legally



VAN CORTLANDT PARK. THE DAM AND MILL

adopted as his own. She married Jacobus Van Cortlandt to whom Philipse sold fifty morgens of land at a bend of Tibbett's brook called George's point. Here Van Cortlandt erected his house, dammed the brook, and built mills which were used until about 1880, but which were demolished about five years ago by the park department, as they were too rotten to repair and too dangerous to be left standing. The house stood between the dam and the group of locusts; its foundations and some old Dutch bottles and pottery were discovered in

grading the grounds here about ten years ago. It is supposed that Van der Donck's house had formerly occupied the same site. The mansion now standing west of the dam, and used as a museum of Colonial and Revolutionary relics under charge of The Colonial



VAN CORTLANDT PARK. RUINS OF OLD MILL, REMOVED IN 1903

Dames of the State of New York, was built in 1748 by Frederick Van Cortlandt, who died in the following year. As the property received from his father Jacobus was entailed, it passed to Frederick's eldest son, also a Jacobus, and was known as "Lower Van Cortlandt's," a second son, Frederick, at the time of the Revolution city clerk of New York, having a place on the post-road a short distance above and known as "Upper Van

The Bronx and Lower Westchester County 353

Cortlandt's," or the "white house." At this latter place, the British usually kept an outpost throughout the war. It was captured by General Lincoln in the advance against Fort Independence and the other fortifications in this neighborhood in December, 1776, by an expedition under Major-General Heath. On the east side of the valley, near the junction of the Boston and the Albany post-roads, Richard Montgomery, afterwards a major-general in the army, who was killed at Quebec, had a farm after he had resigned from the British army and had come to America, where, he said "he could hide his pride and his poverty."

The Colonel Jacobus Van Cortlandt of Revolutionary times was a Tory of a mild type, and his patriotic friends and neighbors who were so unfortunate as to fall into the hands of the British often had their condition ameliorated by the exertions of the kindly gentleman. The house has entertained distinguished visitors, including Washington and Rochambeau during the grand reconnaissance of the allied armies in the summer of 1781. Washington also stopped here on his way to the city with Governor Clinton and General Knox in November, 1783. The old line of Broadway still exists to the west of the present highway, wandering through the hamlet of Mosholu. On the west is the Riverdale ridge with its knobby hummocks of land, in the midst of which the fleeing Stockbridge Indians sought refuge after their defeat by Simcoe, Tarleton, and Emmerick a couple of miles away in the northeast corner of Van Cortlandt Park.

The entire Van Cortlandt estate and other property, amounting to 1132 acres, were acquired by the city of New York in 1884 and formed into Van Cortlandt Park, which lies to the east of Broadway up to the city line. Just north of the Van Cortlandt mansion is the parade

ground, which is also used for the game of polo. At its upper end is the high hill known as Vault Hill, where are the burial ground and vaults of the Van Cortlandts. Upon the evacuation of New York by the Americans in 1776, Frederick Van Cortlandt, the city clerk, hid



MONUMENT ON INDIAN FIELD, VAN CORTLANDT PARK

the city records within the vaults, but they were soon discovered by the British and returned to the city hall. After the reconnaissance in force of the allied armies which were threatening New York in the summer of 1781, news reached Washington that the Count de Grasse with his fleet was approaching the capes of the Chesapeake and that Lafayette had Cornwallis trapped in Yorktown, Virginia. The armies were paraded as if to attack New York, but were at once wheeled about

The Bronx and Lower Westchester County 355

and took up the march for the King's Ferry at Verplanck's Point below Peekskill. In order to deceive Clinton and make him believe the armies were still north of the Harlem River, extensive camp-fires were maintained for several days on Vault Hill; and Clinton did not know that the allies had departed until he received word from his outposts that the Americans and the French were half way across the Jerseys on their way to Philadelphia and Yorktown; then it was too late to intercept them.

The land becomes higher as we approach the city of Yonkers. The southern suburbs of that progressive city have been developed principally within the past five years, a development due to the completion of the subway to Van Cortlandt. South Broadway, as the thoroughfare is known in Yonkers, passes down a steep hill to Getty Square. Here are two buildings of special interest, the Hollywood Inn and St. John's Protestant Episcopal Church.

Hollywood Inn was built for and presented to the workingmen of Yonkers by the late William F. Cochran, a wealthy manufacturer and philanthropist of the city, as a club-house for their use. It is unsectarian, and no attempt is made to use it for anything else than for the recreation, amusement, and instruction of the men, among whom it numbers a membership of over a thousand. It is probably the pioneer among workingmen's clubs in this country, and the plan of management and the way it is conducted have served as models for similar enterprises, both in this country and in others. On the outskirts of the city there is also an open-air ground for baseball and other out-of-door games.

St. John's Church owes its being to the second manorlord. The first Frederick Philipse was a member of the

Reformed Dutch Church, but his grandson, having an English mother and being born and brought up in Barbados, became a devout member of the Church of England. During the greater part of colonial days, St. John's was



YONKERS, GETTY SQUARE, HOLLYWOOD INN, AND ST. JOHN'S CHURCH

a part of the parish of Westchester, the rector of St. Peter's at Westchester borough town coming to the Yonkers once a month. The first church edifice was erected in 1752, under a legacy made by the second manor-lord, who had died the previous year. Colonel Philipse, his successor, supplemented the benefactions of his father and secured a glebe to the church, which remained as a mission until 1787 when it became a separate parish. Besides the rectors of St. Peter's at

The Bronx and Lower Westchester County 357

Westchester, from 1764 onwards, the church had its own ministers who were furnished by the Propagation Society in London; but the church still remained a part of Westchester parish. The first of these ministers was Harry Munro, the second was Luke Babcock, who maintained the king's side so loyally that at the outbreak of the Revolution he was captured by a party of raiders and treated so inhumanly that he died from the effects of his ill-treatment. His widow was courted by Colonel Gist of the American forces, who used to visit her as often and as secretly as he could, with his force to protect him. This becoming known to the British, an elaborate plan was devised for his capture by Simcoe, Emmerick, and De Lancey, which only failed of bagging Gist and his whole command through the stupidity of some of the German mercenaries of the British. A third minister was George Panton; but as his term was during the Revolution, he found his labors both unsatisfactory and dangerous. In 1791, the church edifice was destroyed by fire, but was rebuilt the following year. When the present edifice was erected in 1870, the people were so attached to the old building and its associations that as much as possible of it was incorporated in the new.

The most interesting building in the city is the old manor-house of the Philipses, which was used as a city hall until 1909, when Mrs. Cochran, the widow of the philanthropist, secured it and turned it over to the local patriotic and historical societies for preservation. It bears the dates 1682-1882, they being placed there at the bi-centenary celebration in the latter year. The first manor-lord erected a strong stone building which was used as a trading post and mills, and which was called by Philipse the "lower mills." The present building, which has the original one incorporated with it, was built

by the second manor-lord in 1745. Workmen and materials were imported from England especially for the construction of the mansion; and the elaborate carvings and workmanship are visible to-day. Every kind of available tree and plant that would grow in this climate was imported and planted in the gardens, which reached down to the bank of the Hudson in a series of



From a photograph

PHILIPSE MANOR HOUSE, YONKERS

terraces. Some of the boxwood hedges were in 1830 ten feet high. Every person of distinction who visited the province was made welcome and entertained by the manor-lord. In the attic of the house, so it was said, there were quarters for fifty household servants alone; from which some idea may be gained of the lavish scale upon which these great landowners lived. Besides negro slaves, of which there were very few, the servants and employees consisted of bond-servants, or redemptioners. But these manor-lords were not landowners only; they were great merchants whose ships visited all parts of the

The Bronx and Lower Westchester County 359

world with which the navigation laws permitted them to trade and brought back the productions of every clime. Nor did they always obey these laws; for it is a notorious fact that about one third of the colonial trade was contraband, and that the great, noble, and wealthy merchants of all the colonies thought it no sin to cheat the king of his revenue whenever they could find or make the opportunity. In addition to their foreign trade, they carried on a fur trade with the Indians in the valley of the Mohawk and as far west as the French permitted them to go.

In 1785, the commissioners of forfeiture appointed by authority of the state sold the confiscated estates of Colonel Philipse, preference in purchase being given to the old tenants of the manor lands. In this way the manor-house with three hundred and twenty acres surrounding it came into the possession of Cornelius P. Low, a merchant of New York, for fourteen thousand five hundred and twenty pounds. In 1813, the property passed into the hands of Lemuel Wells, who died intestate in 1842. His widow and heirs divided the property up into lots, and they were sold under orders of the Chancery Court. Five years later, the Hudson River Railroad was built, and Yonkers began to grow. It became a city in 1872, and it now has a population of over eighty thousand inhabitants. It is a great manufacturing city of varied industries, but the chief outputs are carpets, rugs, and hats. The power for many years was furnished by the Nepperhan River, which was dammed in several places. These dams were broken by the authorities in 1892 on the score of their being dangerous to the public health. Van der Donck had erected a saw-mill on the river, and the stream had been called *de Zaag kill*, or Sawmill River, by which

name it is better known to-day than by its Indian name of Nepperhan.

We pass up a very steep hill in leaving Yonkers toward the north, where the highway is called North Broadway; this is on the flank of one of the numerous hills upon which the city is situated and which is called Boar, or Hog, Hill. The Americans encamped here upon numerous occasions during the Revolution when engaged in guerilla warfare, and in 1781, during the advance of the allied armies, it was the right of the American line. The ancient road came into the control of the Highland Turnpike Company about 1806, which proceeded to improve and straighten it, erecting gates and charging toll for its maintenance. It thus became known, not only as the Albany Post-road, but also as the Highland Turnpike, and so appears on many documents describing property or residence.

Up to a few years ago, this portion of the road was bordered with the elegant mansions and estates of wealthy merchants and professional men, but the real-estate broker has taken possession and the suburban villa is rapidly appearing. The most famous of these estates was that of "Greystone," the residence of Samuel J. Tilden, now the property of Samuel Untermeyer, a prominent lawyer of New York; Untermeyer was credited with having received in January, 1910, the record fee of seven hundred and fifty thousand dollars for a case upon which he had been engaged for two or three years.

The next place through which Broadway passes is Hastings, a village in which there were some manufacturing industries when it was first started in 1850, but which is now given over almost entirely to residential purposes. It is in the township of Greenburgh. Two incidents of the Revolution are recorded as happening

The Bronx and Lower Westchester County 361

here. After the fall of Fort Washington, six thousand troops under Lord Cornwallis crossed the Hudson at Hastings for an attack upon Fort Lee, which was evacuated in such haste by the Americans that they left much of their baggage behind them. The other incident occurred in Edgar's lane and probably gives rise to the story of the Headless Horseman, who, according to the legend, was a Hessian. Colonel Sheldon of the American army, hearing that a body of Hessians under Lieutenant Wurtz was coming out on a marauding expedition from Philipse's (Yonkers), placed his dragoons in ambush in the lane and awaited their approach. The Hessians were guided into the trap by a farmer of the neighborhood named Peter Post, who was afterwards maltreated by the enemy for his share in the affair. The Hessian dragoons, unaware of their danger, rode carelessly along; suddenly the Americans were upon them at full charge. Many of the Hessians were killed and wounded and several were driven into the river where they were drowned or captured. This was in the spring of 1777.

Dobbs Ferry got its name from the fact that one of the tenants of the Philipses was a Swede named Jeremiah Dobbs, who added to his gains as a fisherman by ferrying people across the Hudson during colonial times. His ferry boat was a periauger, a large canoe or dugout made from a single tree. The name has been rather obnoxious to the wealthy residents of the place, and several attempts have been made to change it. As early as 1830, Van Brugh Livingston filed deeds under the name of Livingston's Landing, and the new name was used for probably thirty years; but the old name would not down. In 1870, a calm, deliberative meeting was held to decide upon a new name for the village, and that of Paulding, one of the captors of André, was almost agreed upon

when a gentleman arose and made a speech in a serious vein to the following effect. He said he was no worshipper of Dobbs; he disliked that his home should be identified with such a low place as a ferry; double names especially were uncouth and undesirable; and he had known



From a photograph

PHILIP VAN BRUGH LIVINGSTON HOUSE, HEADQUARTERS OF WASHINGTON,
DOBBS FERRY

Paulding personally and could not brook him. Van Wart, who had also aided in the capture of André, was a Christian gentleman; he, therefore, moved that instead of calling the place Paulding-on-Hudson, that the Van of Van Wart be stricken off and the place be called "Wart-on-Hudson." The speech gave such a ridiculous turn to the whole affair that the meeting broke up and nothing further was attempted at that time. The village was later incorporated under the name of the township, Greenburgh; but this name has had no better

The Bronx and Lower Westchester County 363

luck in supplanting the ancient name than did that of Livingston's Landing.

On Broadway at Dobbs Ferry, we find an old fashioned house in front of which is a monument bearing in bold letters the names of Washington and Rochambeau. This is the Philip Van Brugh Livingston house, though the part of it referred to in the legend carved upon the stone is the rear part of the house. The legend states that in this house were the headquarters of Washington and that here he and the French commander, Rochambeau, planned their campaign against Yorktown, and that from this vicinity the allied armies took up the march. It states further that in 1783, the British commander-in-chief, Sir Guy Carleton, visited Washington under a flag of truce for the purpose of arranging with the latter the manner and date of the British evacuation of New York City; and further, that it was from this house that Washington, Governor Clinton, and the escort under General Knox took up the march down the post-road to re-enter the city of New York.

The Indians located in this neighborhood were the Weckquaesgeeks, from whom Philipse bought the land; in consequence, it is described in his manor grant as the Weckquaesgeek tract. There is a good deal of Revolutionary history connected with Dobbs Ferry, as it is fairly within the famous "Neutral Ground" of the great struggle, and every place within that district was subjected to the raids and marauds of both sides. After the Westchester campaign of 1776, the Americans established a line of posts from the mouth of the Croton River eastward to the Sound to prevent the British from getting into the Highlands. The enemy established a similar line of posts in the neighborhood of the Harlem River, extending from Kingsbridge through Fordham,

Morrisania, Westchester, Eastchester, and Pell's Manor (Pelham). In the summer time, these were extended to Yonkers, Valentine's Hill, and New Rochelle. There was thus between the two armies a tract twenty miles wide which was not in the possession of either—this was the Neutral Ground. The Americans were commonly known as "the upper party" and the British as "the lower." In addition to the regular troops and militia of both sides, there were bands of land pirates, or bushwhackers, who, under the guise of patriotism or loyalty, robbed, burned, and destroyed with great impartiality, torturing, and even murdering, anybody out of whom they thought it was possible to extort anything in the way of plunder. These predatory bands were called "Cowboys" and "Skinners"; the former being the British, who, at least, did their work under some semblance of authorization, the latter being the Americans, who did their nefarious work without the semblance of consent, except tacit, on the part of the officers on the lines. These marauders could change their politics with great rapidity as occasion required.*

Irvington is the next place through which the post-road passes. This constituted the Bissightick tract of the Philipsburgh manor; but its name is due to Washington Irving, who lived here until his death, after his return from his embassy to Spain. "Sunnyside lane" leads down to the shore of the Hudson to one of the most famous homes in America, "Sunnyside," where the genial writer entertained his friends, who constituted all that was best in the American culture of the period.

In an interesting letter of Irving's, dated Madrid, Oct. 18, 1842, he says:

* See Cooper's *The Spy*.



Washington Irving

From the etching by J. D. Smillie

WASHINGTON IRVING

You ask me about my own movements; for many years I have made none, having built for myself a snug cottage near Sleepy Hollow, on the banks of the Hudson, which I stocked with young nieces, like a dove-cote, and lived there the happiest of old bachelors. . . . In an evil hour, however, the Government having got information, somehow or other, that I had wonderful talents for diplomacy, though in a latent state, threw the bait of an embassy at Madrid, like a gilded fly, into my quiet retreat, and drew me out like a trout.

Irving has entwined many legends about the old stone house with its irregular formation and high gables, "as full of angles and corners as an old cocked hat. It is said, in fact, to have been modelled after the cocked hat of Peter the Headstrong, as the Escorial was modelled after the gridiron of the blessed Saint Lawrence." It was built, Irving states, by Wolfert Acker, a privy councillor of Peter Stuyvesant, "a worthy, but ill-starred man, whose aim through life had been to live in peace and quiet." He sadly failed; for "it was his doom, in fact, to meet a head wind at every turn, and to be kept in a constant fume and fret by the perverseness of mankind. Had he served on a modern jury, he would have been sure to have eleven unreasonable men opposed to him." He retired in disgust to this place, which was then a wilderness, built the gabled house and "inscribed over the door (his teeth clenched at the time) his favorite Dutch motto, '*Lust in Rust*' (pleasure in quiet). The mansion was thence called Wolfert's Rust (Wolfert's Rest), but by the uneducated, who did not understand Dutch, Wolfert's Roost."

Later, the chronicler goes on to say, the farm came into possession of Jacob Van Tassel, a valiant Dutchman who espoused the cause of the patriots. Of his exploits



"SUNNYSIDE," IRVINGTON

with his famous goosgun, you may read in the *Sketch Book*. The old house was the domicile of the blooming Katrina Van Tassel, beloved by the Yankee pedagogue, Ichabod Crane, and by the blustering, swaggering Brom Bones. It was from here that the unfortunate Ichabod, stuffed full of Dutch dainties and ghost stories, began that wonderful ride along Broadway in which he was to meet the Headless Horseman and forever disappear from the ken of men—all of which you may read in *A Legend of Sleepy Hollow*.*

Besides Irving, Westchester County along the Hudson has been the home at various times of many men and women who have been more or less connected with literature, who found inspiration in the beautiful hills or from the lordly river. Among those resident at Yonkers were William Allen Butler, the distinguished lawyer and author of *Nothing to Wear*, in which he pictures the distress of "Flora McFlimsey of Madison Square"; Dr. Dio Lewis, the famous physician and physical culturist; Mrs. E. D. E. N. Southworth, whose romantic novels were the "thrillers" of a certain portion of our reading public a generation ago, and Melville D. Landon, the humorist, who is best known under his pseudonym of "Eli Perkins," and whose death at Yonkers was noticed in the press of December 17, 1910. Another name connected with Yonkers is that of Frederick W. Cozzens, a retired wine merchant, who gave no indication of his literary ability until he had reached the half-century mark. He was the author of the "Sparrow Grass Papers," published in *Putnam's Monthly*, and became famous as a humorist. Perhaps there is something in the air of Yonkers that creates humor, for one of the most popular

* See the part of this volume describing Kinderhook for the originals of these characters.

The Bronx and Lower Westchester County 369

of living humorists, John Kendrick Bangs, is also a resident of the place. He once ran for mayor, but was on the wrong side, the Democratic, and so suffered defeat; though the story he got out of his experience probably paid him better than the office would have done. Admiral David Glasgow Farragut, though not an author, succeeded very well in writing his name upon the scroll of fame; he was a resident of Hastings at one time. John William Draper, M.D., LL.D., the eminent chemist and physiologist and the writer of many books and treatises on these subjects, lived at Irvington before his death there in 1886.

Jay Gould, the famous financier, was a resident of Tarrytown. We do not think of him as being a writer, yet in his younger days he was the author of a very good history of Delaware County. The upper part of the township of Mt. Pleasant, now called North Tarrytown, was especially favored by writers, among whom was General James Watson Webb, the veteran editor and journalist, whose house was at one time occupied by General John C. Frémont, the famous "Pathfinder" and the first candidate of the Republican party for the presidency. Another resident was Alexander Slidell McKenzie, the distinguished naval officer and author of lives of Paul Jones, Oliver H. Perry, and Stephen Decatur, as well as of other works. General Adam Badeau, author of *The History of General U. S. Grant* and *Aristocracy in England*, passed most of his boyhood here and was a resident until 1856; Commodore Matthew Calbraith Perry, who opened the ports of Japan to outside commerce, was a literary man in so far that he furnished the data for a history of his famous expedition; A. C. Wheeler ("Nym Crinkle"), the poet and critic, also spent his boyhood here, and Hamilton W. Mabie,

critic and essayist, lived for some time in North Tarrytown. Edward March Blunt, the distinguished navigator and author of *Blunt's Coast Pilot*, now continued by the United States Hydrographic Office, was a resident of Sing Sing; and Henry Ward Beecher spent his summers at his country-place, "Boscobel," at Peekskill. Albert Bierstadt, the famous artist of a generation or more ago,



LYNDEHURST, HOME OF MISS HELEN M. GOULD

had his home on the heights at Dobbs Ferry in a fine castellated mansion, which was destroyed by fire.

Our route along Broadway passes the mansions and estates of wealthy residents who thus far have succeeded in keeping the trolley cars from the historic highway, the last effort in that direction being in opposition to a bill before the Legislature of 1910. To mention these owners would be to give a list of the greatest and best in the business, political, literary, and professional life of New York for several generations. The grounds are beautifully kept, and the houses are homes of comfort and refinement. There is one at which we must stop

The Bronx and Lower Westchester County 371

before entering the village of Tarrytown. It belongs at present to Miss Helen Miller Gould, whose patriotism was shown during the Spanish War and since by many acts of kindness for the benefit of the soldiers and sailors of the United States. The estate is called *Lyndehurst*, and was originally the home of Philip R. Paulding. While Philip Hone was driving through this section in 1841, he seems to have been impressed by the extravagance of the owner of "Paulding Manor," as the property was called when built in 1840; for he calls it derisively "Paulding's Folly." In my boyhood days the estate was the property of a gentleman named Merritt and was called "Merritt's Folly," as the owner was deeply interested in horticulture and expended, so it is stated, over one hundred thousand dollars in the magnificent conservatories and greenhouses which still adorn the place, and to which Miss Gould kindly allows the public access on all days except Sundays. The property came into the possession of the late Jay Gould as a summer home, and at his death descended to his daughter. Besides the collections of ordinary plants from all the zones, there is here located what was for a long time the finest collection of orchids in the country.

The name Tarrytown awakens thoughts of romantic and historic interest, for so many legends are attached to the locality. Once the scene of Revolutionary struggle and of easy Dutch life, it now contains the palatial homes of Standard Oil magnates and representatives of our modern industrial life and activities. The name Tarrytown is, itself, illusive. No one knows positively where it came from—probably from two brothers named Terry who were early settlers, though it is also said it came from "tarwe," meaning wheat. But Irving, with that gentle humor which has accounted for so many

things in this valley of the Hudson which he so dearly loved, says that the village received its name from the fact that on sloop days the farmers of the neighborhood used to bring their produce to be shipped to New York, after which they *tarried* so long at the taverns that their wives called the place *Tarrytown*. So, for want of a better reason, we are obliged to accept Irving's.

The Indians had one of their villages here near the mouth of the Pocantico, which they called Alipconck, or the "place of elms." They sold to Frederick Philipse in 1681, and it is described in his manor grant as the Pocantico tract; but in colonial days it was known as "Philipse's." The property descended to the first manor-lord's second son Adolphus; but as Adolphus was unmarried the Upper Yonkers went at his death to his nephew Frederick, the second manor-lord. Many affrays took place between the contending armies during the Revolution, one of which is marked by a bronze tablet on the railroad station; and the locality was occupied alternately by the troops of both sides; but the ancient earthworks have disappeared under modern improvements. On Mount de la Salle the Brothers of the Christian Schools have St. Joseph's Normal College for the training of teachers for the Catholic schools; and distributed along the hills are many private schools and military academies of the first class for both sexes.

On the west side of the road, after we have passed the trolley line coming from White Plains, is a modest edifice, Christ Protestant Episcopal Church, upon the front of which is a tablet conveying the information that Washington Irving was for many years a communicant and warden of this church, and that "he fell asleep in Jesus, November 28, 1859."



CHAPTER XV

UPPER WESTCHESTER COUNTY



FEW rods beyond Christ Church we come upon a monument on the west side of the road which commemorates the patriotism of three sturdy yeomen and marks the spot of the beginning of one of the sad tragedies of the Revolution. The monument is of native marble and is surmounted by the bronze figure of a minuteman, resting upon his long rifle and looking with attention up the road as if watching the approach of a traveller. There is a bronze bas-relief on the base depicting the scene that the monument commemorates and several inscriptions on the sides. The one most interesting to visitors is that which reads:

On this Spot
the 22nd day of September, 1780, the Spy,
Major John André,
Adjutant General of the British Army, was captured by
John Paulding, David Williams and Isaac Van Wart,
all natives of this County.
History has told the rest.

On the north side of the pedestal is another inscription: "Their conduct merits our warmest esteem. They



from a photograph by F. Ahrens

MONUMENT TO THE CAPTORS OF ANDRÉ

have prevented in all probability our suffering one of the severest strokes that could have been meditated against us."—WASHINGTON.

The monument was erected by the people of Westchester County and dedicated October 7, 1853, and was

remodelled as it now stands in 1880, the statue being given by one of the patriotic citizens of Tarrytown. At these latter ceremonies ex-Governor Samuel J. Tilden presided, a prayer was offered by the Reverend Alexander Van Wart, the only surviving son of the captor, and the oration was delivered by Chauncey M. Depew.

Let us see briefly what history has told. A party of young men came down from the upper county on a scout during the night of the twenty-first, hoping to intercept some marauders on their way to the British lines. Three of them, the captors mentioned on the monument, kept on to the post-road, the rest of them remaining on the Bedford Road, which comes into Broadway a few rods above the monument. How this party on the Bedford Road failed to see and to stop André is a mystery. Upon reaching the post-road, two of the men began to play cards beside the bank of a small brook which here crosses the road, while the third took his post on the highway. The two playing cards were well screened by the bushes. They took turns acting as picket, and during the course of the morning there passed several persons whom they knew. A little before nine o'clock in the morning the tramp of a horse's feet was heard, and the two men in the bushes called to Paulding, who was on guard: "Here comes a gentleman on horseback. He has his boots on. You'd better stop him." As a key to what happened, it may be stated that Paulding had escaped from the New York prisons in the week preceding the capture, and that while there his coat had been taken by a German yager, who had given in exchange his own old green coat—the wearer was, therefore, in appearance one of the German mercenaries.

At the approach of the mounted gentleman Paulding

presented his firelock and commanded him to stop. The horseman looked Paulding over for a moment, and probably supposing from the green yager coat that this was the British picket of whose presence on the Tarrytown Road he had been apprised, said: "God bless you, my lads, I hope you belong to our party." "Which party?" was asked. Without hesitation the gentleman replied: "Why! the lower party. I am a British officer; I have been up the country on important business and do not wish to be detained"; and pulled out his gold watch and showed it to them in order to convince them of the truth of his statement. Whereupon they replied: "We do not belong to the lower party; we are Americans; you are our prisoner." His face changed somewhat at this; but after he had dismounted, he came forward with a smile and said: "God bless my soul! A man must do anything these times to get along. Here is a pass from General Arnold. I am on his business; and if you detain me, he will be angry." The pass was presented and was given to Paulding, the only one of the trio who could read. This is the pass:

HEAD QUARTERS ROBINSON'S HOUSE, Sept. 22nd, 1780.

Permit Mr. John Anderson to pass the Guards to the White Plains, or below, if He Chuses, He being on Public Buisness by my Direction.

B. ARNOLD, M. Genl.

The pass appeared to be all right, and the yeomen were in doubt as to what they should do; when one of them said: "Let us take him into the bushes and search him." Their search revealed no weapon and no money, except some Continental bills. They then made him remove his boots, and there appeared a lump in one of his silk stockings; they made him remove the stocking

and found three papers; then the other stocking was removed and three more papers were disclosed. Paulding saw that they were reports on army matters and explained to the others. "My God!" they exclaimed, "he is a spy."

They then asked him what he would give them to let him go. He made several offers of merchandise, of his horse and watch and of money up to five hundred guineas; but they refused, and ordering him to mount, said they would take him to the nearest American outpost, which was at Sands' Mills above White Plains (the present Armonk). They testified that his face became very serious, and that during the whole journey drops of perspiration streamed down his face. Asked if he would escape if he had the chance, he said he would; whereupon they said grimly: "We'll see that you don't get the chance"; and he made no attempt.

Arrived at Sands' Mills, they turned their captive and his papers over to Lieutenant-Colonel Jamieson of Sheldon's Dragoons, whose lack of judgment under the circumstances was little short of criminal; for he immediately wrote a note to Arnold apprising him of the capture of Mr. Anderson, in whose possession had been found some papers of a very compromising tendency which the writer had sent on to the Commander-in-Chief, then conferring with the French officers at Hartford, Connecticut. At the same time that the note was sent, Anderson was also sent with an escort to Arnold's headquarters. In the evening Major Tallmadge arrived from duty at the White Plains, and upon being informed of the capture and of the appearance of the prisoner, at once came to the conclusion that he was a person of some importance and that Arnold was in the scheme, whatever it was. He at last prevailed upon Jamieson to recall the prisoner,

but could not persuade his superior to recall the note to Arnold. In consequence, the note reached Arnold while he was at breakfast with Hamilton, Lafayette, and others who had preceded the Chief on his return from Hartford. This gave Arnold the news of the capture of his agent, and, excusing himself on the plea of going across the river to West Point to meet Washington, he took a hurried farewell of his wife and infant child, rode to the boat landing, entered his barge and was rowed down the river to the British sloop-of-war *Vulture*, which had brought André up the river and which was awaiting his return. Arnold used his handkerchief as a flag of truce, went on board the vessel and disclosed his identity; upon which the *Vulture* returned with all speed to New York to let Sir Henry Clinton know of the capture of his beloved aid. Though the captain of the vessel was unwilling to do so, Arnold insisted upon having his boat's crew taken prisoners, and they were taken to New York with him, Clinton setting them at liberty immediately.

The prisoner was brought back to Sands' Mills in a very dejected state of mind, as the express sent after the party had overtaken it at Peekskill, almost in sight of safety. Tallmadge now took charge of the prisoner, and with a large escort carried him farther within the county, as it was feared that an attempt at rescue would be made. While stopping in Sheldon's quarters in North Salem for orders, the captive asked for paper and ink and wrote a letter to Washington, disclosing his identity and telling how he came to be within the lines in disguise. Washington at once ordered a court-martial composed of eleven of the highest officers in the army, presided over by Nathanael Greene, who was famous for his kindness of heart. Upon André's own



From a print in the possession of Dr. Coutant

THE CAPTURE OF ANDRÉ

admissions before the court and his letter to Washington, he was adjudged a spy and amenable to the law of nations. He was hanged at Tappan on October second in the presence of the whole army, hardly a man of which



UPPER MILLS OF FREDERICK PHILIPSE (1682), NORTH TARRYTOWN

could refrain from tears at the sight of the ignominious death of the handsome, brilliant, and engaging young fellow. From the time of his capture until the time of his death, he was treated with the greatest consideration and sympathy; and unofficially an attempt was made to exchange him for Arnold, which, of course, Clinton would not and could not do.

A short distance above the monument the road descends a steep hill and crosses the Pocantico, a pretty

stream which comes down from the Westchester Hills. The post-road passed originally along the hill, crossing the Pocantico east of the church; but the building of the first Croton aqueduct between 1835 and 1840 caused the change in the road to its present location. The old bridge over which Ichabod Crane swept in his mad flight from the Headless Horseman was a short distance up the stream from the present crossing. Below the bridge are the "upper mills" of the Philipses, which date from 1682. Here, also, is an ancient stone house, part of which dates from the same period; for Philipse owned this land long before he received his manor patent and did considerable trading with the Indians, whose village of Alipconck was near the mouth of the stream. The older part of the house is of great strength, and is loop-holed for defence. The old mill-pond can still be plainly seen, though the dam is broken; but the ancient mill was fast going to decay the last time I was there. It had stood the stress of more than two centuries of use, but could not stand a half century of non-use. The first manor-lord was a carpenter by trade, and the old mill showed his ability to construct a serviceable building; the beams, studding, and rafters are all hewed timbers, put together with wooden trenails. The old trading house was known as "Philipse's castle." After the confiscation of the manor, the property was sold to Gerard G. Beekman, and later passed into the hands of Ambrose C. Kingsland, a wealthy grocer of New York and Mayor in 1851, being elected against Fernando Wood. Later, the property belonged to one of the old-time great merchants of New York, William H. Aspinwall, who was interested in the building of the railway across the Isthmus of Panama, connecting Panama and Colon, the latter of which was renamed Aspinwall in

honor of the railroad builder. The property has been in the possession of one of the great automobile companies for several years, whose extensive works are situated near the end of the point.

Opposite the Kingsland Point property and just north of the bridge, is the oldest church edifice in the State of New York, the famous Sleepy Hollow Church. When it was built is not known, though a tablet on the



PHILIPSE'S CASTLE, TARRYTOWN

side of the door states: "Erected and built by Frederic Philipse and Catherine Van Cortlandt, his wife, in 1699." The church edifice was remodelled in 1837, and it is likely that the tablet was placed at that time when the entrance and other parts of the church were changed about, and that a guess was made at the date. The original bell still hangs in the belfry and bears the date 1685, and the motto in Latin: "*Si deus pro nobis quis contra nos?*" (If God be with us, who can be against us?) The weather vane on the belfry bears the monogram "VF," standing for the Dutch spelling of the manor-

lord's name, Vredryk Flypsen. The weight of evidence is that the edifice was erected not later than the date on the bell, 1685; and that in all probability it was erected several years earlier.

This section was settled very early by the Dutch, as



SLEEPY HOLLOW CHURCH AT NORTH TARRYTOWN

is shown by the fact that one of the reasons given by De Vries to Kieft in 1641 for not making war on the Weckquaesgeeks was that there were so many settlers in this neighborhood whose cattle ran on the hills and who would be in danger in the event of war. Upon several occasions it has been necessary to remove the floor of the church for repairs, and several coffins have been exposed bearing dates between 1650 and 1660. The first known preacher was Dominie Guillaume Bartholf

who came here several times a year from Hackensack, beginning in 1697. The church records date from the same year, but they were not regularly kept until 1715. Dutch was the language used in the services and records until after the Revolution, and the first use of English in baptizing a little girl on September 25, 1785, raised a storm of indignation. The Reformed Dutch Church held, in 1899, a bi-centenary celebration here, at which Governor Theodore Roosevelt was present.

Adjoining the church edifice, is the famous Sleepy Hollow Cemetery, in which are a number of old Dutch burials; though the larger part of the cemetery is modern and owned by a company incorporated in 1849 under the name of The Tarrytown Cemetery, but changed later at the earnest solicitation of Washington Irving, before his death in 1859, to The Sleepy Hollow Cemetery. Many old tombstones can be deciphered, but the first object every visitor has in view is the grave wherein lies all that is mortal of the genial humorist and kindly gentleman who has peopled the valley of the Hudson with the children of his imagination—Washington Irving. On Battle Hill, is a monument to the Revolutionary soldiers of the vicinity, and among the graves will be found many belonging to soldiers of the Civil War.

As we leave the last resting-place of the genial writer, so loved by his own generation, there recur to our minds the delightful lines of Lowell—the only lines in *A Fable for Critics* which do not contain a sting:

What! Irving? thrice welcome, warm heart and fine brain,
You bring back the happiest spirit from Spain,
And the gravest sweet humor that ever were there
Since Cervantes met death in his gentle despair;

Nay, don't be embarrassed, nor look so beseeching,
I sha'n't run directly against my own preaching,
And, having just laughed at their Raphaels and Dantes,
Go to setting you up beside matchless Cervantes;
But allow me to speak what I honestly feel,—
To a true poet-heart add the fun of Dick Steele,
Throw in all of Addison, *minus* the chill,
With the whole of that partnership's stock and good-will,
Mix well, and while stirring, hum o'er as a spell,
The fine *old* English gentleman, simmer it well,
Sweeten just to your own private liking, then strain,
That only the finest and clearest remain,
Let it stand out of doors till a soul it receives
From the warm lazy sun loitering down through green leaves,
And you 'll find a choice nature, not wholly deserving
A name either English or Yankee,—just Irving.

Continuing our route over the post-road, we pass under the arch of the Croton aqueduct and through the residential village of Scarborough. A fine church of native marble has been erected here as a memorial of the late Elliott F. Shepard, a son-in-law of William H. Vanderbilt and proprietor of the *New York Mail and Express*, who had an extensive estate in this vicinity. To the west, on the river bank, is the little village of Sparta, whose ancient burial-ground still exists. There is a tradition that the *Vulture* mistook the gravestones for an American fortification and fired upon them on that memorable morning in September, 1780, when Arnold and André were in consultation at the house of Joshua Hett Smith on Treason Hill at Haverstraw. Sparta is also the birthplace of Rear-Admiral John L. Worden of the United States Navy, who, as a lieutenant, commanded the *Monitor* in her historic fight with the *Merrimac* in Hampton Roads—a fight that revolu-

tionized naval architecture in its relation to war vessels.

We pass into the township of Ossining, which we find to be a very hilly place. It was occupied in the early days by the Sint Sinck Indians, and the brook coming down from the high hills was known as the Sint Sinck kill. When the Dutch and the English settled in this locality after Frederick Philipse bought it in 1680, they very naturally took the name of the brook, and the place became, in time, Sing Sing. The Indian village was called by the aborigines Ossining, which, according to Schoolcraft, means "the stony place"; and that applies very well indeed to this section. Dolomite limestone of excellent quality is found here which can be used for building purposes or which can be burnt for lime. In pre-Revolutionary days, a silver mine was worked here, and in 1820, a copper mine was operated near the village of Sparta; but neither has paid, though several attempts have been made at various times to open up the old shafts.

In 1824, the Legislature authorized the construction of a prison in one of the lower Senatorial districts, and this spot was selected on account of its healthfulness, its accessibility to New York and above by the river boats, and to the limestone mentioned above. In 1825, one hundred convicts were brought here, and the work of building the prisons begun; they were ready for occupancy in 1828, and the convicts were removed from the old Newgate in Greenwich Village in New York City. All the work in and about the prison since that time has been done by the prisoners; and most of it has been excellent, as there have been among the inmates, artists, sculptors, and skilled workers in wood, stone, iron, and plaster. The prison is known officially as the Mount

Pleasant Prison, as this section used to be in that township. For two or three years past, gangs of convicts have been clearing the land for new prisons on the west side of the Hudson, which work was halted in January, 1910, by the gift of Mrs. E. H. Harriman, the widow of the great railway magnate, and of others, which makes a great State public park possible in the section which includes that chosen for the new prison. Another site, therefore, was selected.

In June, 1910, the State bought a five-hundred-acre farm at Wingdale in Putnam County, paying for it the sum of fifty thousand dollars, which was considered a bargain price. The farm was sold several months before for seventeen thousand dollars, and bought up by speculators for twenty-five thousand and sold at the above price to the State. Oh, yes; the State got a bargain!

Until 1900, the principal village of the township bore the name of Sing Sing; but the associations with the name of the prison rather hindered the growth of the village, and so its name was changed to that of the town, Ossining.

Three miles of rough, hilly roadway bring us to the Croton River, the northern boundary of the Manor of Philipsburgh. The Indian name of the stream was the Kitchawan, and the Indians of this locality were known as the Kitchiwonks. The old road crossed the Croton at a ford farther up the stream; later, came a ferry, and, in 1791, the bridge mentioned in Washington's diary. Theodore Dwight, travelling through this section on horseback in 1811, speaks of the roads as being bad, and states that he crossed the Croton near its mouth on a wretched ferry, worked by a woman, the ferry-boat being connected with each bank of the stream by a chain. A long bridge now crosses the stream not far from its

mouth; and about a mile above it is the great new dam which impounds the waters of the river for the use of the inhabitants of the city of New York, nearly forty miles away. On the northern bank of the Croton is the ancient manor-house of the Van Cortlandts, bearing the date 1681. A Van Cortlandt built it then, and a Van Cortlandt occupies it to-day.

The house was originally forty feet by thirty-three, containing eight rooms, and was built of Nyack freestone, loopholed for the use of firearms in the event of an attack by the natives. At first, it was used as a trading-post by Stephanus Van Cortlandt, the purchaser of land from the natives and the manor-lord of Van Cortlandt Manor, which comprised in Westchester County alone over eighty-seven thousand acres of land. The house commanded the ferry across the mouth of the river, a few yards away. The sloops and sailing vessels used to sail up the river beyond the manor-house until 1841, when the Croton dam, then nearing completion, was swept away by a freshet and great quantities of earth were swept down, filling up so much of the stream as to prevent navigation. Where vessels used to ride at anchor, there are now many acres of fine meadow land. Henry Hudson made his first anchorage off the mouth of the Croton after leaving Yonkers.

As times became more settled, the younger members of the Van Cortlandt family resorted to the Kitchawan for hunting, and the house was enlarged and rendered more habitable. Stephanus, the first and only manor-lord, left eleven children, among whom his property was divided in 1734, thirty-four years after his death. The survey was made by his grandson-in-law, Philip Verplanck, who uses the term "Croton's River" as if it were a common and familiar one. The river may have



VAN CORTLANDT MANOR-HOUSE, CROTON-ON-HUDSON

gotten its name from Indian sources, or from some tenant living along its banks.

In 1774, the house was in the possession of Pierre Van Cortlandt, a great-grandson of the manor-lord.

In this year, Governor Tryon came to Croton, ostensibly on a visit of courtesy, bringing with him his wife, a daughter of the Hon. John Watts, a kinsman of the Van Cortlandts, and his secretary, Colonel Fanning. The next morning Governor Tryon proposed a walk. They all proceeded to one of the highest points on the estate, and, pausing, Tryon announced to the listening Van Cortlandt the great favors that would be granted to him if he would espouse the royal cause and give his adherence to the king and the parliament. Large grants of land would be added to his estates, and Tryon hinted that a title would be bestowed. Van Cortlandt answered that he was chosen representative to the Colonial Assembly by unanimous approbation of a people who placed confidence in his integrity, to use all his ability for the good of his country as a true patriot, which line of conduct he was determined to pursue.

The discomfited Tryon returned to New York, and the patriotic Van Cortlandt, who had so much to lose in the event of British success, threw in his lot with the patriots and served them faithfully as their representative in the Provincial Congress, as President of the Council of Safety and as Lieutenant-Governor of the State from 1777 to 1795. He was also President of the State Constitutional Convention. His son Philip was an officer in the Continental army, and was on Sullivan's punitive expedition against the Six Nations after the massacres at Wyoming and Cherry Valley. He was brevetted brigadier-general for meritorious conduct in the siege of Yorktown.

It was here at the mouth of the Croton that the Americans had the westernmost of their posts to prevent the British from getting through to the upper county and to the Highlands. Washington writes under date of July 2, 1781, of "the new bridge of the Croton,



PEEKSKILL BAY

about nine miles from Peekskills." The ferry-house then became a barracks for the soldiers; and here, in the middle of the winter of 1782, they were surprised and routed by a body of the enemy which came up from below. The manor-house itself is full of relics of almost inestimable value, while the historic associations that cluster around it are possessed by few other houses in America. Franklin, Rochambeau, Lafayette, Steuben,

de Lauzan, and almost the whole roster of the American generals were welcome and honored guests; nor must we leave out Brant, the famous Mohawk chief, who visited here after the peace and during his stay told Colonel Van Cortlandt how near the latter had been to death by the chief's direction at the battle of the Chemung: "Had I taken a shot at you myself," said Thayandanagea, "instead of directing one of my warriors to do so, you would not have been here to be my host." A plate on the porch marks the spot upon which stood the great preacher, George Whitefield, when he addressed the multitude on the lawn below. Bishop Asbury also preached from the same porch. There is also a haunted room in the ancient house; and the clandestine marriage of Colonel Pierre Van Cortlandt's first wife may have furnished the basis of Mrs. Amelia Barr's *Bow of Orange Ribbon*.

Croton Landing, or Croton-on-Hudson, formerly Collaberg Landing, lies above the manor-house; its chief industry is brick-making. Between the manor-house and Croton are Teller's Point—also called Sarah's Point after Sarah, the wife of the first settler, William Teller, and Croton Point. It was abreast of this point that the *Vulture* lay at anchor and aroused the animosity of the American soldiers, who brought a cannon down from Peekskill and fired on the vessel. André was ashore having his interview with Arnold, intending to return to the *Vulture*; but the vessel was obliged to drop down stream to escape the fire of the patriots, and thus André was compelled to return to New York by land with such tragic results. To the eastward of Croton is a hill six hundred feet high, which is known as Hessian Hill, from the fact that a body of these troops was at one time encamped there, many of whom deserted their colors to join the Americans.



Photo by H. H. Pierce

ROA HOOK, STATE CAMP

The post-road passes on through Oscawanna, Crugers, and Montrose and we pass a number of fine estates. Verplanck's Point, with its brick-making industries, lies to the west. Here in colonial days was the King's Ferry, the principal line of communication across the Hudson, connecting New England with the Jerseys; so that its possession was of vast importance to the Americans. In those old days, a sign at the junction of the ferry road and Broadway read: "Dishe his de Roode toe de Kehings Farry," a curious compound of Dutch, English, and bad spelling that must have aroused the laughter of André, if it were not too dark to see it, as he rode by it in company with Joshua Hett Smith on the afternoon or evening of the twenty-first of September, 1780. The point gets its name from Philip Verplanck, who married the granddaughter of the manor-lord and came into possession of it through his wife.

Directly opposite to it on the other side of the Hudson, is Stony Point. Fortifications were erected on both sides of the river to command the ferry; and these passed back and forward several times during the course of the war. In the summer of 1782, the French army came north from Virginia and was received with great honors by the Americans at Verplanck's Point. Under the direction of Baron Steuben and with the supplies furnished by Louis XVI., the Continental army had become so well clothed, equipped, and disciplined as to call forth from the Comte de Rochambeau the remark: "You must have formed an alliance with the King of Prussia; these troops are Prussians." This was no doubtful compliment, as the troops of Frederick the Great were the best in the world.

Above Verplanck's Point, the river, after its exit from the Highlands, opens into a beautiful bay known

as Peekskill Bay. Henry Hudson thought he had reached the end of his voyage when he reached this point, but he finally discovered the passage through the mountains and continued on his way as far as the site of Albany. From the highway we get a view of the lower town of Peekskill near the landing, with its various industries, especially those in iron, which were started about a century ago. Across the river is a magnificent panorama of the Highlands.

The Kitchiwonks had a village in this vicinity which they called Sackhoes; but the white settlement that grew up about it was called Peekskill, after one of the earliest settlers, Jan Peek, through whose property flowed a highland brook, called Jan Peek's kill.

Jan Peck, or Peeck, according to the records of the court of New Amsterdam for 1653, was a tapster doing business on the Heere Straat. He appears to have been a somewhat disreputable character; for in that year he was proceeded against by Sheriff Van Tienhoven, who reports:

that he has found drinking clubs on divers nights at the house of Jan Peck with dancing and jumping and entertainment of disorderly people; also tapping during Preaching, and that there was great noise made by drunkards, especially yesterday, Sunday, in this house, so that he was obliged to remove one to jail in a cart, which was a most scandalous affair.

Peck was found guilty, though he did not appear to answer the charges; and upon the demand of the sheriff, he was fined, his license annulled and he was ordered to stop tapping until he had vindicated himself. Peck petitioned at the next meeting of the court for permission to tap; and later, at his request, both oral and written, he was allowed to resume business, "inas-

much as he is burthened with a houseful of children and more besides." The judge took into consideration that he was an old Burgher and permitted him to resume upon his promise to comport himself properly; but if he did not do so, his business was to be stopped without favor and himself punished as he deserves. At a later time,



THE SETH POMEROY MONUMENT AT CORTLANDTVILLE

after his death, his widow was banished for repeating his offences. Had it not been for his purchase of the land on the Hudson, he would probably have been unknown to fame.

During the Revolution, the main army of the colonies was kept in this neighborhood, and Washington, himself, was not long away from it, as the Highlands commanded

the valley of the Hudson and here was the principal line of communication between the colonies. If the British could get the valley of the Hudson, they had the rebellion throttled, as the colonies would be divided and could not act in concert. Many fortifications were erected by the Americans in this vicinity and above, and many were the attempts made by the British to get possession; when force failed in getting hold of this vital point, Clinton tried bribery, with results that would have been fatal to the American cause, had it not been for the patriotism of three ignorant yeomen who, as we have already seen, stopped the agent of Clinton and prevented the treason of Arnold from attaining its completion. Among the American commanders were Seth Pomeroy, Heath, McDougal, Putnam, and Arnold, the last being again followed by Heath, who commanded during the Chief's campaign in the South.

Fort Independence was located at Roa Hook, and a chain was stretched across the river at this point; it was easily broken by its own weight and the force of the tides; the later chain was farther up the river between Constitution Island and West Point. In 1885, the state bought Roa Hook for a camp of instruction for the national guard. For many years it was so used; but within the last few years, since the passage of the so-called Dick bill, the militia of the several states have become virtually a part of the regular army and unite with it in annual manoeuvres, and the state camp has not been used. It was proposed to utilize it for the site of the new prison which is to take the place of Sing Sing.

About three miles north of Peekskill, on the creek, is Cortlandtville, where the original village of Peekskill was located. It belonged to Cortlandt Manor, and the old house of the Van Cortlandts, much modernized, is

still standing. It bears a tablet, which, besides describing the services of its owner, Colonel Pierre Van Cortlandt, says: "General Washington with his aides slept in this house many nights while making Peekskill their headquarters, in 1776, 1777 and 1778." At Cortlandtville, is St. Peter's Church, a barn-like structure which dates



ST. PETER'S CHURCH AND PAULDING MONUMENT AT CORTLANDTVILLE

from 1763. Surrounding it is the ancient cemetery, in which lie two distinguished personages of the Revolution, Seth Pomeroy and John Paulding. The former was the first commander of the minute men who gathered at Cambridge upon the news of Lexington, and who was the commander of the Highland military post at the time of his death, February 15, 1777. Though his grave

is unknown, the Sons of the Revolution have erected within the cemetery a handsome monument commemorating his services both in the Revolution and in the old French war. John Paulding was one of the captors of André, and the city of New York erected a suitable monument over his grave in 1827.

Gallows Hill gets its name from the execution of Edmund Palmer, a British spy, who was hanged there on August 7, 1777. The British commander in New York was anxious to save the man and wrote to Putnam, who then commanded in the Highlands, demanding his surrender and threatening reprisals in the event of his execution. Putnam returned the following characteristic reply:

HEADQUARTERS, 7th August, 1777.

SIR: Edmund Palmer, an officer in the enemies service, was taken as a spy lurking within the American lines. He has been tried as a spy, condemned as a spy, and shall be executed as a spy; and the flag is ordered to depart immediately.

ISRAEL PUTNAM.

P.S. He has been accordingly executed.

Just east of the Van Cortlandt house the post-road turns north to enter the Highlands, where one of the ancient milestones, marked "50 miles from N. Y.," still stands. There are occasional milestones on the west side of the road as far as Wappingers Falls, but the post-road has degenerated into a mere track a short distance above, the Highland turnpike having taken its place.* Several old houses still remain in this vicinity, among them Dusenberry's Tavern, where Major André and his escort stopped while on their way to West Point.

* During the past year these old milestones have been reset and cared for by the Putnam County Historical Society.

André was within a few miles of Arnold's headquarters and safety, when the express sent by Jamieson arrived, and André was taken back to North Salem; Lieutenant Allen continued on through the Highlands with the note



DUSENBERRY'S TAVERN, CORTLANDTVILLE, N. Y.

to Arnold who was thus warned of the capture of his confederate and escaped.

Continental Village stood about a mile north of Gallows Hill, in Putnam County. Great quantities of supplies were gathered here for the American Army and barracks were erected to accommodate fifteen hundred men. In October, 1777, Governor Tryon captured and burnt Peekskill and then pushed on to Continental Village, which he destroyed so thoroughly that nothing remains of it to-day, though it was again occupied by the Americans. In the spring of 1781, about fifteen years before Jenner made his successful experiments in vaccination, all the troops and others stationed here

were inoculated with the small-pox. "All the soldiers, with the women and children," wrote the army surgeon Dr. Thacher, in his diary, "who have not had the small-pox, are now under inoculation." "Of five hundred who were inoculated here," he wrote later, "only four have died."

After the Revolution, Peekskill became the shipping point of farm produce to the city of New York, not only from the immediate vicinity, but from northwestern Connecticut and from Putnam (Dutchess) County. Six sloops were regularly engaged in the traffic to New York; and later, when the steamboats began to ply the river, the landing was removed from the mouth of Annsville Creek to the easterly side of the bay and Peekskill began to be an important commercial point; later, the railroad added to its importance.

My heart is on the hills. The shades
Of night are on my brow;
Ye pleasant haunts and quiet glades,
My soul is with you now!
I bless the star-crowned Highlands, where
My Ida's footsteps roam:
Oh, for a falcon's wing to bear
Me onward to my home!

GEORGE P. MORRIS.

A couple of miles, or less, above the centre of the present village of Peekskill, the post-road, here called Highland Avenue, plunges down a steep hill across Annsville Creek and disappears within the Highlands. These mountains are picturesque and impressive at all times; but when Nature paints them with her autumnal tints, words fail in describing their beauty, and no artist

can do full justice to their grandeur. Just before crossing Annsville Creek, we get a view of the bold promontory of Anthony's Nose, jutting out into the distant river. This is the northwestern corner of West-



ANNSVILLE CREEK—WHERE BROADWAY ENTERS THE HIGHLANDS

chester County and the highest point in it—one thousand two hundred and twenty-eight feet. It probably received its name from its resemblance to a gigantic, human nose; but Irving is on hand to tell the origin of its name.



ANTHONY'S NOSE FROM SOUTH, LOOKING FROM IONA ISLAND

He says:

And now I am going to tell a fact, which I doubt much my readers will hesitate to believe . . . It must be known then that the nose of Anthony the trumpeter was of a very lusty size, strutting boldly from his countenance like a mountain of Golconda, being sumptuously bedecked with rubies and other precious stones—the true regalia of a king of good fellows, which jolly Bacchus presents to all who bouse it heartily at the flagon. Now thus it happened, that bright and early in the morning, the good Anthony, having washed his burly visage, was leaning over the quarter railing of the galley, contemplating it in the glassy wave below. Just at this moment, the illustrious sun, breaking in all his splendor from a high bluff of the Highlands, did dart one of his most potent beams full upon the refulgent nose of the sounder of brass—the reflection of which shot straightway down hissing hot into the water and killed a mighty sturgeon that was sporting beside the vessel . . . When this astonishing miracle became known to Petrus Stuyvesant, and that he tasted of an unknown fish, he, as well may be supposed, marvelled exceedingly; and as a monument thereof, he gave the name of Anthony's Nose to a stout promontory in the neighborhood, and it has continued to be called Anthony's Nose ever since that time.

CHAPTER XVI

PUTNAM AND DUTCHESS COUNTIES



HE county of Putnam, named after the famous "Old Put" of Revolutionary days, was formerly a part of the county of Dutchess, from which it was separated in 1812. Almost all of the county is comprised within the patent granted to Adolphus Philipse on June 17, 1697.

As Adolphus was a bachelor, the property went at his death in 1749 to his nephew, Frederick Philipse, the manor-lord of Yonkers, and to his nieces, Susanna, who married Colonel Beverly Robinson, and Mary, who married Colonel Roger Morris. The property of all three was confiscated by the State of New York on account of the owners remaining loyal to the king during the Revolutionary struggle. Before being set off as a separate county, the land had been the precinct of Philipstown in Dutchess County.

As to the availability of this land for settlement and cultivation, we have the statement of Governor Hunter to the Lords of Trade in 1720:

Part of the resumed grant of Captain Evans being about twelve miles along the River, Mountainous and barren and

Incapable of Improvement or of a road and only valuable for fire-wood, no man will accept any part of it under the Quit Rent directed to be reserved unless it be contiguous to the River, where he may with ease transport the wood.

Lieutenant-Governor Colden to the Lords of Trade, February 14, 1738: "At about forty miles northward

Rombout's Patent.		Beekman's Patent.			Connecticut Line.	
Hudson River.	Major Morris' Water Lot, Four Miles Square. 1	4 Miles by 4 Miles.	4 Miles by 4 Miles.	4 Miles by 4 Miles.		Col. Robinson's Back Lot, Four Miles Square. 7
	Capt. Frederick Philipse's Water Lot, Four Miles Square. 2	4	5	6		Capt. Philipse's Back Lot, Four Miles Square. 8
	Col. Robinson's Water Lot, Four Miles Square. 3	Col. Robinson's Long Lot, 12 Miles by 4 Miles.	Major Morris' Long Lot, 12 Miles by 4 Miles.	Capt. Philipse's Long Lot, 12 Miles by 4 Miles.		Major Morris' Back Lot, Four Miles Square. 9
	Northern Line of Westchester County.					

DIVISION MAP OF THE HIGHLAND PATENT OF ADOLPHUS PHILIPSE

from the city of New York a chain of mountains about 12 miles in breadth, Commonly called the Highlands Cross the Hudson's River running many miles from the North East." He also speaks of the different varieties of trees as far as Albany, and especially of the pines.

Lieutenant-Governor De Lancey reports as follows under date of 1757: "This country abounds in Iron Oar especially in the Highlands and several works have been begun but were dropped through the mismanagement or inability of the undertakers; of these there were two Furnaces in the Manor of Cortlandt and several Bloomeries."

The Highland section through which the post-road passes is, therefore, rather sparsely settled. The trees have furnished fuel and charcoal for the great city, and the hills have furnished ore for the foundries which have been located at Cold Spring for over a century. Other minerals are believed to exist in these hills; and in colonial days several settlers claimed to have discovered silver, which they converted into coin, and, in consequence, suffered death for counterfeiting. The remoteness of this section would naturally recommend itself to those engaging in illicit pursuits.

The first entrance to the Highlands was by way of Cortlandtville, near which Colonel Beverly Robinson established the first grist-mill in 1762. The earliest known settler was John Rogers, who built a large house about two miles north of the site of Continental Village in 1730. At that time, an Indian path only, or trail, led from Westchester through the Highlands to Fishkill. Rogers kept a tavern on this path; and any traveller who arrived at the house by the middle of the afternoon was bound to stop all night, owing to the danger of travelling through the Highlands after dark and the difficulty of threading such a wild, mountainous, and solitary path. Rogers continued to keep his tavern through the French wars. It was about 1754 that Lord Loudon, the British commander, marched through the Highlands with his troops to attack the French on the frontier. For the transportation of his guns and wagons, he was obliged to construct a road; this he did by following the general direction of the old Indian path, which thus became the post-road leading through Nelsonville to Fishkill. Later, the Highland Turnpike Company built Highland Avenue through Annsville and up the heart-breaking Nelson's hill, thence diverging through

Nelsonville and to Cold Spring. It is only within a decade that a newer road through the valley to the east of the hill has been constructed and the steep hill avoided. The fact that these hills once were inhabited by wild cats is perpetuated in the name of "Cat hill," once the



Courtesy of Putnam County Historical Society

THE BEVERLY HOUSE

This house, famous as the scene of Arnold's treason, was unfortunately destroyed by fire a few years ago.

resort of that species of animals. The crotalus, or rattlesnake, also found its habitat among these solitudes.

After we have passed Nelson's hill, we may make a détour to Garrisons, which is not, strictly speaking, on the great highway; but the associations are too strong to resist. Here was the Beverly Robinson house, built

by that manorial proprietor in colonial times and occupied frequently as headquarters by the commander of West Point and its dependencies in the Highlands. It was Arnold's headquarters on that fateful day in September, 1780, when Lieutenant Allen gave him Jamieson's note apprising him of the capture of his confederate, Mr. John Anderson. Excusing himself to his guests, Lafayette, Hamilton, Knox, and others, on the plea of going to West Point to receive in person the commander-in-chief, Arnold took an agonized farewell of his wife and child, mounted his horse and rode down the steep hill, still called "Arnold's path," to Beverly dock, where he entered his barge and directed the rowers to pull down stream to the *Vulture*, on which he found safety from his enraged countrymen. The house of so many historic associations was burned down about a score of years ago.

Upon the heights are the estates of many wealthy people and persons of note, as well as several of colonial days. The views in this section are among the finest to be found upon the Hudson. West Point is directly opposite and Indian Brook adds its own beauty to the near-by scene. Its wild glen is fuller of more voracious mosquitoes than I have discovered anywhere else that I have been. I once attempted to get a photograph of it, and the five or more minutes required were among the liveliest of my life.

The magnificent buildings allowed by the National Government for the Military Academy at West Point are now approaching completion. At the time of the Spanish War in 1898, one Senator who scrutinized the list of names sent in by the President for appointment to captaincies and higher grades, remarked: "Since it requires four years of hard study and many thousands of dollars to produce a second lieutenant in the army,

and the President can make captains, majors, and colonels of his own volition, it seems to me that we would save money by doing away with West Point altogether." But the satire was too obvious. Another Senator scrutinized the list, and noticing the names of so many sons of distinguished sires, parodied Longfellow:

Sons of great men all remind us
We can make our lives sublime,
And with papa's push behind us,
We can get there every time.

Above Garrisons, the Dutch navigators called the river Martelaer's reach, corrupted by the English into Martyr's reach; the name of the island here was similarly corrupted; but it is best known to-day as Constitution Island. It is a rocky spot, connected with the mainland by low meadows, awash at high water. It was covered with fortifications by the Americans during the Revolution, and between it and West Point was stretched the great iron chain which was to prevent the passage up the river of the enemy's vessels.

Since about 1840, the island has belonged to Henry Warner, Esq., and his two daughters, Susan and Anna B. Warner. Mr. Warner obtained complete possession of the island by gradual purchase, believing that the time would come when it would be needed as an addition to West Point, and that then his fortune would be made; but the Government has never wanted it badly enough to pay a great price for it. The Warner homestead is called "Wood Crag," and is situated on the southern slope of the island, its kitchen being one of the barracks of old Fort Constitution. Both the sisters were authors; but Susan is the more famous. In 1849, under the pen-name of "Susan Wetherell," she wrote the *Wide, Wide,*

World, a novel that still sells, so I am informed by her publishers. Twenty other books followed from time to time; but the two sisters are known to several generations of West Point cadets, not by their literary works, but by their religious and social work in connection with the Bible class that they maintained for sixty years. Susan Warner is dead, but Anna is still alive at an advanced age, probably ninety. In 1909, the Government, assisted by Mrs. Russell Sage, bought the island from Miss Warner; but she has a life tenure of the property, and the Government will not take possession until after her death.

General George P. Morris, the author of *Woodman, Spare that Tree*, was well known in literary and journalistic circles during the first half of the nineteenth century. Morris lived near here at his estate which he called "Undercliff." He received his military title during the Civil War. Here his daughter Ida kept house for him, and it is she who is mentioned in his apostrophe to the Highlands.

Before entering Cold Spring, the road passes the foundries established here in 1817 for the manufacture of ordnance and projectiles for the Government. One of the founders of the West Point Foundry was Gouverneur Kemble, an associate of Irving and Paulding in the revels at Cockloft Hall. During the Civil War, all the Parrott guns and projectiles were made here, and the place was a busy one. But cast-iron guns and projectiles passed out of use, and the foundry lay idle for many years. The foundry was the principal industry of Cold Spring.

The village received its odd name, so it is said, from the tradition that upon one occasion, while Washington was riding through this section, he stopped at a spring for a drink of water. While partaking of it, he remarked:

"What a cold spring!" So Cold Spring it has been ever since. The scenery of the river here is magnificent. Opposite are the precipitous and rocky sides of Breakneck and Cro' Nest, and on this side are Bull Head and other mountains. In the northern distance, we get a glimpse into the opening of Newburgh Bay. The road along the shore passes around the end of the Fishkill Mountains to Fishkill Landing, about five miles from Fishkill and the post-road.

The Indians who occupied the Highlands were the Wicopees, a tribe of the Waranoaks, who occupied the section above. The pass through the mountains near Fishkill is known as the Wicopee pass, and it was well fortified during the Revolution to prevent the British from getting above. It was on the heights overlooking this pass that Harvey Birch, the hero of Cooper's *Spy*, had his mysterious interview with Washington after the former's escape from his threatened execution at Fishkill.

When the proprietary of New York was divided up into counties on November 1, 1683, two of them were named in honor of the lord-proprietor and his wife—Duke's, comprising Nantucket, Martha's Vineyard, and Maine, afterwards surrendered to Massachusetts, and Dutchess on the east bank of the Hudson. When Dr. Johnson issued his *Dictionary of the English Language* in 1757, he introduced some simplified spelling and dropped the "t" in Dutchess, notwithstanding which, the State of New York has clung to the old spelling, probably from sentiment, and the county is legally and officially known as Dutchess. When it was formed in 1683, on account of the paucity of inhabitants, it was provisionally attached to Ulster County until 1713. Its boundaries were "from the north bounds of the



From an old print

UNDERCLIFF—THE HOME OF THE POET MORRIS

county of Westchester on the south side of the Highlands, along the east side as far as Roelof Jansen's Kill and east into the woods twenty miles." It has suffered two curtailments: Livingston's Manor was taken from its northern part in 1717, and Putnam County from its southern in 1812.

It must be understood that before any grants were



TRINITY EPISCOPAL CHURCH, ERECTED 1769, AT FISHKILL

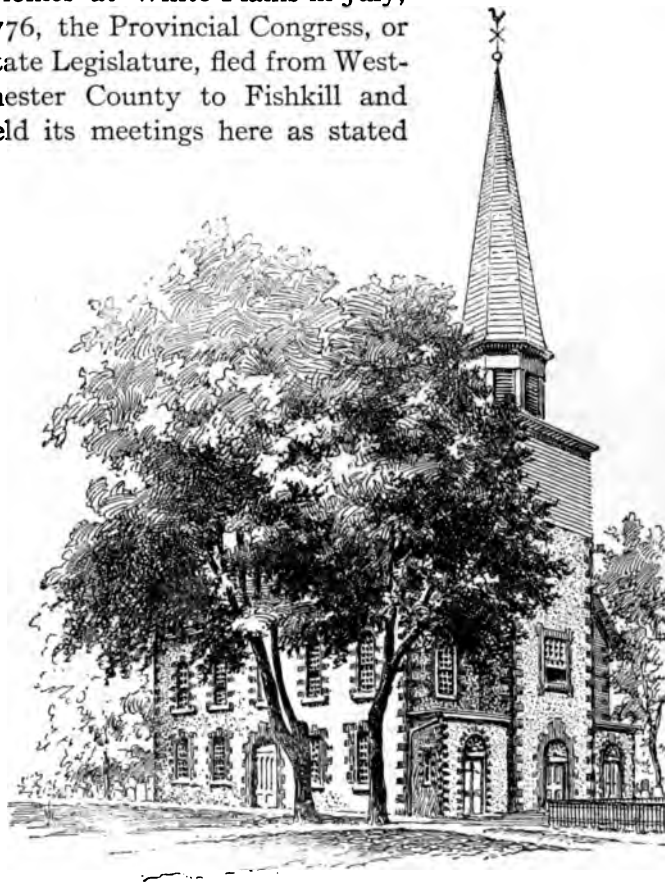
made by the English governors, the patentees had to show that they had purchased from the Indian proprietors. The first recorded patent is that of Francis Rombout, at one time mayor of New York, under date of October 17, 1685. His grant included the two Fishkills and extended along the river and inland for several miles. Associated with him in the Indian purchase were Gulian Verplanck and Jacobus Kip, the former of whom died before Governor Dongan gave the patent. Stephanus Van Cortlandt as representative of the Ver-

planck children then came in with Rombout and Kip. The grant covered over eighty-five thousand acres of land.

The Highlands were called by the Indians of this section, the Waranoaks, the Matteawan Mountains. The meaning of the name has been given as "the place of furs," referring to the beavers who were plentiful along the creek, and also as being derived from *metai*, a magician, or medicine-man, and *wian*, a skin; hence, "the place of enchanted skins." The stream was called *Vis kill* (Fish creek), corrupted by the English into Fishkill. The creek empties into one of the reaches of the Hudson, called by the Dutch *Crom Elboge*, or Crooked Elbow, and, in consequence, the creek is sometimes called Crom Elbow, a combination of Dutch and English. The earliest Dutch settler established himself here before 1690. Below the Highlands, the settlers were principally English; above them, they were Dutch, German, and Huguenot. On account of the almost impassible barrier of the Highlands, the post-road makes a wide detour inland, so that when it debouches from the mountains near Fishkill village, it is over five miles away from the river and does not return to it until it reaches Poughkeepsie.

The land in this locality was not considered to be of the best quality, yet settlers came in gradually, and about 1725 the Dutch church at Fishkill was erected. It was square in shape and built of stone, with the roof sloping up from all sides to a cupola containing a bell; in the upper story were port-holes for the use of firearms in case of attack by the natives. A tablet on the church building states: "Organized 1716, Building erected 1761, Provincial Congress met here 1776, Used as a military prison during the Revolution, Enlarged 1786, Interior

remodeled 1806, 1820, 1854, 1882." After proclaiming the State of New York and the independence of the colonies at White Plains in July, 1776, the Provincial Congress, or State Legislature, fled from Westchester County to Fishkill and held its meetings here as stated



THE FIRST REFORMED DUTCH CHURCH, FISHKILL

on the tablet. The English church, called Trinity, was not built until about 1760—it was the first edifice of the Established Church erected north of the Highlands.

On account of the activity of the British after the

campaign of 1776 in Westchester County, it became necessary to establish the magazines and storehouses in a safer place, and Fishkill was chosen as being on one of the main lines of communication between New England and the Hudson. The village became a place of considerable military importance with its factories and hospitals. It is stated in the *History of Dutchess County*



THE OLD GRIST-MILL AT BRINCKERHOFF NEAR FISHKILL, OVER ONE HUNDRED AND THIRTY YEARS OLD. ERECTED BY SOLDIERS DURING THE REVOLUTION AND STILL IN USE

that, in consequence, there are probably more Revolutionary dead buried at Fishkill than in any other place in the State. One of the swords of Washington in the National Museum at the seat of the Federal Government bears the name of Blacksmith Bailey of Fishkill, where it was forged. Joshua Hett Smith, the host of Arnold and André, in whose house at Haverstraw they finished their conference and where André changed from his

regimentals into civilian garb, was arrested at Fishkill. His trial for treason, of which he was acquitted, furnishes us with the historic facts in regard to the capture and the conspiracy.

The Marquis de Chastellux, a French general officer, passed through this section in November, 1780. He comments on the American inns, which were usually kept by captains or colonels of militia, they being elected to those positions as being the most popular or best-known men in the community. The inns were clean and the inn-keepers courteous; but the buildings often had many broken panes of glass, and the guests had difficulty in patching them up to keep out the winter air. Fishkill was a place of magazines for the Americans as it was on the main road from Litchfield, Connecticut, and the Hudson and was a safe place from being situated north of the Highlands. He observed a number of Tory prisoners who had been captured in the fighting in the Mohawk Valley. The noble marquis remarks that these scoundrels should have been hanged, but that the Americans were afraid of reprisals on the part of the British who held a number of American prisoners. He pushed on to visit General Heath at West Point, and some four or five miles from Fishkill in the Highlands he observed a camp of invalids, all apparently in very good health. He remarks that in the American army every soldier unfit for military duty was termed an invalid; in this case "these had been sent here because their clothes were truly invalids." They were not covered even with rags, but they displayed good courage and patience and their arms were well-kept and in good order. A few miles farther on he caught his first glimpse of the Hudson which he describes as the most magnificent and beautiful scene he had ever witnessed in all his travels.

When the first Constitution of the State was adopted in 1777, the only press that could be found where it could be printed was in Fishkill. The press belonged to Samuel Loudon, the publisher of the *New York Packet and American Advertiser*, who had left the city of New York previous to the British occupation and who first published his paper in Fishkill on the first of October, 1776—after the war he returned to New York.



THE WHARTON HOUSE, FISHKILL

Besides the two church edifices already mentioned, there are several ancient structures in and near Fishkill, among which is the Wharton house south of the village, from which Harvey Birch made his escape in the manner described in *The Spy*. Another interesting house dating from colonial times is that called the Teller house at Matteawan. It was built by Roger Brett in 1710, and was long occupied by his widow, Madame Brett, a famous colonial dame of that locality. A third house of still

more historic interest is situated about two miles north of Fishkill Landing near the river; this is the Verplanck House in which Baron Steuben had his headquarters. During the Revolution, many detachments of the army were quartered in this vicinity; and in 1783, while waiting for the signing of the treaty of peace, there were numerous cantonments of the Americans on this side of the river as well as at Newburgh. As the officers were soon to



THE TELLER HOUSE, MATTEAWAN

separate and break the ties of comradeship that had bound them together for so many years, it was proposed that they form a patriotic and beneficent society to keep alive the memories of the war. They chose as their exemplar the Roman patriot Cincinnatus, who, having saved Rome at the head of the army, returned to his farm and his ordinary avocations. The meetings of the officers were held at Steuben's quarters, and the Order of the Cincinnati was the result, September 1, 1783. It was the ancestral home of Gulian C. Verplanck, the author and contemporary of Irving who passed his last days in the old, historic mansion.



The post-road leaves Fishkill village at the old Dutch Church by way of Wappingers Falls to Poughkeepsie. The former gets its name from the Wappinger, or Wappingi, tribe of Indians who occupied this section, and the creek was called by them, Wahamanessing.



WAPPINGERS FALLS

These Indians were drawn into the war which their kindred Mohicans waged with Kieft in 1643-1645. This locality was claimed by the Massachusetts colonies and in furtherance of their claims, they sent an expedition by water in 1659 which sailed up the Hudson, notwithstanding Stuyvesant's protests, and selected a spot for a settlement near the mouth of Wappingers Creek. Stuyvesant at once wrote to the Amsterdam authorities to send out colonists to occupy the same section and thus prevent the encroachments of the English. In 1660,

the Amsterdam chamber approved the governor's plan and directed him to buy the lands from the Indians and thus to check the projected enterprise of the English. In 1663, occurred the second war with the Esopus Indians; but the Wappingers showed themselves friendly to the Dutch. After the conclusion of peace in 1664 an investigation showed that the Wappingers had been tampered with by the Connecticut people but had



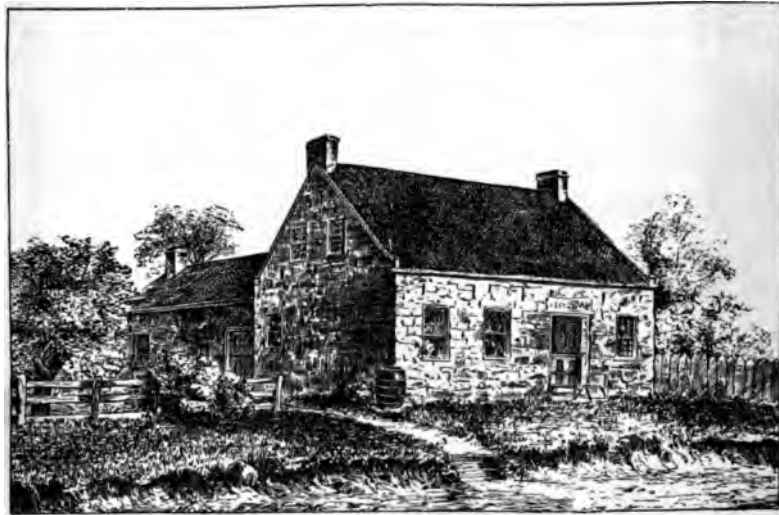
COLLEGE HILL, POUGHKEEPSIE

refused to act against the Dutch and to continue the war.

"Locust Grove," the former estate of S. F. B. Morse, the artist, but better known as the inventor of the electric telegraph, was situated about a mile south of Poughkeepsie.

The first patent to this land, also including Poughkeepsie, was made to Peter Schuyler by Governor Dongan, June 2, 1688. On the shore of the Hudson was a sheltered

inlet where the Indians kept their canoes. This was called by them Apokeepsing, or Apo-keep-sinck meaning "a safe harbor." From this Indian name we get Poughkeepsie which is the accepted way of spelling it, though Lossing gives forty-two different ways in which the name appears on ancient maps and records. The "safe har-



THE VAN KLEECK HOUSE

bor" lay between two cliffs, the northern one called by the Dutch *Slange Klippe*, meaning Adder Cliff, from the number of venomous serpents found there, and the southern one named the Call Rock, from the fact that the settlers used to call to the passing vessels from this spot when they desired the vessels to stop—this is immediately south of the landing-place of the Albany day boat. Between these two bluffs, forming the sheltered cove of the Indians, leaped the brook Winnakee, called by the Dutch the Fall Kill. There is a so-called legend of a pair of Indian lovers and the rescue of the maiden

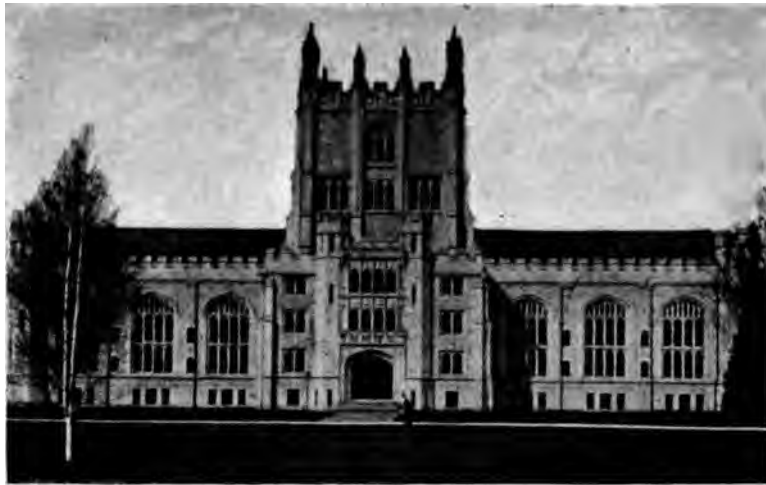
from her captors and of her being hidden in the mouth of the Winnakee, which thus became a *safe harbor* for her—but, like nine-tenths of the so-called Indian legends, I am afraid it will not hold water.

The log-houses of the first Dutch settlers made their appearance about 1690, and the first stone house was built by Baltus Van Kleeck in 1702. The first church in Dutchess County was built here about 1720. It was a square, stone edifice, and, like all the early churches, of startling ugliness. It, as well as the houses, was loopholed for muskets in case of Indian attack. The Fall Kill furnished power, and its banks became lined with mills, developing later into factories.

Poughkeepsie became the county-seat shortly after the formation of the counties, and the court-house was ordered to be built in 1715; but it was not completed until 1746, though courts were held here in 1734. The court-house was burnt in 1785, but was rebuilt soon after at a cost of twelve thousand dollars; but it was again destroyed by fire, September 25, 1808. By legislative act, March 7, 1788, the State was divided anew into counties, and these into townships. Poughkeepsie became a town on that date, an incorporated village, March 27, 1797, and a city, March 28, 1854.

While there was no fighting there of record during the Revolution, the city is of the greatest interest in the history of the State from a political standpoint. The legislature met at Van Kleeck's upon call of Governor Clinton in January, 1778, after Burgoyne's invasion, in order to complete the State government in accordance with the State constitution; and it was while this legislature was in session that the State gave its assent to the Articles of Confederation of the colonies. The legislature was also in session here when the news arrived

on October 29, 1781, that Yorktown was taken and that Cornwallis had surrendered, and gave expression to its joy over the prospect of peace. In 1734, John Holt established the *New York Journal*; but in 1776 it was removed to Poughkeepsie in consequence of the British occupation, going back to New York in November,



THOMPSON MEMORIAL LIBRARY, VASSAR COLLEGE, POUGHKEEPSIE

1783, upon the evacuation of the city and the return of peace.

But the most important political event which occurs in the history of the State took place in the rebuilt courthouse in 1788. Upon June seventeenth of that year, sixty-one delegates, representing twelve counties, met in solemn conclave to consider the ratification of the Constitution of the United States. The opposition, led by George Clinton, John Lansing, Melancthon Smith, William Harper, and Robert Yates, was in the majority; and could a vote have been taken at once, the Constitu-

tion would have been rejected by an overwhelming vote. But it was not until July twenty-sixth that a vote was taken, and then the convention ratified by a majority of three in a vote of fifty-seven. This result was due to Chancellor Livingston, John Jay, and, especially, to Alexander Hamilton, whose matchless eloquence



MAIN BUILDING—VASSAR COLLEGE

and unanswerable logic and argument converted his opponents and led to the happy result, so momentous to the cause of constitutional government.

During the Revolution, vessels for the navy were built at Poughkeepsie, as ship-building was one of the important industries of the place. The *Congress* and *Montgomery* frigates were two of the vessels constructed in 1776; but those built were principally for river use, as the presence of the British fleet in New York harbor during the entire war from 1776 to 1783 prevented the

American vessels from getting to sea. In 1824, Lafayette, while on his visit to the United States, visited Poughkeepsie and was received with great honor.

The city has been famous for many years for its institutions of learning for both sexes, and several business colleges and schools of more than local reputation are located here. In 1861 Matthew Vassar, a wealthy brewer of the city, established Vassar College, one of the pioneer institutions of the world for the higher education of women. The Vassar family have added to the benefactions of the founder, as have other wealthy persons, so that the work of the college is known throughout the civilized world. The Hudson is spanned by the famous Poughkeepsie bridge, the only place between New York and Albany where the river is so crossed. The bridge is of the cantilever construction, though only the river spans are true cantilevers. The bridge has five spans and is 6767 feet long, having a height of 212 feet and a clearance of 165 feet in the middle arches. It was completed in 1889 at a cost of about two millions of dollars, and is used by the Poughkeepsie and Eastern railway, principally for carrying coal from Pennsylvania to eastern points.

It has been the custom for several years to hold in the river at Poughkeepsie the great intercollegiate rowing matches; and upon such occasions many thousands of spectators line both sides of the river wherever there is a point of vantage. A magnificent view of the distant Catskills and of the tree-embowered city may be obtained from College Hill Park on the east of the city at an elevation of five hundred feet.

Benson J. Lossing, who did so much to make history popular by his *Pictorial Field Book of the Revolution*, was a resident of Poughkeepsie. Some of his other works



THE CANTILEVER BRIDGE OVER THE HUDSON RIVER, AT POUGHKEEPSIE

were *The Hudson, from the Wilderness to the Sea*, a delightful work covering a great deal of the ground of this monograph, a *History of the City of New York* and a *Field Book of the War of 1812*. His "Field Books" are profusely illustrated with sketches made by himself of many famous places and houses, long since demolished or crumbled into dust. What adds to the interest of his books is the fact that he came in personal contact in his journeyings with many veritable sons and daughters of the Revolution and occasionally with aged participants. His *Field Book of the Revolution* is a mine of information upon almost all subjects connected with American Colonial and Revolutionary history, though not always accurate.

North of Poughkeepsie the post-road leads through Hyde Park, Staatsburg, Rhinebeck, Red Hook, and Upper Red Hook, all of which are some distance from the river, though each has its so-called "landing." The presence of so many "landings" along the river gives evidence of the importance in days gone by of the river traffic, which has not altogether lost its value on account of railroad competition. The road for the greater part of the distance between these places is shaded by fine trees and is lined by the country estates of many of our wealthiest citizens; and among them are estates which formerly belonged to some of the famous literary, diplomatic, and military men of the first half of the nineteenth century. Dr. Hosack, the famous botanist, had his country place at Hyde Park, where he was frequently visited by Philip Hone, as the latter mentions in his diary.

James Kirke Paulding, the intimate friend of Irving and his associate in the *Salmagundi* papers, filled various public positions, including that of Secretary of the Navy

during Van Buren's Administration. He lived at Hyde Park during the last years of his life at his seat called "Placentia," and died an octogenarian in 1860.

Hyde Park was included in the grant made to Peter Fauconier, Colonel Caleb Heathcote, and seven others—whence the name, the "Nine Partners' Grant," by which it was at first known—on May 27, 1697. Fauconier was secretary to Edward Hyde, Lord Cornbury, governor of the province, and named the tract Hyde Park in compliment to his worthless master. Staatsburg was first known as Pawling's purchase, from the first owner, who died in 1695. In 1701, his heirs sold the property to Dr. Samuel Staats, who, after a long residence in India, returned to New York with his wife, a "begum," or East Indian princess.* Another of the earlier settlers was Jacobus Stoutenburgh, from whom one historian says the name of Staatsburg was derived by natural contraction; but the derivation from Staats is more likely.

Among the passengers on the ship bringing Peter Stuyvesant to New Amsterdam, was a German named William Beckman, who came from the valley of the Rhine. His son, Colonel Henry Beckman, became possessed of the land north of Staatsburg by a grant made to him by Queen Anne, June 17, 1703. The settlers he induced to occupy his grant were principally Germans from the Rhine country, and out of the first syllable of his name and from the name of their beloved river in Germany was formed the name Rhinebeck. The patentee's name was also spelled Beekman, and it is by this spelling that it is best known. The leather district of New York City known as "The Swamp" was originally

* See *The Begum's Daughter*, a novel of the time of Leisler, by Edwin Lassetter Bynner, 1890.

Beekman's Swamp, out of which Beekman Street leads to Park Row.

The first recorded purchase of this section was made by Jacobus and Hendrick Kip from three Esopus Indians in 1688; and on June 2, 1688, Governor Thomas Dongan gave a confirmatory patent of the Kipsburgh Manor to Roosa, Elting, and the two Kips. Hendrick Kip built his home upon his south lot near the Hudson in 1700; it afterwards came into the possession of Beekman, and has been known as the Beekman house and as "Heermance Place." It is still standing and gives many signs of its antiquity. As Beekman's grant of 1703 covered the same territory as the Kip patent, the colonel must have made some composition with the previous patentees. Beekman's grant bordered the Hudson from Staatsburg to Red Hook.

Above the Beekman grant was another grant given to Peter Schuyler, called the Magdalen Island Purchase. There were Dutch settlers in here before 1690; and in the following decade others came in and bought property both in Rhinebeck and in Red Hook; for we find that on December 16, 1737, there was formed the Rhinebeck Precinct of Dutchess County, which included "The land purchased from the Widow Pawling and her children by Dr. Samuel Staats; all the land granted to Adrien, Roosa, and Cotbe; the land patented by Henry Beekman, and the land granted to Colonel Peter Schuyler, called the Magdalen Island Purchase."

The two towns of Rhinebeck and Red Hook were, therefore, closely joined in early days; though the latter was not settled by the Dutch until between 1713 and 1727. Germans, Palatines, and Huguenots helped to settle and develop both towns; and the names of the inhabitants of these towns to-day show their descent

from the original white occupiers of the land. Red Hook received its name from the Dutch, who called it *Rooede Hoeck* from a marsh near Tivoli, which, when first seen by the newcomers, was covered with ripe cranberries. The aborigines occupying Rhinebeck Precinct were called Sepescoots; and when the very earliest whites came to this locality, there were still visible at Upper Red Hook the remains of the Indian warriors who had fallen in a great battle between the Wappingers and their hereditary enemies, the Iroquois.

Between Rhinebeck and Red Hook is "Rokeby," a magnificent estate belonging to one of the Astor family. It was originally a part of the immense Livingston domain and came into the possession of General John Armstrong, an officer in the Revolution and a member of Gates's staff, whose wife was a sister of Chancellor Livingston. Armstrong was a major at the close of the War for Independence, and was the author of the inflammatory addresses privately circulated among the officers in the cantonments at Newburgh in 1783. Congress had been unable for a long time to pay the soldiers of the Continental army who were now about to be disbanded and sent to their homes in poverty. These addresses, instigated, so it is said, by General Gates, were intended to stir up the Congress to take some action in regard to the claims of the soldiers rather than to excite the army to take matters into their own hands and overthrow the civil authority. The wisdom of Washington prevented any bad results from following these ill-considered addresses; and Armstrong was acquitted of all evil intentions, and his act was declared to have been inspired by patriotism. Armstrong later became United States Senator, Minister to France, brigadier-general in the army and Secretary of War during the second war with Great Britain. The

General Armstrong, privateer, whose famous fight with the ships of the British fleet at Fayal in the Azores prevented the co-operation of the British vessels with Pakenham at the attack upon Jackson at New Orleans in 1815, was named after him. He was the author of a *Life* of his brother-in-law, General Montgomery, a *Life of General Wayne*, and *Historical Notices of the War of 1812*. His daughter married William B. Astor, and thus "Rokeby" came into possession of the Astors.

At Red Hook, we come again across our old friend Martin Krigier, this time far removed from his tavern opposite the Bowling Green. During the second Esopus War of 1663, he was a captain in command of a company of soldiers campaigning in this vicinity and on the west side of the Hudson. Some of the Esopus Indians took refuge on the east side, and the doughty captain prevailed upon some friendly Indians to guide him and his command to the hiding-place of the refugees. Here he partially surprised them and killed several.

The post-road still continues to be lined with elegant estates; and as we get farther north, we find that many of them belonged to persons who were closely allied to the Livingston family, either by blood or marriage. One of the most famous of these estates of the present is "Ellerslie," belonging to ex-Governor and ex-Vice-President Levi P. Morton, the banker. Mr. Morton has here on his country-place the most famous herd of Guernsey cattle in this country, if not in the world. The values of some of them are almost unbelievable, and the output as quoted of individual cows in milk, cream and butter sounds fabulous.

Another interesting estate, like "Ellerslie," near the river, is "Montgomery Place," built by the widow of General Montgomery, in which she passed fifty years of

childless widowhood. She was born Janet Livingston, a sister of the Chancellor, and married Montgomery a few years before the Revolution. She accompanied him as far as the Schuyler mansion near Saratoga when he departed on the Canadian expedition. When he bade his wife good-bye, he said: "You will never have to blush for your Montgomery." In 1818, the State of New York caused his remains to be brought from Quebec for burial at St. Paul's, New York. The body was brought down the Hudson on the steamer *Richmond* with all the honors that could be paid to the dead hero. Mrs. Montgomery had been notified as to the time the vessel would pass her property, and she was left alone upon the porch while the funeral *cortège* passed. The vessel slowed down, while the band played a dirge and the escort presented arms. When her attendants went to her, they found Mrs. Montgomery in a swoon upon the floor. What must have been her feelings as the dead lover of her youth was borne past, and she thought of the parting forty-two years before!

CHAPTER XVII

COLUMBIA AND RENSSELAER COUNTIES



LBANY County was one of the original counties of the province, formed November 1, 1683. It extended north of Dutchess County on the east side of the Hudson River to the northern bounds of the proprietary, and included about everything on the west side of the river above Ulster County. A number of counties have been formed out of the original area, and among those on the east side of the Hudson are Columbia and Rensselaer Counties, the former, April 4, 1786, and the latter, February 7, 1791.

North of the Wappinger Indians, above Red Hook, were the tribe of the Mohican, or Mohegan, Indians, occupying all of these two counties. The ancient seat of their council fire was at Schodac, a corruption of the Mohican *Esquatak*, "the fire-place of the nation." They also had a fortified village, or castle, at Greenbush, opposite Albany, for protection from the Mohawks. Mention has already been made of the Indian battlefield at Upper Red Hook. This battle occurred in 1628, at which time the Mohicans were driven from their ancestral home, and under their chief Uncas sought

refuge among the Pequods in Connecticut. The principal stronghold of Uncas was at Norwich, where, during a war with the Narragansetts he captured their chief Miantonomah by a ruse. Miantonomah was afterwards put to death by Uncas under orders from the English after a semblance of a trial. The Mohicans gradually dwindled in numbers and were deprived of their lands; so that at the time of the Revolution they occupied lands in the valley of the Housatonic and were called the Stockbridge Indians. They were allies of the patriots during the war, probably because their ancient enemies, the Mohawks, were on the side of the British. A number of them, including their chief Nimham, were killed in September, 1778, in a battle with the British partisans in the northeast corner of Van Cortlandt Park on the "Indian Field," which has been marked by an appropriate cairn and tablet erected by Bronx Chapter of the Daughters of the American Revolution.

From Rhinebeck, the post-road passes into the town of Clermont in Columbia County and we come upon the property of the Livingston family, one of the most famous in the annals of the State. Its founder was Robert Livingston, the son of a Scotch clergyman, who was obliged for political reasons to seek refuge in Holland. Here Robert acquired a knowledge of the Dutch language as well as of the French. He came to New York from Holland in 1674 and appeared at Albany, where he became clerk of Indian affairs. In 1679, he married Alida Schuyler, the widow of one of the Van Rensselaers. He became a friend of Governor Dongan, and when that governor granted the charter to the city of Albany in 1686, Livingston became town clerk. He was not on friendly terms with Leisler, and, with Bayard, was chiefly instrumental in bringing about the executions of Leisler

and his son-in-law Milborne. The latter saw Livingston in the crowd at his execution and called to him from the scaffold: "You have caused my death, but for this I will implead you before the bar of God."

Governor Fletcher was not friendly to Livingston, and the latter went to England, where he ingratiated himself with those in power and came back with life appointments to several lucrative positions—these Fletcher declined to notice, as well as Livingston's claims for subsistence furnished the troops during the wars with the French. With Lord Bellomont, Livingston was more successful. Piracy was then rampant upon the ocean, and Livingston proposed to the governor that he and others would fit out a vessel and capture and destroy the pirates and sell the captured cargoes for the benefit of those fitting out the vessel. Bellomont approved the scheme and became one of the associates, another being Frederick Philipse; and it was whispered that the king was interested in the enterprise. Livingston recommended Captain William Kidd as the commander, and the vessel was fitted out and started on the famous cruise which brought Kidd to the gallows and disgrace to his backers.

To be a great land-owner was the supreme passion and ambition of Livingston's life. For this purpose he sought office, saved his money, went to England, changed his politics to please Bellomont, and attached himself to those who would give him the best opportunities to advance his purpose. The fortune of his wife assisted him in carrying out his desire. He had been in the country but five years when he applied to Governor Andros for permission to buy from the Indians a tract of land on Roelof Jansen's kill on the east side of the Hudson, then in the possession of a few remaining Indians

and squaws. The purchase of two thousand acres was consummated July 12, 1683, and confirmed by the Dongan patent of November 4, 1684. A second petition was made, June 3, 1685, to buy a tract of six hundred acres called by the natives "Potthoke," or "Potkoke," now Claverack. These two tracts of very indefinite metes and bounds were formed into a manor, and other purchases followed from time to time. The first manor-house of the Livingstons, erected in 1699, stood on the bank of the Hudson in the present township of Livingston, Dutchess County, just north of where Roelof Jansen's kill enters the river. For the first few years, by reason of the wars with the French, settlement on the manor was slow. In 1702, Bellomont writes: "I am told Livingston has on his great grant of sixteen miles long and twenty-four broad but four or five cottages occupied by men too poor to be farmers, but who are his vassals."

After the close of the war, Livingston built saw- and grist-mills and a new manor-house near the river and induced settlers to come to his manor. Louis XIV. was busy about this time in laying waste the Palatinate, and the poor Protestants fled from their desolated country to England, where they aroused the sympathy and secured the assistance of Queen Anne and others, and some three thousand of them were sent to America. Governor Hunter writes to the Lords of Trade in 1710: "I have now settled the Palatines upon good land upon both sides of Hudson's River, about one hundred miles up adjacent to the Pines; I have planted them in five villages, three on the east side of the River upon six thousand acres of Mr. Livingston about two miles from Roelof Jansen's kill." The settlements on the two banks of the river were known respectively as the East Camp

and the West Camp; and Hunter paid Livingston four hundred pounds for the land taken.

These poor expatriates had to be housed and fed at the public expense, and Livingston received the contract to supply them with bread and beer. There were some suggestions of sharp practice (graft) on his part, but he succeeded in satisfying the governor of the honesty of his dealings. The Palatines had expected to be located on farms of their own, but instead, they were located on lands contiguous to the "Pines" mentioned in the governor's letter, from which they were expected to get pitch, tar, and turpentine for the use of the queen's navy. Their dissatisfaction showed itself in riotous actions so that troops had to be called in to suppress their turbulence. After two years they were left to shift for themselves as the burden on the public for their support was becoming too heavy. Many of them departed to adjoining manors, to the West Camp across the river, to the valley of the Mohawk (General Herkimer, the hero of Oriskany, was descended from them, and Palatine Bridge marks their settlement), and to Pennsylvania to join others of their countrymen who had settled there and whose descendants to-day are known as "Pennsylvania Dutch."

The bounds of Livingston's property, based upon the Indian nomenclature, were in dispute and very indefinite. To remedy this Livingston had his manor surveyed by the surveyor-general of the province in 1714. A map was made showing the metes and bounds and the distances were carefully noted; and the computation gives 162,240 acres, so that either the Indians were very generous in their acreage or the purchaser was very grasping in his measurements—more probably the latter. The confirmatory patent passed the seals October 1, 1715; it

secured Livingston's title and gave him representation in the provincial assembly. No road appears traversing the manor from north to south, but we must believe that the Indian trail existed. One of Livingston's disputes was with Hendrick Van Rensselaer, who owned the Clermont patent and who claimed that the manor encroached upon his land. Livingston yielded, though some portion of Clermont must have returned to his possession as we shall see presently. History describes the manor-lord as a canny Scot, always looking for the main chance; a complaisant politician, willing to set his sails to every favoring wind, greedy and avaricious of land and money to the last.

The first manor-lord left by his will thirteen thousand acres in Clermont to his second son Robert, and all the residue of his estate to his eldest son Philip, a New York merchant, who spent his summers on his manor; he, in turn, was succeeded by his son Robert, the third manor-lord. Massachusetts claimed under its charter as far as the Pacific Ocean, and about 1750, disputes arose with the Livingstons in regard to the eastern boundary of their patent; riots followed, and people of each province were jailed by the other for trespass, so that a mild sort of war ensued between the two disputants. The dispute in regard to the boundary extended along the whole line of the provinces, ending in the addition to all the New York counties on the line of a tract of land known from its shape as the Oblong.

In 1795, an attempt was made by the Livingston tenants to destroy the manor-lord's titles and to establish the fact that the land belonged to the State, in accordance with certain principles established as a result of the Revolution—but the attempt was unsuccessful. The pernicious practice of leasing the farms to the tenants

instead of selling them in fee resulted in numerous disputes and in the failure of the tenants to pay their rents; so that it became necessary to employ the aid of the sheriff and, finally, of the military force of the State to collect the rents and to put down the riots and disturbances that resulted. These Anti-Rent wars, as they were called, culminated about 1844 upon the Livingston and Rensselaer manors; and upon a final appeal to the legislature, the contention of the tenants was upheld and the manor-lords lost their property. The decision was probably unjust, but the politician of that era gained power and influence by adopting the popular side.*

Dirck Wessel Ten Broeck, mayor of Albany, bought twelve hundred acres in Clermont from Livingston on October 26, 1694, and settled the land. There were already three squatters near Roelof Jansen's kill. Ten Broeck's son of the same name came to Clermont about 1704-6, after retiring from business in Albany, and remained until his death in 1717.

Philip Livingston, the second manor-lord, had five sons: Robert, the third manor-lord; Philip Van Brugh, a merchant of New York, whose house we passed at Dobbs Ferry; John, a Tory; Philip, the signer of the Declaration of Independence, and William, the war governor of New Jersey. Robert Livingston, the son of the first manor-lord, who inherited the thirteen thousand acres, built an elegant mansion in 1730, which he called Clermont, and lived upon his land. His son,

* See Cooper's three novels covering this matter, which should be read in the following order; *Satanstoe*, *Chainbearer*, and *The Redskins*. The first is the best description of colonial life I have ever read, the second is not so good, and the last, which covers the anti-rent period, I have never been able to finish.

Columbia and Rensselaer Counties 443

Robert R., was a judge of the supreme court of the province, and the judge's son, Robert R., junior, was a member of the Continental Congress, being one of the Committee of Five to draft the Declaration, minister of foreign affairs, chancellor of the State of New York, and minister to France. At the time of his marriage, the



BUILT BY WILLIAM K. LUDLOW, 1786, NOW IN POSSESSION OF HIS GREAT-GRANDSON, R. FULTON LUDLOW, CLAVERACK, N. Y.

Chancellor, as he is best known, did not like to disturb his widowed mother at her mansion and so built a smaller house close by. In 1777, during Burgoyne's invasion from the north, General Vaughan with three thousand British troops tried to push on to Albany from the south and to create a diversion in favor of Burgoyne. He ascended the river as far as Kingston, which he burned, and some of his troops crossed to the east side of the river

for the purpose of destroying the property of the arch rebel Livingston. As a result, both of the Clermont mansions were destroyed, but were rebuilt later.

As early as 1797, the Chancellor engaged with an Englishman named Nesbit and another named Brunel, the father of the designer and constructor of the steamship *Great Eastern*, in experiments with steam navigation. The trials were made in the Hudson adjoining his property, but were unsuccessful. Then came the Chancellor's appointment as minister to France in 1801, and his acquaintance in that country with Robert Fulton, and his experiments in a similar direction. Backed by Livingston's wealth and influence, Fulton pushed his experiments to a successful issue; and in September, 1807, the *Clermont* made her epoch-making trip to Albany and back; and steam navigation was an accomplished fact. Fulton married a daughter of Walter Livingston, and his grandson, Robert Fulton Ludlow, has a Fulton museum at his residence in Claverack. In addition to his aid to Fulton, the Chancellor was the first to introduce into this country the breed of merino sheep. He died at Clermont in 1813.

To show the difficulties of travel in those early days, a letter from Mrs. Livingston to the judge, her husband, is appended:

CLERMONT, July 12, 1776.

With joy I embrace the opportunity of conversing with you by the Manor sloop. . . . We set out from New York in so great a hurry that I could not give myself the pleasure of seeing, nor the pain of parting with you. We had a very pleasant ride the first day, which brought us to Croton. Here we were detained until the next day by rain, but it is impossible to describe this day's journey; the crags, precipices and mountains that we had a view of, together with the excessive

badness of the roads, that were laid bare by streams of water taking their course through their midst, which made it very disagreeable to me. We could go no farther that day than Warren's, who lives in the midst of the Highlands, but the next day made up for the fatigue of this. We had a most charming journey the remaining part of the day. We breakfasted at Van Wyck's [the Wharton house], who lives at Fishkill; dined at Poughkeepsie, slept at Rhinebeck, where we arrived at six o'clock. The next morning, which was Sunday, we came home at nine o'clock and found the family all in good health and spirits.

Several references have been made to Roelof Jansen's kill, which is the principal stream in the southern part of Columbia County. Roelof Jansen, after whom it was named, was overseer of the orphans' chamber (corresponding to surrogate) at Albany and assistant superintendent of farms for Patroon Van Rensselaer; and in advancing the interests of his employer bought a tract of land in this neighborhood from the Indians. His wife was Annetje Jans; and in 1636 he obtained a grant from Director Van Twiller on the west side of the Heere Straat, which later became the "Dominie's bouwerie" and part of the property of the Trinity corporation, as we have already seen. The old bridge by which the post-road crosses the stream dates back to colonial days. The other important streams in the county are Claverack Creek and Kinderhook Creek.

The first road traversing Columbia County from north to south was the old post-road, passing through Clermont, of which it is the principal street, Livingston, Claverack, and Kinderhook. The Highland Turnpike Company had toll-gates along the road during the time it was responsible for maintenance of the highway. From Poughkeepsie, where the road touches a river

town, it passes inland, varying in distance from the river from two to six miles; but its former importance is shown by the fact that along its course are a score of towns and villages, while upon the river there are only about half a dozen. Besides the numerous estates, Columbia and Rensselaer Counties have been, and



THE BLUE STORE

are, agricultural. With the exception of Lancaster County in Pennsylvania, this section presents the most magnificent farms I have ever seen anywhere, showing that Dutch neatness and thrift have been qualities inherited by the present inhabitants from their Dutch, German, and Huguenot ancestors. Dr. John Romeyn Brodhead, who did such invaluable work in codifying the colonial records of the State, was

a resident of Clermont and occupied a mansion known as the "Brick House."

Beyond Clermont, we come to Blue Store. This was a tavern and change-house where the stages received a relay of horses in the old coaching days. The peculiar name was given to the tavern from its being



CITY OF NIEU ORANGE AS SKETCHED IN 1673

painted blue, a color which present proprietors still retain. The old post-road continued on from this point by way of Claverack and Kinderhook; but when Hudson became an important place, the stages turned here toward the river, stopping at Kellogg's Tavern in Hudson.

Between New York and Albany, the Hudson River was divided by the ancient navigators into "reaches," fourteen in number. One of these, on account of the quantities of clover, was called by the Dutch, *die Klaver*

Rack, or the Clover Reach, a name surviving to-day in Claverack. It is a quiet, pretty place where there are still standing several houses dating from colonial days and several educational establishments of considerable reputation.

In May, 1649, Van Slechtenhorst, commissary to



REFORMED CHURCH, CLAVERACK. ERECTED A.D. 1767

Patroon Van Rensselaer, bought for his master from the Indians a large tract of land about Claverack. This purchase was declared void by Stuyvesant in July, 1652, but the order was afterwards modified by the Amsterdam chamber. The purchase was confirmed by Dongan, November 4, 1685, as well as the other purchases of the manor-lord, who owned about one hundred and seventy



LINDENWALD, THE MARTIN VAN BUREN MANSION

thousand acres in Columbia County. Johannes Van Rensselaer formed the Claverack tract into the Lower Manor of Rensselaerswyck. The first settler at Claverack was Jan Frans Van Hoesen in 1662, and the first English grant was to Major Abraham Staats by Governor Nicolls, March 25, 1667. He must have been settled here some time before this, however; for in 1664, during a war between the Mohicans and the Mohawks, we read of the former destroying cattle at Greenbush, burning the house of Abraham Staats at Claverack, and ravaging the whole east side of the river. The two Labadists, Danckers and Sluyter, who visited Claverack in 1680, state there are fine farms under cultivation, speak of the fertility of the soil and of the abundance of deer, wild turkeys, grapes, etc., and say the settlers are well provided.

After the fiasco with the Palatines on Livingston Manor, many of them came and settled in Claverack. It became the first county-seat of Columbia County; and the court-house, erected in 1786, is still standing. The county-seat was removed to Hudson in 1805. General James Watson Webb was born within the town, and Samuel J. Tilden was born in New Lebanon, not far away.

Kinderhook (*kinder*, children, and *hoeck*, a neck of land) received its name from the Dutch from the number of Indian children seen playing on the banks of the river by some of the early navigators of the stream. The town formerly extended to the river bank, but the town of Stuyvesant was cut off from it in 1823. The village, through which the ancient road passes, is some six miles from the river. About a mile and a half south of the village centre is "Lindenwald," built in 1797 by Judge William P. Van Ness, who was

Burr's second in his duel with Hamilton. Washington Irving was a frequent visitor at the judge's house and did a good deal of his literary work there, including



THE VAN BUREN MONUMENT, KINDERHOOK

Rip Van Winkle and *A Legend of Sleepy Hollow*. The scenes of the latter are actually laid in Kinderhook, and the characters are drawn from people that Irving knew. Jesse Merwin, the village schoolmaster and a

personal friend of Irving's, furnished the character of Ichabod Crane, though Merwin's personality was not like that of the Yankee pedagogue; Katrina Van Alen was the Katrina Van Tassel of the story, and Brom Bones was supplied by another resident of the neighborhood.

In 1841, after his retirement from office, Martin Van Buren, eighth President of the United States, came back to his birthplace and bought the Van Ness estate, which he named "Lindenwald." Here he kept open house and was visited by many of the leading men of the country, being assisted in dispensing hospitality by his son, who was dubbed "Prince John." Van Buren was spoken of by his fellow Democrats as "The Sage of Kinderhook," but his political rivals referred to him as "The Old Fox of Kinderhook." Irving was a visitor during Van Buren's occupancy of the mansion and continued his literary work as in the days of his former visits. In company with Van Buren, he visited the Catskills for the first time, and found them to agree with the description he had given years before in *Rip Van Winkle*. Van Buren died here and is buried in the old cemetery close to the post-road, north of the village centre.

The first grants of land in Kinderhook were made by Colonel Nicolls to Evert Luycas and Jan Hendrick Bruyn of two parcels of land south of a point known as Kinderhook and near the bouwerie of Captain Abraham Staats (Claverack). Before 1670 other grants were made, and the Dutch began to come in as settlers. November 3, 1685, Peter Schuyler received a patent from Dongan for eight hundred acres of land, previously bought from the Indians, lying south of Rensselaerswyck, about two thousand paces over the New England



THE OLD CENTENNIAL HOUSE OR VAN SCHAACK MANSION

path.* Upon petition of the inhabitants, Governor Dongan granted a patent for the town of Kinderhook, March 14, 1686.

Kinderhook and Rhinebeck are mentioned as early as 1656 by Van Der Donck; yet, old as Kinderhook is, it was visited by hostile Indians in comparatively recent times. In the year 1755, while some half dozen of the inhabitants were working in the fields, they were fired upon by several Indians; whereupon the whites ran for their arms and killed two of the intruders. Soon after, thirty or forty Indians appeared, but they were pursued and driven off by Robert Livingston and forty men. As late as 1764, the Indians attacked a family of six persons near Kinderhook and wounded and scalped a man named Gardner, who, however, survived; the Indians were driven off.

Among the interesting relics of Kinderhook are the old covered bridge across the creek over which the stages used to rumble, and several old houses, among them the Van Alen house, the home of Katrina, which was erected before 1735. Another ancient house is the Van Schaack place, opposite the Dutch Church, built in 1774. Montgomery, Jay, Hamilton, Schuyler, Chancellor Kent, and General Burgoyne have been guests here, the last when a prisoner on his way to Boston; and in later days, Clay, Irving, Thomas H. Benton, David Wilmot (of "Proviso" fame), and Charles Sumner.

* The old Indian path to New England was afterwards developed into a bridle path and was shortened, as it was the custom of the Indians to go around all obstacles, as mountains and swamps, taking the easiest way. The whites built corduroy roads over the soft places and scaled the hills. After all these years, roadbuilders have realized that the "easiest way 'round is the shortest way (in time) across" where hills are concerned, and that the Indians had the right idea of saving themselves labor. A part of the old path became the route of the Boston and Albany Railroad when it was built.



THE MODERN FLYING DUTCHMAN—"THE ALBANY"

Between Claverack and Kinderhook, but several miles away on the river bank is the city of Hudson, which, though off the ancient post-road, was the most important place between Poughkeepsie and Albany on the later one which made a *détour* at Blue Store to pass through it, coming back to Kinderhook by way of Stuyvesant Falls.

Hudson was formerly a part of Claverack and was in-



STUYVESANT FALLS

cluded in the patent given on May 14, 1667, by Colonel Nicolls to Jan Frans Van Hoesen, who bought from the Indians in 1662. It was known in later days as Claverack Landing. Early in the year 1783 there came to Claverack Landing a party of New Englanders, principally from Newport, Providence, and Nantucket, who had been engaged in the whaling industry which had been ruined by the Revolution. They formed an association limited to thirty members and were well supplied with means. They bought the land from the Dutch owners and began the building of a town systematically laid out and con-

ducted. The leading spirit of the undertaking was Thomas Jenkins, ably seconded by his brother Seth; and of the same name, there appeared among the associates, Marshall, Charles, Deborah, and Lemuel.

Many of the associates were Quakers, and their object was to form a commercial settlement. Clay pits were opened and the manufacture of bricks was begun and within a year after landing, regular trade was carried



TOLL GATE, HUDSON, N. Y.

on with New York. In 1785, it was the second port in the State of New York, with two shipyards and an important trade with the West Indies, a trade that was ruined by our own Embargo and Non-Intercourse acts, by the opposing decrees of Napoleon and the British Council, prohibiting trade with the allies of the other under threat of seizure and confiscation of vessel and cargo, and by the War of 1812. The first newspaper was published March 31, 1785; and on April twenty-second of the same year, one and one half years after the first arrival of the New Englanders, Hudson was

incorporated as a city with a population of fifteen hundred. By January, 1786, an aqueduct to provide the city with pure water from the hills back of the city had been constructed; and in 1790 Hudson had become a port of entry and remained so until 1815. In 1786 Benjamin Faulkner, an English brewer, established a brewery and dubbed his beverage "Hudson Ale." About all that Hudson is famous for to-day is the output of the same brewery, or its successor, under the name of Evans' Cream Ale. So remarkable was the early growth of the city that strangers visited it to see for themselves the truth of the wonderful stories they had heard about it. The decadence of the city was almost as rapid as its rise; and one is reminded of the old saying about "going up like a rocket and coming down like a stick."

When I visited the city some years ago, riding down on my bicycle from Stuyvesant Falls, I was reminded of Tennyson's lines in *Enid*:

Beheld the long street of a little town
In a long valley,

and I find in the history of the city a similar comment by a visitor of 1807. In 1806, the Highland Turnpike Company opened the South Bay Road to Blue Store, and the northerly road by way of Stuyvesant Falls to Kinderhook was opened about the same time. Lafayette was received here with great honor in 1824. Hudson is the birthplace of two heroes, one naval, the other military. The first was Lieutenant William Henry Allen of the United States Navy, who was executive officer of the frigate *United States* in her memorable fight with the *Macedonian* during the War of 1812. Allen afterwards commanded the *Argus* and took many

prizes, cruising in English waters as Paul Jones had done. He was killed in the action with the *Peacock* in 1813.

. . . Pride of his country's chivalry,
His fame their hope, his name their battle-cry;
He lived as mothers wish their sons to live,
He died as fathers wish their sons to die.

HALLECK.

The military hero is Major-General William Jenkins Worth, who took part in the War of 1812, in the Mexican War, and in the Indian wars, and whose monument stands at Broadway and Twenty-fifth Street in New York. Sanford Gifford, the distinguished landscape artist and a member of the Seventh Regiment during the Civil War, was long a resident of Hudson.

From Kinderhook, the old post-road continues on through Rensselaer County, passing through Valatie, Niverville and South Schodac to Schodac Centre, where it joins the old post-road connecting Boston and Albany, over which it passes to Greenbush, about seven miles from where it enters the Boston Road. We are fairly within the manor of Rensselaerswyck, the ancient domain of the Van Rensselaer family, the greatest landowners in the province of New York.

In 1629, the Dutch West India Company, in order to effect permanent agricultural colonization in New Netherland, granted a charter of "Privileges and exemptions" to any member of the company who would within four years plant a colony of fifty persons anywhere within New Netherland, except on Manhattan Island. These wealthy grantees were termed patroons, and they were entitled to rule their colonies in almost feudal style. The first director of the company to take advantage of the offer was Kilian Van Rensselaer, a wealthy

merchant of Amsterdam in Holland, who, by means of his agents, managed to secure upwards of seven hundred thousand acres of land on both sides of the Hudson in the vicinity of Albany, then called Fort Orange. The first purchase was made on the east side of the river in July, 1630, the first settlers were sent out the same year,



THE OLD COURT HOUSE, CLAVERACK, N. Y.

and the colony was named Rensselaerswyck. Adrien Van der Donck was the second sheriff of the colony, and Anthony Van Corlaer had special charge of Indian affairs. So just and so humane was he in his dealings with the Iroquois that his name became to them the synonym for fair treatment; and so much did he represent to them the power of the white men that the governors and agents for Indian affairs were always called *Curler* until the Confederacy of the Six Nations lost its power.

Stuyvesant became jealous of the power and wealth

of the patroon, whose influence was even greater than his own, and compelled Van Rensselaer to divide his domain into five parts, taking in co-directors who formed a council for the government of the patroon's colony; but Van Rensselaer kept the lion's share for himself. The first patroon never visited his gigantic holdings, but was represented by agents. The present town of Rensselaer, formerly called Greenbush (from the Dutch *Het Greene Bosch*, "the pine woods") and East Albany, fell to Director De Laet and was, in consequence, known as De Laet's Burg, and also as Cralo and Crawler. Some settlers had already located here as early as 1628. In 1678 Governor Andros granted a patent for the Manor of Rensselaerswyck to the heirs of the first patroon, and this was confirmed by Dongan on November 4, 1685. In 1691 the first manor-lord conveyed the Cralo estate in Greenbush and the Claverack tract to his brother Johannes, who formed the latter into the Lower Manor.

Fort Cralo in Greenbush is supposed to be the oldest habitation erected by Europeans now standing within the United States and to have been erected as a manor-house and place of defence in 1642. It was used by General Abercrombie as his headquarters when he was preparing to march against Ticonderoga in 1758. While mobilizing his army the English officers were much amused at the straggling appearance of the provincials; and the particularly uncouth looks and demeanor of the Connecticut levies provoked Dr. Shackbury, a surgeon with the English, to write the words of "Yankee Doodle" to the old tune of "Lucy Locket lost her pocket." Some of Burgoyne's captured troops were quartered in the building while passing through Greenbush on their way to Boston, and probably heard more of the derisive tune than they wanted to; for it had been adopted by

the Continentals almost as a national anthem. Fort Cralo is now owned by the Daughters of the American Revolution. During the War of 1812, Greenbush was the rendezvous for the troops engaged in the northern campaign, and extensive barracks, magazines, and storehouses were erected by the government.

Henry Hudson, in his exploration up the river which

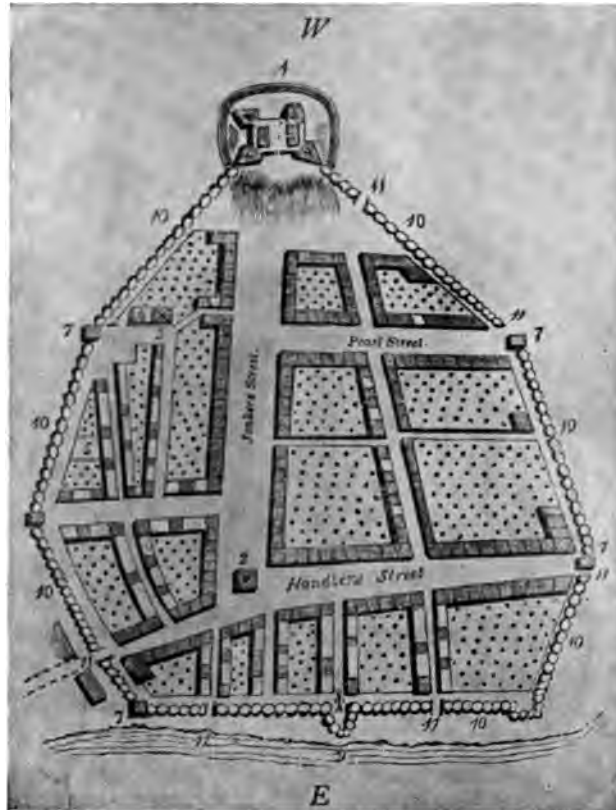


FORT CRALO MANSION, RENSSELAER

bears his name, ascended in the *Half-Moon* almost to the site of the present city of Albany and sent Hendrick Chrystance in a small boat farther up the stream. Chrystance went up as far as the present Troy, and was probably the first Dutchman to land upon the site of Albany. The first traders who came in the following years found the remains of a French fort on Castle Island and erected a new fort for their own protection from the Indians on the same site; this was swept away in a freshet in 1617. The first agricultural colony sent out by the

Columbia and Rensselaer Counties 463

company located at Albany in 1623. Fort Orange was built the same year and a treaty was made with the Indians to buy their land and for the fur trade. The



PLAN OF ALBANY, 1695

Indian name of the place was Scagh-negh-ta-da, meaning "the end of the pine woods"; a name which can be recognized to-day in that of Schenectady. The fort was located at the foot of the present State Street, but was removed in later days to the top of the hill where the

Capitol now stands. In time a collection of rude houses grew up about the fort on the river bank, and the whole was surrounded by a stockade, the gates of which were closed every day at nightfall.

Even as late as 1689, Albany is described as a stock-



A VIEW OF ALBANY FROM THE BRIDGE

aded village with two cross streets, one called "Jonkheer's Straat" (now State), and the other, "Hendelaer's Straat" (now Broadway), extending along the river bank. At the junction of State and Market (Broadway) streets was the old Dutch stone church. It stood in the middle of State Street and was enlarged in 1715 by building a new and larger church around and over the old and smaller one, where the services went on undisturbed. In 1806 the edifice was razed, and the

materials were used in the construction of a new church between Hudson and Beaver Streets.

The first name given to the settlement was the *Fuyck*, probably referring to a bend in the river where fish were caught; but in 1634 the name was changed to Beverwyck (Beavertown), or "a place for beavers." Upon the



THE GOVERNOR'S HOUSE, ALBANY

English occupation in 1664 the name was changed to Albany in honor of the lord-proprietor's Scotch title, Duke of Albany. In 1673, when the Dutch had control again, the fort was renamed Nassau and the settlement, Willemstadt; but the town and fort resumed their former names when the English came back. The first ferry was established to Greenbush in 1642, and the first bridge was completed in December, 1804.

From the beginning of its existence, Albany was a place of vast importance as a trading-post, located as it

was at the mouth of the fur country; but the restrictions upon the trade within the town drove many of the merchants to Schenectady, where they could intercept the furs on their way to Albany in the canoes of the savages. During the various French wars, the town was of great importance, as most of the expeditions gathered at Albany before marching against the French at Ticonderoga, Crown Point, or the shores of Lake Ontario; and its position gave the English control of the warlike tribes of the Iroquois and especially of their nearest and fiercest neighbors, the Mohawks. Governor Sloughter visited the city during his short term of office and wrote: "If the French should assault and gain Albany, all the English colonies on both sides of us would be endangered. For we have nothing but that place that keeps our Indians steady to us."

The first of the Rensselaerswyck settlers located close to Fort Orange, and the fort and village were in danger of being swallowed up by the patroon; but in 1652 Stuyvesant granted a charter to Beverwyck and defined its bounds at six hundred paces from the stockade and thus released Albany from the danger of ever coming under the feudal jurisdiction of Rensselaerswyck. In 1686 Governor Dongan granted a charter to the city of Albany at the same time that he gave one to the city of New York. In 1754 a convention composed of delegates from seven of the colonies met at Albany for the purpose of making closer treaties with the Six Nations and to formulate some plan for the united action of the colonies with the British regulars in the war then impending with the French. Franklin proposed his famous plan of union for the colonies, which was rejected by the provincial assemblies because it did not go far enough, and by the Lords of Trade, under whose auspices the

Columbia and Rensselaer Counties 467

convention was held, because it went too far in rendering the colonies independent of the mother-country.

During the Revolution, the seat of government was moved from place to place as the exigencies of the war determined. When New York City became the capital



THE CITY HALL, ALBANY

of the nation, it also became the capital of the State, and remained so until 1798, when the capital was removed to Albany, where it has been ever since. The capitol building was erected in 1803. Then came the building of the Erie and other canals and the invention of the steam railway, making Albany a great commercial centre and settling and developing the interior of the State; so that New York became the first State in the Union in wealth and population. Following the custom

of the lavish expenditure of money which the great Civil War left as a legacy to us, it was considered that a new and larger capitol, commensurate with the wealth and dignity of the State, was necessary; and work was begun upon the new capitol building in July, 1869, resulting in one of the finest buildings of any kind to be found in the United States. And it should be; for it took between twenty-five and thirty years to build, during which there were numerous scandals in connection with its construction, and about as many millions of dollars were expended as it took years to build. It is constructed principally of white marble, papier-mâché, and *steal*. In late years other fine buidings have been erected for State purposes; but there is one that is conspicuous by its absence—a well-lighted, fireproof structure to house the invaluable archives and records of the State, which for many years have been stored in any damp, ill-lighted vault or room which could be spared, and which have been wantonly, carelessly, and ignorantly treated, and in some cases, destroyed.

Some months after the above paragraph was in type, there occurred a disaster at the State Capitol which still further emphasizes the need of an adequate building for the storage of the relics and historic documents belonging to the State. On the morning of the twenty-ninth of March, 1911, the Capitol caught fire, and there was an estimated money loss of over five millions; and a great many of the State papers were destroyed, and others were badly injured. These, of course, cannot be replaced; but fortunately, owing to the efforts of the State historians and archivists mentioned in the earlier part of this work, most of these documents are still accessible in the codified volumes issued from time to time under various administrations.

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Almanacs* published by the *New York American*, the *New York Tribune*, the *New York World*, and the *Brooklyn Eagle* for various years.
- American Scenic and Historic Preservation Society. Annual Report, 1904; *History of the New York City Hall; An Appeal for the Preservation of City Hall Park*. New York, 1910.
- Appleton's Dictionary of Greater New York*, 1899.
- Automobile Blue Book for New England*, 1907.
- AVERY, ELROY MCENDREE. *A History of the United States and Its People*. Cleveland, Ohio, 1909.
- BACON, EDGAR MAYHEW. *Chronicles of Sleepy Hollow and Tarrytown*, 1897; *The Hudson River, from Ocean to Source—Historical, Legendary, Picturesque*. New York, 1902.
- BLAKE, W. J. *History of Putnam County, New York*. New York, 1849.
- BOLTON, ROBERT. *A History of Westchester County, New York*. In 2 vols., New York, 1849; edited and revised, New York, 1893.
- BOOTH, MARY L. *History of the City of New York*. New York, 1859.
- BOOTH, REV. ROBERT R. *Centennial Discourse upon the History of Rutgers Riverside Church*. New York, 1898.
- BRODHEAD, JOHN ROMEYN. *Documents Relating to the Colonial History of the State of New York*. 11 vols., New York, 1856-1858; *History of the State of New York*. 2 vols., New York, 1853 and 1871.
- BROWN, THOMAS ALLSTON. *The History of the New York Stage*. 2 vols., New York, 1903.
- CAULKINS, F. M. (MISS). *History of Norwich, Connecticut, from Its Settlement in 1660 to January, 1845*. Norwich, 1845.
- CHASTELLUX, MARQUIS DE. *Travels in North America in the Years 1780-81-82*. Translated by John Kent, New York, 1828.
- CLARK, COLONEL EMMONS. *A History of the Second Company of the Seventh Regiment*. New York, 1864.
- COLLES, CHRISTOPHER. *A Survey of the Roads of the United States*. New York, 1789.
- COOPER, JAMES FENIMORE. *The Spy, The Water Witch, Satanstoe, Chain-bearer, and The Redskins*.

- DAVIS, RICHARD HARDING. *Great Streets of the World*. Article on Broadway. New York, 1892.
- DAYTON, ABRAM C. *Last Days of Knickerbocker Life in New York*. New York, 1897.
- DE VOE, THOMAS F. *The Market Book*. Printed for the Author, New York, 1862.
- DISOSWAY, GABRIEL P. *The Earliest Churches in New York*. New York, 1865.
- DWIGHT, TIMOTHY, S.T.D., LL.D., late President of Yale College. *Travels in New York and New England*. New Haven, 4 vols., 1821.
- EARLE, ALICE MORSE. *Colonial Days in Old New York*. New York, 1901.
- ELIOT, SAMUEL. *Manual of United States History*. Boston, 1856.
- ELLIS, F. *History of Columbia County, New York*. Philadelphia, 1876.
- Encyclopedia, International*. New York, 1909.
- Encyclopedia, Nelson's*. New York, 1909.
- FISKE, JOHN. *The Dutch and Quaker Colonies in America*. Boston, 1899.
- Washington and his Country*, an abridgment of Irving's *Life of Washington*. 1899.
- FITCH, CAPTAIN JABEZ, Diary of. *Prison Ship Martyr*, 1776.
- FRANCIS, JOHN W., M.D., LL.D. *Old New York, or Reminiscences of the Past Sixty Years*. New York, 1865. 4 vols., extra illustrated, Lenox Library.
- GILBERT, CASS. "The New York Custom House." *The Architects and Builders Magazine*, November, 1901.
- Half-Moon Papers*. (Historic New York.) 2 vols., New York, 1899.
- HALLECK, FITZ-GREENE. *The Poetical Writings of, with Extracts from those of Joseph Rodman Drake*. Edited by James Grant Wilson. New York, 1894.
- HASWELL, CHARLES H. *Recollections of an Octogenarian of the City of New York*. New York, 1896. [A book of great interest and value, as it reports contemporaneous events.]
- HEATH, MAJOR-GENERAL WILLIAM, of the Continental Army. *The Memoirs of*. Boston, 1798. [Invaluable as to operations in the vicinity of New York.]
- HEMSTREET, CHARLES. *Nooks and Corners of Old New York*. New York, 1899.
- When Old New York was Young*. New York, 1902.
- HEMSTREET, EDWARD. "Literary Landmarks in New York." *The Critic*, vols. 41, 42, and 43, from July, 1902, to December, 1903.
- HINE, CHARLES G. *The New York and Albany Post-road*. New York, 1905.
- HONE, PHILIP, *Diary of (1826 to 1851)*, edited by Bayard Tuckerman. New York, 1889.
- HOWE, M. A. DEWOLFE. *American Bookmen; Sketches, Chiefly Bio-*

- graphical, of Certain Writers of the Nineteenth Century.* New York, 1898.
- HOWELL, TENNEY AND OTHERS. *History of the County of Albany, New York.* New York, 1886.
- INNES, J. H. *New Amsterdam and its People.* New York, 1902. [The most authoritative work yet published upon this epoch of the city's history.]
- IRVING, WASHINGTON. *A History of New York, from the Beginning of the World to the End of the Dutch Dynasty, by Deidrich Knickerbocker. The Sketch Book. The Salmagundi Papers,* in connection with William Irving and James Kirke Paulding.
- JAMESON, J. FRANKLIN and BUEL, J. W. *Encyclopedic Dictionary of American Reference.* 2 vols., 1901.
- JANVIER, THOMAS A. *In Old New York.* New York, 1894. *The Dutch Founding of New York.* New York, 1903.
- JOHNSON, PROF. HENRY P. *The Battle of Harlem Heights.* New York, 1897. *Nathan Hale.* Printed for the Author, New York, 1900.
- JONES, JUDGE THOMAS. *History of New York during the Revolutionary War.* [This is from the Tory side.] First published in 1788; edited and republished by the New York Historical Society, New York, 1879.
- LAMB, MRS. MARTHA J. *History of the City of New York.* New York, 2 vols., 1877. Additional volume by Mrs. Burton Harrison, 1898.
- League of American Wheelmen, New York State Division. *Tour Book, 1895.* Maps accompanying. *Fifty Miles Around New York.* 1896.
- LOSSING, BENSON J. *A Pictorial Field Book of the Revolution.* New York, 1855. *The Hudson, from the Wilderness to the Sea.* New York, 1866. *History of New York City.* 2 vols., New York, 1884.
- Maps. Sauthier's, of the Province of New York, 1773. Of the State of New York, Wightman (1801); Simeon De Witt (1804); Eddy (1818). Of the Hudson River Railroad (1843). [These and others may be found in the Lenox Library.]
- Commission's, of 1821, Robert R. Randall, Jr., Surveyor; and Atlases and Record Maps. [These may be found in the office of the City Surveyor and the Hall of Records.]
- MILLER, HENRY EDWARD. *In the Sleepy Hollow Country.* Reprinted from the *New England Magazine*, December, 1900.
- MINES, JOHN FLAVEL, pseudonym, FELIX OLDBOY. *A Tour Around New York.* New York, 1893. [A most delightful book for the old New Yorker.]
- MOSS, FRANK, LL.D. *The New York Metropolis, from Knickerbocker Days to the Present Time, and New York City Life in All Its Various Phases.* 3 vols., New York, 1897.
- MUNSELL, JOEL. *Annals of the City of Albany.* Albany, 1871.

- Newspapers. Back files of New York weeklies and dailies, eighteenth, nineteenth, and the present century. (Lenox, Astor, Society, and Mechanics' Libraries.)
- O'CALLAGHAN, E. B. *The Documentary History of the State of New York*. 4 vols., Albany, 1849.
- PASKO, W. W. *Old New York, a Journal relating to the History and Antiquities of New York City*. 2 vols., New York, 1899.
- PIERCE, CARL HORTON. *New Harlem, Past and Present*. New York, 1903.
- POST, JOHN J. *Old Streets, Roads, Lanes, Piers, and Wharves of New York*. New York, 1882.
- PUTNAM, GEORGE HAVEN. *George Palmer Putnam, 1814-1872*. Privately printed, 2 vols., New York and London, 1903.
- RANDALL, S. S. *A History of the State of New York*. New York, 1870.
- RIKER, JAMES. *Harlem, Its Origin and Early Annals*. New York, 1881.
- ROOSEVELT, THEODORE. *New York*. (Historic Towns Series.) New York, 1895. *Gouverneur Morris*. (American Statesmen Series.) Boston, 1888.
- SABINE, LORENZO. *Biographical Sketches of the Loyalists of the American Revolution*. 2 vols., Boston, 1864.
- SAXE, JOHN GODFREY. *The Poetical Works of*. Boston, 1850.
- SCHARF, J. THOMAS, LL.D. *History of Westchester County, New York*. 2 vols., Philadelphia, 1884.
- SCHUYLER, PHILIP. *Colonial New York, and Philip Schuyler and His Family*. New York, 1885.
- SCOVILLE, JOSEPH A., pseudonym, WALTER BARRETT. *The Old Merchants of New York*. New York, 4 vols., 1863.
- SHONNARD, FREDERIC, and W. W. SPOONER. *History of Westchester County, New York*. New York, 1900.
- SIMCOE, LIEUTENANT-COLONEL JOHN G., of the Royal Army, *The Military Journal of*. New York, 1844.
- SMITH, EMMA A. F. *Washington's Headquarters—the Roger Morris House*. New York, 1908.
- SMITH, P. H. *General History of Dutchess County, New York*. Pawling, 1877.
- SMITH, RICHARD. *Four Great Rivers. (1769.)* Edited from Smith's diary by Frederick W. Halsey, New York, 1906.
- SMITH, JUDGE WILLIAM. *A History of New York from the First Discovery to the Year 1732*. London, 1793.
- STATE HISTORIAN. *Ecclesiastical Records of the State of New York*. Albany, 4 vols., 1901.
- STONE, WILLIAM LEETE. *History of New York City*. New York, 1872.
- SYLVESTER, N. B. *History of Rensselaer County, New York*. Philadelphia, 1880.

- TERHUNE, MRS. CHRISTINE HERRICK, pseudonym, MARIAN HARLAND. *Some Colonial Homesteads and Their Stories*. New York, 1897.
- TODD, CHARLES BURR. *The Story of the City of New York*. New York, 1895.
- ULLMAN, ALBERT. *A Landmark History of New York*. New York, 1903.
- VALENTINE, DAVID. *History of the City of New York*. New York, 1853. *Manuals of the City of New York* (commonly called *Valentine's Manuals*). Those having special reference to Broadway are the manuals of 1857, 1858, 1859, 1860 (*The Surveying and Laying out of the Roads*), 1862, 1864 (*History of the Fort of New York*) and 1865 (*History of Broadway*).
- VAN RENSSELAER, MRS. SCHUYLER. *History of the City of New York*. 2 vols., New York, 1909.
- WATSON, JOHN F. *Pictorial History of New York*. Philadelphia, 1840. *Annals and Occurrences of New York City and State, in the Olden Time*. Philadelphia, 1846.
- WILD, JAMES. "The New York City Hall." *The Century*, April, 1884.
- WILSON, JAMES GRANT, editor. *The Memorial History of the City of New York*. 4 vols., New York, 1892.
- WILSON, RUFUS ROCKWELL. *New York, Old and New*. 2 vols., Philadelphia, 1902.

1

INDEX

A

- Abbey, Henry E., manager Star T., 210; Park T., 234; Knickerbocker T., 260; Met. Opera H., 260
- Abbey, the, roadhouse, 295
- Abercrombie, Gen., hdqrs. at Ft. Cralo, 461
- Abingdon Road, 234
- Ackerman, Jane, 266
- Ackert, Wolfert, builds Wolfert's Rust (Roost), 366
- Adams, Maude, 261
- Adams, Mrs. John, quoted, 189
- Adder Cliff, at Poughkeepsie, 424
- Advertisements, 77; of estate near Bloomingdale, 286
- Aertsen, Huyck, grant from Kieft, 328
- Ainslee's restaurant, 186
- Albany, fort, 2; State capital, 26, 467; stages, 144; distance to, 145; view of Nieuw Orange, 447; called Ft. Orange, 460, 463; Indian name of, 463; description in 689, 464; Dutch name of, 465; named by English, 465; Dutch regain possession, 465; trading-post, 465; governors' house, 465; during French wars, 466; controls the Iroquois, 466; city charter, 466; colonial convention, 466; City Hall, 467; commercial centre, 467; first Capitol, 467; present Capitol, 468; its scandalous construction, 468; fire in, 468
- Albany County, formation and extent, 436
- Albany Post-road, old Indian trail, 344; act establishing, 344; course, 344, 345, 348, 353, 381, 387, 394, 401, 407, 415, 422, 430, 437, 445, 447, 450, 459; overseers, 344; Philipse maintains, 346; junction with Boston road, 353; under Highland Turnpike Co., 360, 401, 407; fine estates on, 370, 394, 434; André monument, 373; joins Boston-Albany road, 459
- Aldermen, Board of (or Common Council), 114; tea parties, 116, 117; calls meeting, 121, 122; "Forty Thieves," 229; grants franchise for Broadway railway, 229, 230; arrested for bribery, 232
- Aldrich, Thomas Bailey, at Pfaff's, 189
- Alipconck, Indian village on Pocantico, 372, 381
- Allen, Lieut., messenger to Arnold, 400, 408
- Allen, Lieut. Wm. Henry, U. S. N., his career, 458; Halleck's lines on his death, 459
- Allerton, Isaac, warehouse, 9; farm, 10
- Almshouse, 90, 95; new, 95; old, demolished, 96; removed, 96; becomes N. Y. Institution, 96; American Museum, 96
- Amen Corner, at 5th Ave. Hotel, 240; dinners of, 241
- American Geographical Society, new building, 316
- American Horse Exchange, 268; history of, 272
- American Hotel, 99
- American League Park, baseball, 323
- American Museum, Scudder's, 96; Barnum's, site of, 104

- American Numismatic Society, new building, 316
 American prisoners, 92-94, 105
 Amsterdam, Fort, 12
 Amsterdam, New, named, 12
 Anderson, Elbert, 176
 André, Maj. John, correspondence with Arnold, 44; funeral, 82; 361; monument, 373, 374; story of his capture, 374-380; writes letter to Washington, 378; trial and execution, 378, 380; interview with Arnold, 385, 392, 417; crosses King's Ferry, 393; stops at Dusenberry's tavern, 399; taken to N. Salem, 400; capture announced to Arnold, 408
 Andros, Gov. Edmund, fills in Broad St., 8; grants flour monopoly, 51; grants lands in Harlem, 309; permits Livingston to buy lands from Indians, 438; grants patent for Rensselaerswyck, 461
 Annsville Creek, 401, 402
 Anthony's Nose, location, 402; picture of, 403; Irving's story of the origin of the name, 402-404
 Anti-Leislerians, political party, 18; hdqrs., 45
 Anti-Masonry, 163
 Anti-rent wars on Livingston and Rensselaer manors, 442
 Apollo Ballroom, 212; hdqrs. Wood Democracy, 212; dancing, 213
 Appleton, D., & Co., publishers, 74, 75, 166
 Apthorpe, Charles Ward, mansion, 284, 285; sketch of, 286; estate becomes Elm Park, 286; house hdqrs. of Washington, 288; hdqrs. of Howe, 288, 305
 Archer, John, village of Fordham, 340
 Archives, State, codified by State historian, 4; necessity for proper care of, 468
 Argall, first Englishman to visit Manhattan I., 8
 Armies, allied, grand reconnaissance, 353, 354; feint upon New York, 354; march to Yorktown, Va., 355; advance through Yonkers, 360
 Armstrong, Gen. John, Rokeby estate, 433; sketch of, 433; famous privateer named after him, 434
 Arnold, Gen. Benedict, 44; plan to capture, 46, 47; pass to André, 376; meeting with André, 378, 380; escapes to the British, 378, 409; interview with André, 385, 392, 417; his treason, 397; commander in the Highlands, 397; hdqrs., 408
 Arnold, George, at Pfaff's, 189
 Aronson, Rudolph, manager, 261
 Arsenal, U. S., at Madison Square, 238
 Arthur, Pres't Chester A., at 5th Ave. Hotel, 240
 Articles of Confederation ratified by State, 425
 Asbury, Bishop, preaches at Van Cortlandt Manor, 392
 Ashburton, Lord, reception at City Hall, 115
 Asia, the, threatens to bombard N. Y., 22, 108
 Aspinwall, Wm. H., acquires Philipse's Castle, 381
 Astor House, 66, 137; erected, 138, 139; visitors at, 139; "Bachelors' " ball, 139; departure of 6th Mass. Reg't, 139, 140, 142; popular resort, 142; 157, 183
 Astor, John Jacob, 137, 176, 226, 266; builds Astor House, 138; farm, 298; acquires Roger Morris property, 319
 Astor Place riot, 196
 Astor, Wm. B., acquires Rokeby, 434
 Atlantic cable celebration, 115
 Atlantic Garden, 46
 Auchmuty, Rev., dedicates St. Paul's, 71
 Audubon, John James, picture of house, 313; cross in Trinity Cemetery, 314; residence of, 315
 Audubon Park, 310, 315
- B
- Babcock, Luke, rector at Yonkers, 357; maltreated by patriots, 357
 Bacon, Judge, anecdote of, footnote, 57
 Badeau, Gen. Adam, resident of Mt. Pleasant, 369
 Baker & Scribner, 208

- Baker, Senator, at Union Sq. meeting, 226
 Ball, Bachelors', at Astor House, 139
 Ball, Black & Co., 161
 Ballston Spa, 242
 Bangs, Richards & Platt, auctioneers, 75
 Bank, first savings, 96
 Banquets—to Sir Charles Hardy, 62; King's College, 63; St. Andrew's Society, 64; to Washington, 66; Publishers' Association, 66; naval heroes, 66; Irving, 66, 67; Charles Dickens, 67; Prince de Joinville, 139; Capt. Lawrence, 153
 Bardin, Edward, tavern-keeper, 45
 Barnard College, 302
 Barnum, Phineas T., Am. Museum, 194; hires Vauxhall, 194; acquires Scudder's, 196; burnt out, 199; reopens at Melodeon Hall, 211; burnt out again, 211
 Barracks, in City Hall Park, 118; on Chambers St., 152
 Barré coins term, "Sons of Liberty," 97
 Barrett, Lawrence, at Star T., 210
 Barrett, Wilson, at Star T., 210
 Barrow, James, farm, 310
 Bartholdi, statue of Lafayette, 224
 Bartolph, Dominie Guillaume, at Sleepy Hollow Church, 383
 Battery, the, origin of, 18, 19; favorite resort, 19
 Bayard, Nicholas, colonel of trainbands, 17; brings about death of Leisler, 437
 Bayard, Alderman Nicholas, sells lots on Broadway, 68; farm, 175; it becomes Vauxhall garden, 194
 Bayard, Peter, leases Bowling Green, 19
 Becket, Harry, at Wallack's T., 210
 Beecher, Henry Ward, resident of Peekskill, 370
 Beekman farm, 310
 Beekman's swamp, leather district, 77, 431
 Beekman, Gerard G., acquires Philipse's Castle, 381
 Beekman (or Beckman), Col. Henry, acquires Rhinebeck, 431; extent of grant, 432
 Beekman (or Beckman), Wm., comes to New Amsterdam with Stuyvesant, 431
 Bellomont, Gov. Lord, body exhumed, 25; stops privateering, 43; refuses to sign act for Jansen heirs, 338; quoted in regard to Kidd's treasure, 346; friendly to Livingston, 437; reports on Livingston Manor, 439
 Benckes, Admiral, retakes N. Y. for the Dutch, 16
 Bennett, James Gordon, 156; acquires site of Barnum's Museum, 199; estate at Washington Heights, 315
 Bennett, James Gordon, 2d, gives land for Ft. Washington memorial, 328
 Benton, Senator Thos. H., guest at Van Schaack house, 454
 Beraud & Mondon, booksellers, 75
 Bernhardt, Sara, at Knickerbocker T., 210
 Berrien, John, injured on the Commons, 101
 Berrien's Neck, 345
 Beverwyck, Dutch name for Albany, 465; Stuyvesant gives charter to, 466
 Bial, Rudolph, manager, 261
 Bierstadt, Albert, resident of Dobbs Ferry, 370
 Birch, Harvey, interview with Washington, 412; escapes from Wharton House, 419
 Birch, Wambold & Backus, San Francisco Minstrels, 250
Black Crook, the, at Niblo's, 204
 Blaine, James G., in presidential campaign, 240
 Bliss, Elam, bookseller, 74
 Blitz, Signor, magician, 218
 Block, Adrien, explorer, 2
 Blommaert's Vly, 6, 34
 Bloomer, company and costume, 211
 Bloomingdale, omnibuses, 145, 146, 274; insane asylum, removed to, 150; road, 220, 234, 238, 242, 258, 264, 266, 274, 288, 316, 320; course of road, 296, 298, 308; estates in, 282; De Lancey estate, 283; advertisement of sale

- Bloomingdale,—(*Continued*)
of estate, 286; origin of name, 288; roadhouses, 295; asylum removed from, 302
Blow, Capt., brings first stamped paper to city, 100
Blue Store, 446; change house in coaching days, 447
Blunt, Edw. March, resident of Sing Sing, 370
Boar (or Hog) Hill occupied by American army, 360
Bogardus, Dominie Everardus, farm, 136; marries Annetje Jans, 136
Bogert farm, 282
Bolton, tavern-keeper, 64
Bomb throwing in Union Square, 226
Bonaparte, Jerome, entertained by Jumels, 319
Bonaparte, Joseph, occupies Claremont, 300
Bones, Brom, character of Irving's, 368; original of, 452
Boniface, Stella, at Wallack's T., 210
Booksellers and publishers, 74, 75
Booth, Edwin, at Winter Garden T., 207; at Star T., 210
Boreel Building, on site of City Hotel, 67
Borough of The Bronx, English settlement, 8; formation, 350
Boston Port Bill, meeting in the Fields, 105
Boston Post-road, 85, 296; course, 132, 236, 237, principal thoroughfare of city, 175; at Kingsbridge, 345; Coles's new road, 350
Boston and Albany Post-road, Albany Post-road merges in, 459
Boucicault, Dion, at Star T., 210; plans Park T., 235
Bouguereau, *Nymphs and Satyr*, 244
Boulevard, Western, *see* Broadway
Boundary disputes with Connecticut, 8; with Massachusetts, 441
Bouweries, *see* Farms
Bowers, Arden Rosannah, farm, 310
Bowers, Mrs. D. P., at Laura Keene's Varieties T., 213
Bowery, *Heerewegh* leads into, 85; part of Boston Post-road, 132; first Belgian pavement on, 134; sports at Bull's Head tavern, 137; Astor Place leads from, 178; "Minto" estate on, 178; Brevoort estate on, 179; Vauxhall Garden on, 194; junction with Broadway, 221; Washington statue on, at Union Sq., 224
Bowling Green, location, 14; market and fair, 15; parade, 15; shambles, 15; treaty with Indians on, 15; Stuyvesant's surrender, 16; parade of train-bands, 17; De Peyster statue, 18; resolution of Council, 19; lessees, 19; Indian conference, 19, 20; post-office at, 21; fence, 22; George III.'s statue in, 22, 23; Chancellor Livingston becomes lessee, 24; governor's garden, 26; Jay's treaty and effigy burned, 26; leased to Rogers, 27; fountain, 28; view of, 29; regulated, 34; meat market, 38; taverns, 42; view in 1910, 49; enclosed, 85; terminus, Broadway surface railway, 233
Brant, Capt., guest at Van Cortlandt manor-house, 392
Bread line at Fleischmann's, 181
Breedeweg, 31
Brett, Roger and Madam, occupy Teller house, 419
Brevoort, Elias, farm, 179, 221
Brevoort, Hendrick, prevents cutting through of 11th St., 179
Brevoort, Henry, friend of Irving, 53
Bridewell, site of, 92; American prisoners in, 92; demolition, 92
Bridges: Broad Street, over canal, 14; Loew, at Fulton St., 78, 79; Stone, at Canal St., 173, 174; Farmers', 329, 334, 335—built, 339—known as Hadley's, 339—opening of, 340—destroyed by British, 341; Harlem Ship Canal, 334; King's, view of, 335, 338—established by Philipse, 339, 346—used during Revolution, 339, 344, 348; Harlem, 341—built by Coles, 350; British pontoon, 341; Central (Macomb's dam), 348; Croton, 387, 391; Poughkeepsie cantilever, 428, 429; Roelof Jansen's Kill, 445; Kinderhook Creek, 454; Albany-Greenbush, 465

- Brinckerhoff, Revolutionary mills, 417
- British, occupy city, 24; evacuate city, 24, 363; fortifications, 148, 174, 175, 341, 350; posts of Neutral Ground, 363, 364; destroy Peekskill, 400; burn Kingston, 442; destroy Clermont mansions, 444
- British Council, injures Hudson's trade, 457
- Broad Street, formation of, 6, 8; canal, 7; called *de Heere Graft*, 8; centre of population, 8; filled in, 8, 14; ditch, 34, 332
- Broadhurst, Samuel, farm, 310
- Broadway, first grants on, 5, 6; burying-ground, 6, 42; fortifications, 9, 109, 148, 174, 175; beginning, 14; cattle fair, 15; receives name, 31; *Breedeweg*, 31; Great George St., 31; extent of, 31, 42, 133, 136, 152; drainage, 34; wells, 34, 36; pavements, 34, 134, 176, 276; reservoir on, 36; lighting—gas, 37, electricity, 38; market, 39; as business street, 41; character of houses on, 42, 52, 68, 72, 152, 161, 164, 176, 177; residents and farms on, 43, 44, 45, 48, 62, 152, 166, 175, 176, 222, 242, 266, 282, 298, 310; regulation of houses, 48; views of, 49, 59, 161, 185, 186, 188; values of property, 50, 52, 53, 68, 137, 139, 242, 252, 254, 255; Rombout's house, 51; De Lancey house, 62; regulated, 62, 68, 134, 152, 175, 180, 242, 266; traffic control, 78; Loew Bridge, 78, 79; "Squad" of police, 79; draft riot, 128; Middle road, 129, 133, 175, 180, 266; development, 134; survey, 134; ropewalk, 136; omnibuses, 143-147; Kip mansion, 145; N. Y. Hospital, 148, 149; booksellers and publishers, 158; Stone Bridge, 173, 174; an—"accidental thoroughfare," 175; charms of, 189; Jewish occupancy, 191; public gardens, 193, 194, 202; American Museum at Ann St., 199; Bloomingdale road, 220, 234, 238, 242, 258, 264, 266, 274, 288, 316, 320; junction with Bowery, 221; retail trade leaves, 222, 223; cable road on, 228; surface road, 228-234; chief residential street, 229; character changed, 232; Herald Sq., 253, 254; Greeley Sq., 254; upward trend of gayety, 256, 258; "Great White Way," 256, 257, 262; "Long Acre Sq.," 264; the Circle, 274; Boulevard, 274, 276, 290, 314; Lincoln Sq., 274; Beach Pneumatic Railway, 279; subway, 279-283; squares at avenue crossings, 292; Sherman Sq., 292; merges in Kingsbridge road, 297, 308, 323; course of, 298, 353; "Old," 308; changes in upper part in last decade, 309; suspension bridge at Trinity cemetery, 314; Albany Post-road, 344, 345, 348, 387, 394, 401, 407, 415, 422, 430, 437, 445, 447, 459; S. Broadway in Yonkers, 355; N. Broadway in Yonkers, 360; Highland Turnpike, 360, 401, 407; Ichabod Crane's ride, 368; no trolley on, in Tarrytown, 370; merges in Boston-Albany Post-road, 459
- Brodhead, Dr. John Romeyn, codifies Dutch records, 4; resident of Clermont, 446
- Bronk, Jonas, first settler on mainland, 343; gives name to Bronx River, 343
- Bronx, River, 62, 343; Chapter, D. A. R., 437
- Brooklyn ferry, 9
- Brooks, Preston, attack upon Sumner, 183
- Brougham, John, opens Lyceum T., 208; at Wallack's T., 210
- Brower, omnibuses, 145
- Brown, Geo. Farrar (Artemus Ward), at Pfaff's, 189
- Brown, Henry K., sculptor, 224
- Brown, Thos. Allston, footnote, 192; quoted, 210
- Brunel, experiments with steamboats, 444
- Bruyn, Jan Hendrick, grant in Kinderhook, 452
- Bryant, Dan, minstrels, 193, 217
- Bryant, Wm. Cullen, editor, 74, 155, 156, 157, 207
- Buckley, Thomas, farm, 298
- Bunker Mansion House, 51

- Burchard, Rev., "Rum, Romanism, and Rebellion," 240
 Burgoyne, Gen. John, invasion, 425, 443; prisoner at Van Schaack house, 452; his captured troops at Ft. Cralo, 461
 Burials prohibited below Canal St., 60
 Burke, Ione, at Niblo's, 205
 Burling, Samuel, offers trees for Broadway, 176
 Burling, Thomas, farm, 222
 Burnall, Ebenezer, farm, 310
 Burnet, Gov., lat. and long. of fort, 21
 Burnham's Mansion House, 293, 294
 Burns, George, tavern-keeper, opens coffee house, 63
 Burns's Coffee House, meeting at, 21; opened, 63; lottery, 63; hdqrs. Sons of Liberty, 63, 104; non-importation agreements, 63, 64; other meetings, 64; duel, 64; stamped paper displayed, 100
 Burr, Aaron, forms Manhattan Co., 37; friend of Vanderlyn, 129; guides Putnam's retreat, 133, 266; duel with Hamilton, 316, 321, 451, 317; marries Madam Jumel, 319; death, 321
 Burton, "Billy," manager, 184, 207
 Burton, Deborah, farm, 266
 Burying Ground, location, 6, 42; partitioned, 50; closure, 60
 Butler, Wm. Allen, resident of Yonkers, 368
 Byrd, James, farm, 310
- C
- Cable road in Broadway, 228
 Café de l'Opéra, 258, 259
 Café des Milles Colonnes, opened by Pintaux, 183
 Café Martin, formerly Delmonico's, 248
 Cahoon, grocer, 164
 Call Rock at Poughkeepsie, 424
 Campbell minstrels, 193
 Camps, East and West, Palatine settlements, 439, 440
 Canal, Eric, 115, 467; plans for East River-Hudson, 332, 333; Harlem Ship, 334
 Cape, John, tavern-keeper, 66
 Capital, N. Y. City, 25, 26, 467; various places, 467; removed to Albany, 467
 Capitol, 463; first at Albany 467; scandalous construction of present, 468; injury by fire, 468
 Capske rocks, foundation for the Battery, 18
 Capture of André, story of, 373-380
 Carey, Matthew, publisher, 66
 Carleton, Gen. Sir Guy, hdqrs., 44; buries Montgomery's body, 72; meets Washington at Dobbs Ferry, 363
 Carman, David, estate on Washington Heights, 309
 Carmansville, Washington Heights, 309
 Carr, Capt., Colve's messenger, 86
 Carter & Brothers, booksellers, 75
 Carter, James C., counsel for Jacob Sharp, 232
 Carvell, G. & C., booksellers, 74
 Castle Island, fort, 2, 462; remains of French fort, 462
 Cat Hill, in the Highlands, 408
 Causeway at Macomb St., Kingsbridge, 345, 348
 Cemeteries: Dutch burying-ground, 6, 42, 50, 60; Trinity graveyard, 60, 61, 64, 70; St. Paul's graveyard, 25, 70-73; Trinity: Knowlton and Leitch buried, 306, 310—suspension bridge, 311, 314—opening of, 314—Audubon cross, 314—John A. Dix grave, 314; Sleepy Hollow, Dutch and Revolutionary burials, 384—Irving's grave: 384; St. Peter's at Cortlandtville, Paulding and Pomeroy monuments, 398; Kinderhook, grave of Van Buren, 451, 452
 Central Park, developed, 126; 288; fortifications, 124, 307
 Century House, built by Jan Nagel, 340; terminus of Harlem River boats, 341
 Chain across Hudson, 397, 410
 Chambers, Capt., brings tea to N. Y., 106
 Chambers, John, leases the Bowling Green, 19
 Champe, Sergeant, plot to capture Arnold, 46-48

- Chanfrau, Frank, at Olympic T., 200
- Charitable Institutions: House of Refuge for Juvenile Delinquents, 238, 314; Sheltering Arms, 310; Hebrew Orphan Asylum, 310; Montefiore Home, 310, 312; Colored Orphan Asylum, 312; Deaf and Dumb Asylum, 312
- Charlton, Dr., 52
- Chastellux, Marquis de, description of Fishkill, 418
- Chelsea Village, 228, 234
- Chimney sweeps, 40
- Cholera, visitations of, 129
- Christian Brothers (R. C.), Manhattan Coll., 308; St. Joseph's Normal School at Tarrytown, 372
- Christensen, explorer with Block, 2
- Christy minstrels, 193
- Chrystance, Hendrick, first Dutchman on sites of Albany and Troy, 462
- Church, Established, 58
- Church farm, Trinity acquires, 136; race course on, 137; 173
- Church, Francis, farm, 266
- Churches: St. Nicholas, how built, 12, 14—burnt, 20; Dutch, in Garden St., Leisler and Milborne reburied, 18; Trinity, history of, 58—chimes, 59—churchyard, 60, 70—graves of Lawrence, Fulton, and Hamilton, 60, 61—grave of Charlotte Temple, 61—prison martyrs' monument, 61—Capt. Tollemache buried, 64—acquires Queen's farm, 136—builds St. Paul's Chapel, 136—offers land to Lutherans, 173; German Lutheran, built by Palatines, 61—burnt, 61—refuses land, 173; Grace, offshoot of Trinity, 61—two locations, 61, 179—view of, 180—prevents street cutting, 180—weddings, 180; St. Paul's Chapel, Broadway extends to, 42; 52—churchyard, 25, 70, 71—saved from fire of 1776, 71—tablet to Montgomery, 72—view of, 73—view from, 81—erection, 136; St. Thomas's, 181—view of, 182—bodies removed from, 314; Broadway Congregational, 181; Unitarian of the Divine Unity, 182; Church of the Messiah, 182; Scotch Baptist, 182; Swedenborgian, 182; St. George the Martyr, 182; Broadway Tabernacle (Cong.), 182—view of, 184, 271—May meetings, 183—concerts, 183—Sumner meeting, 183—removals, 183, 254; Bloomingdale Reformed Dutch, 289, 290; Rutgers Riverside Presbyterian, history of, 290, 291; St. Teresa's Roman Catholic, 290; Madison Avenue Presbyterian, 291; Christ Protestant Episcopal, history of, 291; Manhattan Congregational, 292; Blessed Sacrament (R. C.), 292; First Baptist, 292; Evangelical Lutheran, 292; Cathedral of St. John the Divine (P. E.), 302; Annunciation (R. C.), 308; St. George's (P. E.), bodies removed to Trinity Cemetery, 314; St. Stephen's (P. E.), bodies removed to Trinity Cemetery, 314; Spanish (R. C.), 316; St. Luke's (P. E.), 316; Our Lady of Lourdes (R. C.), Hamilton trees on property, 317; Holyrood Chapel (P. E.), increment in land values, 324; 325; St. Elizabeth (R. C.), 324; Mt. Washington Presbyterian, 324—view of, 327; St. John's, Yonkers, 355—part of Westchester parish, 356, 357—view of, 356—erected, 356—various rectors, 356, 357—history of, 357; Christ (P. E.), at Tarrytown, tablet to Irving, 372; 373; Sleepy Hollow (R. D.), history of, 382, 383—bi-centenary, 384; Shepard Memorial, at Scarborough, 385; St. Peter's (P. E.), at Cortlandtville, 398; Trinity (P. E.), at Fishkill, 414, 416; Reformed Dutch, at Fishkill, erection, 415—used by legislature, 415—view of, 416; 422; Reformed Dutch, at Poughkeepsie, 425; Reformed Dutch, at Claverack, 448; Reformed Dutch, at Kinderhook, 452, 454; Reformed Dutch, at Albany, 464
- Cincinnati, Order of the, formed, 420
- Circle, the, 274

- City of New Amsterdam, Dutch surrender of, 10
 City Hall (old), 45; jail, 92; prison, 94
 City Hall (new), tablet on, 108; erection of, 110, 112; "Governors' Room," 114; celebrations and receptions in, 115; clock, 115; flags on, 115; cupola burnt, 116; N. Y. Historical Society formed, 116; bodies lie in state, 117, 118; picture of, 123
 City Hall Park, 84; view of, 111, 113; Atlantic cable celebration, 116; subway tablet, 118; barracks, 118; meetings of War of 1812, 121, 122; abolition and anti-steamboat meetings, 124; panic of 1837, 125; panic of 1857, 126; draft riots, 128; attempts to save, 131
 City Hotel, picture, 65; erected, 66; first meeting of publishers, 66; history of, 66-68, 157; demolition, 188
 City Library, in City Hall, 114
 Civil War, meeting in Union Square, 226; cannon and projectiles cast at Cold Spring Foundry, 411
 Clapp, Henry, journalist, 189
 Claremont, 278, 295, 298, 299
 Clark, Austin & Co., booksellers, 75
 Clark & Brown, English restaurant, 248
 Clark, Lewis Gaylord, editor, 75, 157
 Clarke, George, at Daly's T., 251
 Clarke, McDonald, the mad poet, 167
 Clarkson, David, 162; sells property, 166
 Clarkson, David M., farm, 283; 298
 Clason, Isaac, farm, 222
 Claverack, Potthoke of the Indians, 439; Livingston buys, 439; Fulton Museum at, 444; principal street, 445; origin of name, 447; land bought in, 448; Lower Manor of Rensselaerswyck, 450, 461; first settlers, 450; Palatines settle in, 450; county seat, 450; courthouse still standing, 450, 460
 Claverack Creek, 445
 Claverack Landing, site of the city of Hudson, 456
 Clay, Henry, funeral, 82; reception at City Hall, 115; 139; guest at Van Schaack house, 454
 Clermont, 437; disputed ownership, 441; devised to Robt. Livingston, 2d, 441; mansions burnt by British, 444; principal street, 445
 Cleveland, Grover, in presidential campaign, 240
 Clinton, De Witt, lessee, 27; president Historical Society, 116; president Deaf and Dumb Institution, 312
 Clinton, Gov. George, occupies Government House, 26; attends St. Paul's, 71; funeral, 82; at Van Cortlandt mansion, 353; at Dobbs Ferry, 363; opposes Federal Constitution, 426
 Clinton, Gov. Henry, confers with Indians, 19, 20
 Clinton, Gen. Sir Henry, hdqrs., 44; directs André, 44; deceived by allied armies, 355; learns of André's capture, 378; realizes importance of Highlands, 397
 Clothes, 53, 54
 Clubs: Union formed, 67; Bread and Cheese, 154, 189; Union League, 227; St. George Cricket, 248
 Cochran, Wm. F., builds Holly-wood Inn, 355; his widow donates Philipse manor-house, 357
 Coghlan, Charles and Rose, at Wallack's T., 210
 Cold Spring, 407; foundries, 411; origin of name, 411; Hudson River scenery at, 412
 Colden, A., postmaster, 21
 Colden, Cadwalader, burnt in effigy, 21; 64, 98, 100; secures charter for N. Y. Hospital, 148; at Blue Bell Tavern, 331; describes the Highlands, 406
 Coles builds Harlem bridge and new Boston road, 350
 Collect, the, 36, 77; common property, 84; view of, 85; powder-house in, 90; plans to drain, 171, 172; proposed canal, 332
 Colles, Christopher, water supply for N. Y., 36, 166
 Colon Donck (Donck's Colony), 346

- Colonial Dames, try to get custody of Morris House, 321; museum in Van Cortlandt mansion, 352
- Colonial landowners and merchants, 359
- Columbia College and University (see King's Coll.), 63; reopened and renamed, 147; removal, 147; locates in Bloomingdale, 302; view of, 303; library built, 305; Earl Hall, 305; Knowlton tablet, 305
- Columbia County, formed from Albany Co., 436; first road in, 445; fine farms, 446; first county seat, 450; county seat removed to Hudson, 450
- Columbus celebration, 82
- Colve, Capt. Anthony, Dutch governor, 16; marches down Broadway, 16; lands at the Commons, 86; takes fort, 88
- Colville, Lord, burnt in effigy, 100
- Colvin, omnibuses, 146
- Commission to lay out streets, personnel, 174; plan for Broadway, 179; plan for drill ground, 238
- Common Council, *see* Bd. of Aldermen
- Commons, the (or Fields), location, 21; proposed site of market, 39; gathering place, 84, 85; boundaries, 85; drill ground, 88; map, 89; place of execution, 87, 90, 95; powder-house, 90; almshouse, 90, 95, 96; kilns, 90; Provost prison, 92; bridewell, 92; New Jail, 92; boat burned, 98; Stamp Act demonstrations, 98; celebrations of repeal, 100, 101; liberty-poles, 92, 100, 101, 105; various meetings in, 102; Nathan Rogers hung in effigy, 105; "great meeting" in, 106; meeting of Sons of Liberty, 107; Declaration of Independence read, 108; potter's field, 108
- Concord, news of battle of, 107
- Conkling, Roscoe, counsel for Senate committee, 232
- Conklin's, in Tarrytown, 344
- Connecticut, disputes boundary, 8; stirs up Indians, 423
- Connolly, Richard B., "Slippery Dick," 229
- Conover, Stephen, merchant, 164
- Constitution, the Federal, 24; ratification by the State, 426, 427
- Constitution Island, chain across Hudson, 397, 410; Warner property, 410; fortifications, 410; to become Government property, 411
- Continental Village, history of, 400; small-pox inoculation at, 400
- Contoitt, John H., garden, 193, 194; becomes N. Y. Garden, 194; view of, 195
- Contraband trade, Philipse's interest in, 346; general in the colonies, 359
- Convention, Albany, its plans, 466
- Cooley, Keese & Hill, auctioneers, 75
- Cooper, James Fenimore, quoted, 85, 348, 412, 419; forms "Bread and Cheese" Club, 153, 154; resident of Broadway, 202, 208; memorial service for, 207; footnote, 364
- Cooper, Dr. Myles, first president of King's Coll., 147
- Cooper, Peter, at Union Sq. meeting, 226
- Cooper, Thomas, manager Park T., 166
- Corbett, John, tavern-keeper, 52
- Corean Embassy received by Pres't Arthur, 240
- Cornbury, Gov. Lord, dresses in women's garb, 16; Hyde Park named after him, 431
- Cornwallis, Lord, 47; goes through Spuyten Duyvil Creek, 341; entrapped at Yorktown, Va., 354; crosses Hudson River, 361; surrender of, 426
- Corrie, Joseph, opens Mt. Vernon Garden, 194
- Cortlandtville, original site of Peekskill, 397; Washington's hdqrs. at, 398; ancient cemetery, 398; entrance to Highlands, 407
- Cosine, Catherine, farm, 266
- Cosine, John, farm, 266
- Cosine, Rachel, farm, 266
- Coster, John G., house on Broadway, 137; how Astor bought his property, 138
- Cotte, confectioner, 137

- Counties, Province divided into, 343, 412, 436; State redistricted, 349, 425
- County court-house, cost, 112; authorized and built, 129; new site for, 130
- Courtenay, Lord, farm, 298; occupies Claremont, 300
- Cowboys, British irregulars, 364
- Cowman, John, farm, 222
- Cowpath, the (Pearl St.), 32
- Cox, garden, 194
- Cozzens, Frederick W., author *Sparrow-Grass Papers*, resident of Yonkers, 368
- Crabtree, Lotta, backs Park T., 235
- Cralo (or Crawler), terminus of Albany Post-road, 344; owned by De Laet, 461; conveyed to Johannes Van Rensselaer, 461
- Crane, Ichabod, character of Irving's, 368; crosses Pocantico brook, 381; original of, 451, 452
- Croaker Papers*, the, extract from, 75, 76
- Crom Elboge* (Crooked Elbow), Fishkill Creek, 415
- Croton dams, 388
- Croton Landing, 392
- Croton River, American posts on, 363, 391; N. boundary of Philipsburgh Manor, 387; Indian name, 387; ferry and bridge, 387; ferry, 388; bridge, 391; American post routed, 391
- Croton water, 28, 37, 225; celebration, 37, 82, 115, 116; aqueduct, 381, 385
- Crown Market, *see* Markets
- Cruger, Mrs., attacked by Americans, 283
- Crugers, village on Albany Post-road, 394
- "Cullen's Magnesium Shop," 76
- Cunningham, Capt. Wm., cruelty to American prisoners, 93, 105; whipped by Liberty Boys, 105; destroys liberty-pole, 105; hangs Nathan Hale, 121
- Custom-house, in the Whitehall, 14; in Government House, 26; present one on site of fort, 28, 30
- Cutting, Minnie Seligman, at Niblo's Garden, 205
- D
- Daly, Augustin, manager, 214, 217, 251
- Damen, Jan Jansen, farm, 10, 11, 68
- Dana, Charles, journalist, 156
- "Dandy" Cox, 168
- Danckers visits Claverack, 450
- Daughters of American Revolution, liberty-pole tablet, 105; try for custody of Morris house, 321; form Washington Hdqrs. Association, 323; tablet on Morris house, 323; Bronx Chapter places monument on Indian Field, 437
- Davenport brothers, spiritualists, at Hope Chapel, 218
- Davis, Abraham, erects Broadway Hotel, 186
- Davis, Charles, member "Bread and Cheese" Club, 154
- Dawson, Henry B., quoted in re Hamilton, footnote, 107
- Dawson, Robert, livery stable keeper, 76
- Dayton, Abram C., quoted, 201
- De Heere Graft*, Dutch name for Broad St., 8
- De Kay, member "Bread and Cheese" club, 154
- De Kay, Jacob, receives grant from Stuyvesant, 305
- De Laet secures Greenbush, 461; Greenbush called De Laet's Burg, 461
- De Lancey, Miss Charlotte, attacked by Americans, 283
- De Lancey, Etienne, Huguenot immigrant, 61; mansion, 61
- De Lancey, Lt.-Col. James, attempt to capture Col. Gist, 357
- De Lancey, Lt.-Gov. James, 62; describes the Highlands, 406
- De Lancey, Oliver, brigadier of loyalists, 283; mansion destroyed by Americans, 283; property confiscated, 284
- De Lancey, Madam Oliver, attacked by Americans, 283
- De Lancey, Peter, 62
- De Landt Poorte*, gate at Wall St. and Broadway, 9
- De Peyster, Abraham, becomes mayor, 18; statue in Bowling Green, 18

- De Peyster family, owners of property, 50
 De Peyster, James, farm, 298
 De Peyster, Nicholas, farm, 298
 De Vries, advice to Kieft, 383
 De Witt, trader, 2
 De Witt, Simeon, commissioner to lay out streets, 174
 Decatur, Capt. Stephen, banquet at City Hotel, 66; reception at City Hall, 115
 Declaration of Independence, news of, reaches city, 22; read to troops, 108; read at White Plains, 416
 Delacroix opens Vauxhall Garden on Bayard farm, 194
 Delmonico's, 28; uptown, 248
 Delonguemare, Nicholas, farm, 310
 Depew, Chauncey, delivers oration at André centenary, 375
 Dermer, Capt. Thomas, visits Manhattan, 8
 Dewey, Admiral George, return to U. S., 244; arch, 246
 Dey, Teunis, owner of Damen farm, 68
 Dickens, Charles, banquet at City Hotel, 67; 139, 156
 Dickey, Robert, farm, 310
 Ditch in Broad St., 6, 8
 Ditson & Co., music store, 222
 Dix, John A., at Union Sq. meeting, 226; Post, G. A. R., 314; grave in Trinity cemetery, 314
 Dix, Rev. Dr., describes departure of troops, 140-142
 Dobbs Ferry, 314; origin of name, 361; ferry at, 361; attempt to change name, 361, 362; in Neutral Ground, 363
 Dockstader, "Lew," minstrels, 250
 Doctors' Riot, 148, 149
 Dolbeer, Stephen, tavern-keeper at the Blue Bell, 332
 Dongan, Gov. Thomas, 14; cuts road across the Fields, 85; divides city into wards, 133; 309; grants in Dutchess Co., 414; grant to Peter Schuyler, 423; grant to Kips, 432; friendly to Livingston, 437; patent to Livingston, 439; confirms Claverack purchase, 448; patent to Schuyler in Kinderhook, 452; patent to town of Kinderhook, 454; confirms patent for Rensselaerswyck, 461; grants charter to Albany, 466
 Doughty, Elias, disposes of Van der Donck's land, 346
 Draft Riots, 126-128, 312
 Drake, Joseph Rodman, quoted, 75, 76; 155
 Draper, Wm., M.D., resident of Irvington, 369
 Drew, John, at Daly's T., 251; at Empire T., 261
 Duane, James, consulted by Bd. of Aldermen, 39; mayor, in Doctors' Riot, 149
 Duer, John and William, members "Bread and Cheese" Club, 154
 Dugdale & Searle, ropewalk, 136
 Duke of York and Albany, *see* James II.
 Duke's County formed, 412
 "Duke's Plan," the, 9
 Durland's Riding Academy, 274
 Dutch, charter New Netherland Trading Co., 2; traders, 2; form West India Co., 3—its objects, 3—destruction of archives, 4—trouble with Indians, 4, 5, 422, 434; settlers, 3, 6—at Harlem, 132; at Bloomingdale, 288; at Tarrytown, 383; above Highlands, 395; at Fishkill, 415; at Poughkeepsie 425; at Claverack, 452; at Albany, 466;—grants, 5, 6, 10; build fort, 12; reconquer N. Y., 16, 86, 88, 465; streets, 31; taverns, 42; holidays, 86
 Dutchess County, included Putnam Co., 401, 405; formation, 412; attached to Ulster Co., 412; boundaries, 414; Rhinebeck precinct, 432
 Dwight, Theodore, quoted about Croton River, 387
 Dyckman, meadows, 328; family as patriots, 330
 Dyckman, Alderman, farm, 175
 Dyckman, Jacob, builds Farmers' Bridge, 339; erects tavern, 340; tavern passes to Hyatt, 340
 Dyckman, Jan, home farm, 328; homestead, 328, 330
 Dyckman, Matthew, farm, 242
 Dyckman, Lieut. Wm., killed at Eastchester, 330; monument, 330

E

Earle, Gen. Ferdinand P., last owner of Jumel property, 321
 Eastburn, James, & Co., booksellers, 75, 76
 Eastchester, Lt. Dyckman killed at, 330; British post, 364
 Eckford, Henry, 158
 Eden, Medeef, farm, 266
 Edward VII. (Prince of Wales), reception to, 82
 Eliot, Lt.-Gov. Andrew, "Minto" estate, 178
 Ellerslie, estate of Levi P. Morton, 434
 Ellsler, Fannie, caricatured by Mitchell, 200, 201
 Elm, or Wendell, Park, formerly Apthorpe estate, 286; drill ground for troops, 286; Orange picnics at, 286
 Elting, patentee of Kipsburgh Manor, 432
 Embargo Act injures Hudson's trade, 457
 Emmerick, Lt.-Col., defeats Stockbridge Indians, 353; attempt to capture Col. Gist, 357
 Emmet farm, 266
 English, first visitors, 8; settlement on Westchester Creek, 8; church, 58
 English, Jane, manager, 214
 Epidemics, 41, 77, 78, 129
 Equitable Life Insurance Building, 74
 Erie Canal, 115, 467
 Esopus Indians, wars with, 423, 434; sell land to Kips, 432
Esquatak, Indian name of Schodac, 436
 Evertsen, Admiral, reconquers N. Y. for Dutch, 16

F

Fair, annual, 15; cattle, 15
 Fall Kill, at Poughkeepsie, 424; power stream, 425
 Farmers' Bridge, view of, 329; constructed as a free bridge, 339
 Farms, 10, 11; W. I. Co.'s., 6, 59; the King's, 59, 135; the Queen's, 136; Dominie's, 136, 445; church,

136, 445; Bayard's, 175; Herring's, 175; Dyckman's, 175; Bleecker's, 175; Brevoort's, 179; Van Oblinus, 310; Gen. Montgomery's at Kingsbridge, 353; others, 222, 242, 266, 282, 283, 298, 310
 Farragut, Admiral David G., statue, 246; resident of Hastings, 369
 Fauconier, Peter, grant of Hyde Park, 431
 Faulkner, Benjamin, establishes brewery in Hudson, 457
 Fenton, Gov., reviews troops, 227
 Ferry, to Fort Lee, 305, 308, 310, 333; Harlem, 338, 339, 344
 Fever, yellow, 41, 77, 78
 Field, Cyrus W., erects Washington Building, 45; lays Atlantic cable, 115; 161
 Fields, the, *see* the Commons.
 Fifth Ave., omnibuses, 146, 147
 Firemen, at work, 20; anecdote of, at Barnum's, 197
 Fire protection, buckets, 10; wells, 34, 36
 Fires: Province House, 20; great fire of 1835, 37, 41; of 1776, 42, 52, 68, 71; of Barnum's, 199, 211
 Fishkill, 407, 412; in Rombout grant, 414; origin of name, 415; legislature at, 416; military dépôt, 417; State Constitution printed at, 419; historic houses, 419, 420
 Fisk, James, death of, 187
 Fitzroy road, 234
 Flagg, Major, monument, 330
 Flatiron Building, site of, 235; construction, 236
 Fleischmann, restaurant and bread line, 181
 Fletcher, Gov. Benj., privateering, 43; Established Church, 58; favors privateering, 346; unfriendly to Livingston, 438
 Florence, William, at Star T., 211
 Floyd & Co., auctioneers, 272
 Floyd, Miss Elizabeth, attacked by Americans, 283
 Fordham Village, 340, 348, 349; British outpost, 363
 Forrest, Edwin, Astor Pl. riot, 196; at Broadway T., 213
 Forrest, Mrs. Edwin, 53

- Fort Cralo, oldest habitation in U. S., 461; hdqrs. of Gen. Abercrombie, 461; "Yankee Doodle" written in, 461; owned by D. A. R., 462; view of, 462
- Fort Washington, capture of, 94, 341, 361; site of, 314, 324; Park, 324, 326; defence by Magaw, 326; becomes Ft. Knyphausen, 326; tablet, 328
- Forts, at Castle I., 2; on Manhattan I., 2; W. I. Co's., 4; Ft. Amsterdam, 12;—Van Twiller's, 12; site of, 14; centre of provincial life, 14, 16; Willem Hendrick, 16; Ft. James, 16; Kalm's description, 20; lat. and long. of, 21; Sons of Liberty at, 22; council, 24; dismantled, 24; British evacuate, 24; demolition of, 25; relics from, 25; State sells to city, 27; sold by city, 27; "Steamship Row," 28; site for custom-house, 28;—British: 148, 174, 175, 341; Knyphausen, 326; Prince Charles and Cock Hill, 341;—American: Ft. Tryon, 295, 326, 328; Ft. Washington, 314, 324, 328; Ft. Lee, 321, 326; Ft. George on Laurel Hill, 328; Ft. Independence at Kingsbridge, 341, 350; at Kingsbridge, 350; Verplanck's Point, 394; Ft. Independence in the Highlands, 397;—War of 1812, 124, 307;—Ft. Orange, later Albany, 463;—becomes Ft. Nassau, 465
- Fortescue, George, at Niblo's, 205
- "Forty Thieves," the, Bd. of Aldermen, 229
- Fourth of July, old time celebration, 117
- Fox, Charles K., in *Humpty Dumpty*, 214
- Fox, George L., in *Humpty Dumpty*, 214
- Franchise for surface railway on Broadway, 228, 231
- Francis, Chas. S., & Co., booksellers, 75
- Francis, Dr., quoted, 64
- Franklin, Dr. Benj., quoted, 34; at Van Cortlandt manor-house, 391; plan of colonial union, 466
- Fraunce's Tavern, 63, 64
- Frémont, Gen. John C., resident of Mt. Pleasant, 369
- French, Daniel, sculptor, 30
- French wars, palisades repaired, 9; Battery constructed, 18; delay settlement of Livingston's Manor, 439; importance of Albany, during, 466
- Freshwater pond, *see* the Collect
- Frohman, Charles, manager, 260, 268
- Fuller Co. erects Flatiron Building, 236
- Fulton, Robert, grave of, 60; centenary, 115, 301; experiments with steamboats, 444; museum at Claverack, 444
- Funerals: Hamilton, 82; Montgomery, 82, 435; André, 82; Monroe, 82; Taylor, 82; Clay, 82; Webster, 82; Worth, 82; Lincoln, 82; Grant, 82; Clinton, 82
- Fuyck*, the, first Dutch name for Albany, 465
- G
- Gage, Gen., 22; hdqrs., 46
- Gaines, printer, 74
- Gallows Hill, origin of name, 399
- Garbage, removal of, 49; hogs, 40, 41
- Gardens, character of, 193; Montagnie's U. S., 193; Parise's, 193; Contoit's, 193, 195; Cox's, 194; Mt. Vernon, 194; Ranelagh, 194; Vauxhall, 194—hired by Barnum, 194; Columbia, 202; Niblo's, 202
- Gardequi, Don Diego de, occupies Kennedy house, 44
- Garrison, Wm. Lloyd, 183
- Garrisons, 408; fine estates, 409
- Gates, land and water, 9; *Zealandia*, 9; discovery of foundations, 10
- Gates, Gen. Horatio, 433
- Gaynor, Mayor William, vetoes Stilwell bill, 131; 142
- Genêt, Citizen, 176
- George III., statue of, 22; destroyed, 22, 23
- George, Henry, 31
- Germans, parade, 82; settlers above the Highlands, 415; 432
- Germon, Effie, at Wallack's T., 210

- Getty Square, in Yonkers, 355, 356
 Gettysburg, battle of, 128
 Ghent, treaty of, 124
 Gifford, Sanford, resident of Hudson, 459
 Gilbert, Cass, architect of custom-house, 30
 Gilbert, John, at Wallack's T., 210
 Gilbert, Mrs., at Daly's T., 251
 Gilsey estate, Princess T., anecdote of "Sam." T. Jack, 250
 Gimbel Brothers, department store, 252, 255
 "Gingerbread" man, 167
 Gist, Colonel, courts Widow Babcock, 357; escapes capture, 357
 Goelet, Peter, mansion, 223
 Golden Hill, battle of, 103
 Goodrich, A. T., & Co., booksellers, 76
 Gorham Co., silversmiths, 223
 Gottsberger, John, farm, 282
 Gould, Helen Miller, Lyndehurst estate in Tarrytown, 370, 371; her patriotism, 371; conservatories, 371
 Gould, Jay, historian of Delaware Co., 369; resident of Tarrytown, 369, 371
 Goupil & Co., 181
 Government, first city, 10
 Government House, built, 25; occupied by Governors Clinton and Jay, 26; description of, 26; becomes custom-house, 26; sale and destruction of, 27; footnote, 55
 Governor's house at Albany, 465
 "Governors' Room" in City Hall, 114
 Gramercy pond, 237
 Grant, Mayor Hugh J., 232; appoints Rapid Transit Commission, 279
 Grant, Gen. U. S., funeral, 82; lies in state, 117; tomb, 276, 278, 295, 300, 301, 320
 Grasse, Comte de, arrives off Chesapeake Bay, 354
 Great Britain acquires New Netherland, 16
 "Great White Way," 86, 256, 257, 262
 Greeley, Horace, 156
 Greenburgh township, 360; Dobbs Ferry, 362
 Greenbush, Indian Castle at, 436; terminus of post-road, 459; now called Rensselaer, 461; Ft. Cralo, 461; military dépôt during War of 1812, 462; ferry to Albany, 465; bridge to Albany, 465
 Greene, Lt.-Col., monument to, 330
 Greene, Maj.-Gen. Nathanael, presides at André court-martial, 378
 Greenwich Village, during fever epidemics, 78; removal of old Newgate from, 386
 Grenville, Lord, proposes Stamp Act, 97; effigy burned, 100
 Greystone, estate at Yonkers, 360
 Griscom, Dr. John, footnote, 96
 Guérin's restaurant, 186
 Guernsey cattle at Ellerslie, 434

H

- Hale, Capt. Nathan, statue, 118; sketch of his life, 119-121; date of journey, 306
 Hall, Asa, establishes stage to Greenwich, 145
 Hall of Records (old), site, 90; view, 93
 Hall of Records (new), 95
 Halleck, Fitz-Greene, quoted, footnote, 56, 75, 76, 96, 155, 168, 199; 154, 157; lines on death of Lieut. Allen, 459
 Hamblin, "Tom," manager, 213
 Hamilton, Alexander, procession in honor of, 24, 25; lives on Broadway, 52; grave of, 60; funeral, 82; at the Fields, 106; 121; makes Randall's will, 178; "Grange," 316, 317; duel with Burr, 316, 321, 451; thirteen trees, 316; meets Washington, 319; supports adoption of Federal Constitution, 427; guest at Van Schaack house, 454
 Hamilton, Elizabeth, farm, 310; "dear Betsy," 316
Hamilton, Federal Ship, in parade, 25
 Hamilton, James, farm, 283
 Hammerstein, Oscar, builds Olympia, 268
 Hammond, Abijah, 176

- Hampden Hall, hdqrs. Sons of Liberty, 104; site, 196
 Hardenbrook, John, farm, 282
 Hardy, Gov. Sir Charles, banquet to, 62
 Harlem, settlement of, 132; boundaries, 308; grants to, 309; division of common lands, 309; grant to Kiersen, 317; wading place, 328; mere, 333; ferry, 338, 339, 344
 Harlem Heights, battle of, 305-307; moral effect of battle, 307
 Harlem Lane, part of Boston road, 297
 Harlem River, ferry, 338, 339, 344; steamboats, 341
 Harper, Mayor, stops aldermanic tea-parties, 117; clears up public parks, 238
 Harper, William, opposes adoption of Federal Constitution, 426
 Harrigan & Hart, at Wood's Theatre Comique, 216; open their own theatre, 218
 Harriman, Mrs. E. H., gift of park to State, 386
 Harrison, Pres't Wm. Henry, funeral, 82
 Harsen farms, 266, 274, 288
 Harsenville, Bloomingdale, 288
 Hart, Eli, & Co., in bread riots, 125, 126
 Hastings, 360; Cornwallis crosses river at, 361; fight in, 361; home of Admiral Farragut, 369
 Haswell, Charles H., quoted, 117, 188
 Havemeyer mansion, 33, 265; farm, 266
 Haverly, J. H., minstrels, 250
 Hawthorne, Nathaniel, 139
 Hayes, Jacob, farm, 266
 Hayward, William, farm, 298
 Headless Horseman, legend of, 361, 368, 381
 Hearts of Oak, Revolutionary militia, 77
 Heath, Maj.-Gen. William, hdqrs. at Blue Bell tavern, 332; mentions Hyatt's tavern, 340; attempts to recover Ft. Independence, 341, 353; commands in the Highlands, 397; visited by De Chastellux, 418
 Heathcote, Col. Caleb, grant at Hyde Park, 431
Heere Straat, becomes Broadway, 31; Peek located on, 395
Heerewegh, becomes Boston post-road, 85
 Heermance Place built by Kip, 432
 Hegeman farm, 266
 Heidelberg Building, 259
 Hendricks, Harmon, buys Vandenheuvel property, 294
 Henriques farm, 298
Herald, N. Y., at Ann St., 199; at 36th St., 253, 254
 Herbert, Henry W. (Frank Forester), suicide of, 189
 Herkimer, Gen., descended from Palatines, 440
 Hermann, magician, at Star T., 211
 Heron, Matilda, at Laura Keene's Varieties T., 213
 Herring estate, 175
 Hessians, at Ft. Washington, 326; at Trenton, 332; at Marble Hill, 342; stupidity of, 357; encounter with, at Hastings, 361
 Highland Turnpike Co., fills in marsh at Kingsbridge, 345; secures Albany Post-road, 360; new road through Highlands, 399, 407; 445; opens road to Hudson, 458
 Highlands, the, 363, 395; military importance of, 396; fortifications in, 397; various commanders of, 397; post-road through, 399; milestones in, 399; Morris's ode to, 401; autumnal beauties of, 401; description of, by Gov. Hunter, 405; descriptions by Colden and De Lancey, 406; minerals in, 407; at Cold Spring, 412; called Matteawan by Indians, 415; visit of De Chastellux, 418
 Hill, Harry, dance-hall, 213
 Hispanic Society of America, 316
 Historical Society, New York, 24; formed, 116
 Hoffman, Charles Fenno, editor, 75, 156
 Hog (or Boar) Hill, site of American encampment, 360
 Hogg, Thomas, florist, 158; gardens, 159

- Hogs as street scavengers, 41
 Holidays, observance of, 86
 Holland E. M., at Wallack's T., 210
 Holland, George, at Olympic T., 200; appears in minstrels, 216
 Holland, John J., conducts panorama, 166
 Holland Society, tablet at No. 1 Broadway, 2; tablet at City Hotel site, 67
 Hollow Way, the, location, 305; 315; Matje David's Vly, 333
 Hollywood Inn, how established, 355; view, 356
 Holt, John, printer, at Poughkeepsie during Revolution, 426
 Hone, Philip, at City Hotel, 66; view of house, 99; pavement on Broadway, 135; location of house, 137; 154; quoted, 177; quoted in regard to Burr-Jumel wedding, 319; visit to Tarrytown, 371; visit to Hyde Park, 430
 Hopper, Andrew, occupies Hampden Hall, 196, 268; farm, 266, 267, 272; view of house, 267; married at Bloomingdale, 290
 Horn, John, owner of site of Madison Sq., 238, 242
 Hosack, Dr., at Hyde Park, 430
 Hospital, New York, site, 134; founded and built, 148; reopened, 148; "Doctors' Riot" at, 148, 149; beauty of grounds, 150; lunatic asylum opened, 150; removal of, 150; new site, 150; view of, 151; Bloomingdale Asylum, 298, 302
 Hospital, St. Luke's, location, 302
 Hotels: Adelphi, 52; American, formerly Philip Hone's house, 137; Athenæum, 166; Barnum's (Howard house), 53; Broadway, Whig hdqrs., 186—drill-room of 2d Co., Seventh Regt., 186; Bunker Mansion, formerly McComb house, 51; Carlton, 166, 187; City, *see* City Hotel; Fifth Ave., patronized by presidents, 240—view, 241; Florence's, 167, 187; Irving, 160; La Farge, destroyed by fire, 207—becomes Grand Central Hotel, 207; Metropolitan, view, 203—erected, 204; McAlpin, now in course of erection, 254; National, 74, 75; New York, popular with Southerners, 186—connected with schemes of Confederacy, 186; 187; N. Y. Athenæum, 72; Raleigh, recently demolished, 187; Sinclair, recently demolished, 187; Spingler House, 222; Stevens House, 48—suicide of "Frank Forrester" in, 189; Sturtevant, resort of army and navy officers, 248; St. Germain, on site of Flatiron Building, 236; St. Nicholas, 187; Tremont, 176; Tremont Temperance, 53, 72; Washington, in Kennedy mansion, 44; Washington Hall, 67—construction, 153—Lawrence banquet at, 153—view of, 153—"Bread and Cheese" Club formed at, 153—bought by A. T. Stewart, 160
 Houston, "Sam," at Astor House, 139
 Howard, Keeler & Scofield, tailors, 53
 Howe, Sir William, hdqrs., 44; at Apthorpe house, 288; battle of Harlem Heights, 307
 Howells, Wm. Dean, at Pfaff's, 189
 Hudson, 447; becomes county-seat, 450; location, 456; history of, 454-458; ale, 457
 Hudson, Henry, explores river, 1; bi-centenary, 82, 116; tri-centenary, 115, 300; anchors off Croton R., 388; reaches Peekskill Bay, 395; explorations near Albany, 462
 Huguenot settlers above Highlands, 415
 Hull, tavern-keeper, 64
 Hull, Capt. Isaac, banquet at City Hotel, 66; reception at City Hall, 115
 Hull, Capt. William, writes of Hale's execution, 121
 Hunter, Dr. Thomas, president of Normal School, 178
 Hunter, Gov., 309; reports on the Highlands, 405; reports on Palatines on Livingston Manor, 439
 Huntington, Archer M., his generosity, 316

Hutchins, John, tavern-keeper, 45
Hyde Park, 430; in "Nine Partners' Grant," 431; origin of name, 431
Hydrographic Office, U. S., time light, 70, 71; continues publication of *Blunt's Coast Pilot*, 370

I

Ide, Teunis, grant from Stuyvesant, 298
Indian Field, scene of Indian defeat, 353; monument on, 436
Indians, wars with the Dutch, 4, 383, 422, 423; Dutch treaty with, 15, 463; confer with Gov. Clinton, 19, 20; villages, 343, 372; defeat of Stockbridge tribe, 353; fur trade with, 359; Kitchiwons on Croton R., 387; punitive expedition against Iroquois, 390; Sackhoes, later Peekskill, 395; Wicopees in Highlands, 412; Wappingers, 422; Esopus tribe, 424; Sepiscoots, 433; battle-field at Upper Red Hook, 433, 437; Iroquois, 433; Esopus war with Dutch, 434; Mohican defeat and wanderings, 436, 437; Narragansetts, 437; attack at Kinderhook, 454; trade with, 465
Innes, J. H., quoted concerning Whitehall, 14
Invalids in Continental army, 418
Inwood, 295; station, 324; Ft. Tryon at, 328
Irving, Henry, at Star T., 211; at Knickerbocker T., 260
Irving, John Treat, brother of Washington, 57
Irving, Washington, anecdote of, 50, 51; residence on Broadway, 53; footnote, 57; banquet to, 66; toastmaster, 67; engaged to Miss Hoffman, 75; *Knickerbocker's History of New York* quoted, 79, 80, 82; ref., 139, 154, 207, 430; story of Spuyten Duyvil Creek, 336, 337; home at Sunnyside, 364, 367; letter of, 364, 366; portrait, 365; description of Sunnyside, 366; gives origin of name Tarrytown, 372;

tablet on Christ Church, 372; grave in Sleepy Hollow Cemetery, 384; Lowell's lines on, 384; story of Anthony's Nose mountain, 404; visitor at Lindenwald, 451, 452; guest at Van Schaack house, 454

Irving, William, footnote, 57

Irvington, origin of name, 364

Irwin Sisters at Tony Pastor's, 216

J

Jack, "Sam" T., anecdote of, 250
Jackson, Andrew, 139; at New Orleans, 434
Jacques, Moses, chairman of meeting, panic of 1837, 125
Jaehne, Alderman, punished for bribery, Broadway railroad, 232
Jail, New, *see* Provost prison
James II., lord-proprietor, 16; abdication, 17; farm, 135; second title given to Albany, 465
Jameson, Lt.-Col., receives André as a prisoner, 377; his bad judgment, 377; recalls André, 400
Jans, Annetje, inherits farm, 136; wife of Roelof Jansen, 445
Jansen, Matthys, grant from Kieft, 328; part of grant given to Vervecelen, 338; heirs attempt to recover land, 338
Jansen, Roelof, grant of land to, 5; widow remarries, 136; kill named after, 414, 438; sketch of career, 445
Japanese embassy, reception to, 82
Jarrett & Palmer produce *The Black Crook* at Niblo's, 204
Jauncey, Miss, marries Col. Thorne, 286
Jay family residents of Broadway, 48
Jay, Gov. John, occupies Government House, 26; burnt in effigy, 26; gives land for Broadway, 134; injured in Doctors' Riot, 149; upholds adoption of Federal Constitution, 427; guest at Van Schaack house, 454
Jay, Peter, leases Bowling Green, 19
Jefferson, Joseph, at Laura Keane's Varieties T., 213

- Jeffrey's Point, site of Ft. Washington, 315, 324
 Jenkins, Thomas, leader of the founders of Hudson, 24
 Jenner, Dr. William, experiments with vaccination, 400
 Jennings, Chester, of the City Hotel, 67, 76
 Johnson, Gen., describes departure of British from Provost prison, 94
 Johnson, Dr. Samuel, simplified spelling, 412
 Joinville, Prince de, banquet to, 139
 Jones, omnibuses, 146
 Jones, Capt. Jacob, banquet at City Hotel, 66; reception at City Hall, 115
 Jones, Judge, describes attack on De Lancey mansion, 283
 Jones, Samuel, legal opinion asked by the Corporation, 39
 Juet commands the *Half-Moon*, 1
 Jumel, Madam, entertains, 319; marries Burr, 319; separates from Burr, 321; her later life, 321
 Jumel, Stephen, farms, 283, 310; acquires Morris property, 319; entertains, 319; death, 319
 Juries, appeal from, 64
 Juvenile Asylum, at Madison Sq., 238; on Washington Heights, 314
- K
- Kalck Hook, fortifications on, 148
 Kalm, Professor, description of the fort, 20
 Keene, Laura, manager, 207, 213
 Kelly & Leon, minstrels, 193
 Kemble, Gouverneur, associate of Irving, 411; establishes Cold Spring Foundry, 411
 Kennedy, Capt. Archibald, collector of port, 43-45; refuses to aid Colden, 98
 Kennedy house, at No. 1 Broadway, 44; hdqrs. of American and British generals, 44; André's connection with, 44; later occupants, 44, 45; site of Washington Building, 45
 Kent, Chancellor, guest at Van Schaack house, 454
 Kidd, Capt. William, pirate, 346; recommended by Livingston, 438
 Kieft, Gov. William, Indian wars, 4, 383, 422, 423; builds fort and church, 12, 13; orders fair, 15; 24; grant to Pieters, 309; grants to Jansen and Aertsen, 328
 Kiersen, Hendrick, original owner of Morris property, 317
 Kiersted, Lucas, house on Broadway, 33
 Kimberly, G., farm, 282
 Kind, Arthur, farm, 242
 Kinderhook, principal street, 445; origin of name, 450; first grants in, 452; Indians attack, 454
 Kinderhook Creek, 445
 King, Rufus, member "Bread and Cheese" Club, 154; buys Clarkson property, 166
 King's Arms Tavern, 45; Gage's hdqrs., 46; becomes Atlantic Garden, 46; quarters of Arnold, 46
 Kingsbridge, 258, 315; Indian name of, 345; township formed, 350; becomes part of N. Y. City, 350; sewer in, 350; British post, 363
 Kingsbridge road, act of Provincial Assembly forming, 297, 298; merges with Broadway, 308, 323; maintenance of, 310; ref., 321, 328
 King's College, opening of, 63; meeting of governors of, 64; Hamilton at, 106; 137; founding of, 147; used as barracks, 147; becomes Columbia Coll., 147
 King's Ferry, allied armies cross, 355; location of, 355, 394; André and Smith cross, 394
 Kingsland, Ambrose C., acquires Philipse Castle, 381
 Kip, Hendrick, grant of Rhinebeck, 432; builds Heermance Place, 432
 Kip, Jacobus, grant in Dutchess Co., 414; grant of Rhinebeck, 432
 Kipp & Brown, stage owners, 145
 Kitchiwonks, Indian tribe on Croton R., 387; village of Sackhoes, later Peekskill, 395
 Knickerbocker authors, sketches of, 154-158
 Knickerbocker, Diedrich, pseudonym of Irving, 79; symbol of New York City, 157
 Knickerbocker families, origin of, 243

Knowlton, Lt.-Col., commands Rangers, 120; tablet to, 304, 305; in battle of Harlem Heights, 306
 Knox, Gen. Henry, at Van Cortlandt mansion, 353; at Dobbs Ferry, 363
 Knyphausen, Lt.-Gen., hdqrs. at Morris house, 318, 319; Ft. Washington renamed after, 326
 Kocks, Pieter (and Annetje), keep tavern at No. 1 Broadway, 42
 Kossuth, Louis, reception to, 82
 Krigier, Martin, tavern-keeper, 42; site of tavern, 45; in war with Esopus Indians, 434

L

Labadists describe Claverack, 450
 Lafayette, Marquis de, reception to, 82, 115; statue at Union Sq., 224; Guards, 228; anecdote of, 236; traps Cornwallis, 354; at Van Cortlandt manor-house, 391; visits Poughkeepsie, 428; visits Hudson, 458
 Lamb, Col. John, buys site for liberty-pole, 92, 102
 Landings, river, 430
 Landon, Melville D. (Eli Perkins), resident of Yonkers, 368
 Langdon, Walter, house on Broadway, 176
 Langstaff, Dr. William, friend of Halleck and Drake, 158
 Langtry, Mrs. Lily, first American appearance, 235
 Lansing, John, opposes adoption of Federal Constitution, 426
 Laurel Hill, site of Ft. George, 328
 Lauzun, Duc de, at Van Cortlandt manor-house, 392
 Lawrence, Capt. James, grave of, 60; commands *Chesapeake* in her fight with the *Shannon*, 60; reception at City Hall, 115
 Lawrence, John, buys Clarkson property, 166; farm, 310
 Leake and Watts Orphan Asylum, site of P. E. cathedral, 302
 Leavitt, Jonathan, bookseller, 74
 Leavitt, Trow & Co., booksellers, 75
 Lee, Gen. Charles, hdqrs., 44, 108; arrives in N. Y. with American troops, 108
 Lee, "Light Horse Harry," in plot to capture Arnold, 46
 Leisler, Jacob, becomes governor, 17; trial of, 17; execution, 18, 90; remains disinterred, 18; Parliament removes attainder against, 18; Livingston his enemy, 437
 Leislerians, political party, 18
 Leitch, Major, killed in battle of Harlem Heights, 306
 Lent's Circus on Broadway, 208
 Lewis, Dr. Dio, resident of Yonkers, 368
 Lewis, James, at Daly's T., 251
 Lexington, news of battle reaches city, 107
 Liberty-pole, site of, 92; first one erected, 101; others erected, 101, 102; attacks on, 104, 105; final destruction by Cunningham, 105; tablet to commemorate, 105
 Library, Society, sketch of, 164
 Lighting, street, 37, 38
 "Lime-kiln" man, 167
 Lincoln, Pres't Abraham, funeral, 82; lies in state, 117; 139; statue in Union Sq., 224
 Lincoln, Gen. Benjamin, captures British outpost, 353
 Lind, Jennie, 139, 206
 Lindenwald, 449; built by Judge Van Ness, 450; Irving visits, 451, 452; home of Van Buren, 452
 Lisenard, Leonard, meadows, 171, 172, 234, 332
 Livingston, Brockholst, farm, 283; becomes owner of Apthorpe estate, 286
 Livingston, John, Tory, 442
 Livingston, Philip, second manor-lord, 441; his five sons, 442
 Livingston, Philip, signer of the Dec. of Independence, 442
 Livingston, Philip Van Brugh, changes name of Dobbs Ferry, 361; house, hdqrs. of Washington, 362, 363; 442
 Livingston, Robert, first in N. Y., 437; sketch of his life, 437-441; his character, 441; his will, 441
 Livingston, Robert, second, inherits Clermont, 441, 442; drives off Indians at Kinderhook, 454

- Livingston, Robert R., judge of supreme court, 443; letter from his wife, 444, 445
- Livingston, Chancellor Robert R., Jr., leases Bowling Green, 24; upholds adoption of Federal Constitution, 427; 433; his public services, 443; his house burnt by British, 444; experiments with steam navigation, 444; his partnership with Fulton, 444; introduces merino sheep, 444
- Livingston, Walter, his daughter marries Fulton, 444
- Livingston, William, war governor of N. J. during Revolution, 442
- Livingston's Landing, Dobbs Ferry, 361, 363
- Livingston Manor, 414; estates on post-road, 434; patent for, 439, 440; manor-house erected, 439; Palatine settlement, 439; survey and map made, 440
- Livingston township, 439
- Lockyer, Capt., brings tea to N. Y., 106
- Loew bridge at Fulton St., 78, 79
- Long Island, battle of, 24
- Long Island Sound, explorations of, 2
- Loockermans, Govert, farm on *Heere Straat*, 10
- Lorillard, Jacob, farm, 283
- Lorillard, Pierre, owner of Olympic T. and Tattersall's, 200
- Loring, Commissary, cruelty to American prisoners, 93
- Lossing, Benson J., resident of Poughkeepsie, 428; his historical works, 428, 429
- Lots, value of, 10; vacant, 31; extend to Hudson R., 42; price of No. 11 Broadway, 50; cor. Wall St. and Broadway, 53; above Trinity, 68
- Lottery, to build Sandy Hook lighthouse, 63; to build New Jail, 92; in City Hall Park, 124; for King's Coll., 147
- Louden, Lord, opens road through the Highlands, 407
- Louden, Samuel, prints State Constitution at Fishkill, 419
- Louis XIV. desolates the Palatine, 61
- Louis Philippe teaches school in Somerindyke house, 295
- Love Lane, 234
- Lovejoy's restaurant, 186
- Lovelace, Gov., establishes post to Boston, 21; acquires "Dominie's bouwerie," 136; establishes Harlem ferry, 338
- Lowell, James Russell, 224; lines on Irving, 384
- Lower party, term applied to British in Neutral Ground, 364; André's reference to, 376
- Loyalists, 62
- Ludlow, Daniel, offers to lease Bowling Green, 24
- Ludlow, Gabriel V., house on Broadway above Canal St., 176
- Ludlow, Robert Fulton, maintains Fulton museum at Claverack, 443, 444
- Luycas, Evert, grant in Kinderhook, 452
- Lydig, Philip, house on site of Astor House, 137
- Lyndehurst, Gould estate at Tarrytown, 370

M

- McComb mansion occupied by Pres't Washington, 50
- McCullough, John, at Star T., 210
- McDonald, John B., contractor for subway, 280
- McDougal, Gen. Alexander, imprisoned for sedition, 104; 107; has Highland command, 397
- McGill, Sarah, farm, 283
- McGowan's Pass, fortifications at, 124; British reinforcements called from, 307
- McKenzie, Alexander Slidell, resident of Mt. Pleasant, 369
- McKesson, John, resident on Broadway, 162
- McVickers, John, farm, 283
- Mabie, Hamilton W., resident of N. Tarrytown, 369
- Macmonnies, Frederick, sculptor of Hale statue, 119
- Macomb, Gen. Alexander, home at Kingsbridge, 347; house visited by Poe, 348; house becomes Godwin house, 348; establishes mills and dams, 348

- Macomb St., causeway, 345, 348
 Macready, 139; riot, 196; at Broadway T., 213
 Madison Cottage, 238, 240
 Madison Sq. park, 236, 237; potter's field, 238; receives name, 238; occupied by squatters, 238
 Magaw, Gen. Robert, prisoner, 91; defence of Ft. Washington, 326
Maison Dorée, restaurant, 222
 Mall, the, promenade on Broadway, 61, 63
 Manhattan College, 308
 Manhattan Co., 10; formed, 34
 Manhattan Gaslight Co. lights streets, 37
 Manhattan Indians, 343
 Manhattan Island, fort on, 2; first habitations of whites, 2; Minuits' colony, 3; Argall's visit to, 8; Dermer's visit to, 8; passage from, to mainland, 337-339; exempted from patroonships, 459
 Manhattan Life Building, weather bureau on, 74
 Manhattanville, site of, 308; 315
 Mann, Alvah, manager Broadway T., 213
 Mann, Miss Margaret, boarding-house, 52
 Manning, Capt. John, surrenders fort to Dutch, 86; court-martialled, 88
 Maps, N. Y. in 1642, 5; "Duke's plan," 9; first, of city, 10; Montgomerie, 34; of the Commons, 89
 Marble Hill, British forts on, 341
 Marble houses, 177; Scudder's and City Hall, 196
Marckveldt 't, Dutch name for Bowling Green, 14; *steegie*, 14
 Marketfield, 14
 Markets, meat, 15, 38; erection of, 38; Oswego, 38-40; Crown, 40; Broadway, 40
 Marquand, Henry G., Union League Club at his house, 229
 Marschalk surveys Broadway, 134
 Marshall, Ethelbert A., manager Broadway T., 213
 Martelaer's (or Martyr's) reach and island, Constitution I., 410
 Marx, Henry, called "Dandy," 168, 169; farm, 298
 Masonic Hall, erection, 162; view of, 163; becomes Gothic Hall, 164
 Masons, Scottish Rite, acquire Madison Ave. Pres. C., 291
 Massachusetts, claims land to Hudson R., 422; disputes with Livingston tenants, 441
 Matje David's Vly, the Hollow Way, 333
 Matteawan, Indian name of Highlands, 415
 May, Dutch trader, 2
 Megapolensis, Dominie, house on the *Ileere Straat*, 42
 "Merritt's Folly," in Tarrytown, 371
 Merwin, Jesse, original of Ichabod Crane, 451
 Mestayer, Harry, at Niblo's, 205
 Metropolitan Life Building, time light on, 71
 Miantonomah, Indian chief, 437
 Middle Road, *see* Broadway
 Milborne, Jacob, son-in-law of Leisler, 17; trial and execution, 17, 18; body exhumed and reburied, 18; Parliament removes attainder, 18; execution, 90; upbraids Livingston from scaffold, 438
 Milderberger, Christian, farm, 222
 Milestones, at Hawthorne St., 330; through the Highlands, 399, footnote, 399
 Minstrels, 193; Congo and Negro, 212; Buckley's, 214; San Francisco, 214, 250; Wood's, 216; Wood & Christy's, 216; Kelly & Leon's, 218; Haverly's, 250; Dockstader's, 250
 "Minto" estate, sketch of, 178, 179
 Minuits, Peter, colony, 3
 Mitchell, William, comedian, anecdote of, 200, 201
 Modjeska, Madam, at Star T., 210
 Mohawk Indians, battle with Mohicans, 433, 436; war with Mohicans, 450; near Albany, 466
 Mohican Indians, villages, 343; location and removals, 436, 437; become Stockbridge Indians, 437; war with Mohawks, 450
 Monroe, Pres't James, funeral, 82

- Montagnie tavern, hdqrs., Sons of Liberty, 102, 104, 193; United States Garden, 193
- Montgomery, Janet Livingston, 72; life at Montgomery Place, 434; passage of the General's body, 435
- Montgomery, Gen. Richard, sketch of, 72; funeral, 82; farm at Kingsbridge, 353; *Life of*, 434; removal of body to New York, 435; guest at Van Schaack house, 454
- Montessor, Capt., informs Americans of Hale's execution, 120
- Montrose Village, 394
- Monuments: prison martyrs, 61; Worth, 244-246, 459; Dewey arch, 244; Audubon, 314; Ft. Washington, 328; at Yorktown, Westchester Co., 330; on Indian Field, 354, 437; at Dobbs Ferry, 362, 363; André captors, 373, 374; Seth Pomeroy, 396, 398; Paulding, 398; Van Buren, 451
- Moore farm, 310
- Moore, Gov. Sir Henry, 98; favorable to provincials, 100
- Morgan, William, Freemason, mystery of, 162
- Morningside Heights, 305; old fortifications, 307
- Morris, George P., 155; ode to the Highlands, 401; estate at Undercliff, 411
- Morris, Gouverneur, street commissioner, 174; relations with Louis Philippe, 295
- Morris, Col. Roger, companion of Washington, 317; marries Mary Philipse, 318; builds mansion on Harlem R., 318; estates confiscated, 318; acquires part of Highlands, 405
- Morris, Roger (or Jumel), house, Washington hdqrs., 306; sketch of, 317; picture, 318; Knyphausen's hdqrs., 318; occupied by the Jumels, 319, 321; becomes "Earlcliff," 321; becomes public museum, 321
- Morrisania, new Boston road through, 350; British post, 364
- Morse, S. F. B., estate at Poughkeepsie, 423
- Morton, Levi P., Ellerslie estate, 434
- Mosholu, Indian name of Tibbett's brook, 345; village of, 353
- Mott, Dr. Henry, house above Canal St., 176
- Mott, Lucretia, abolitionist, 183
- Mt. Pleasant township, homes of literary people, 369
- Mumford, Gordon S., farm, 298
- Municipal Building, new, on Centre St., 114
- Munn, Stephen B., speculative builder, 176
- Munro, Harry, rector at St. John's, Yonkers, 357
- Murray, Gen., burned in effigy, 100
- Murray, Hannah, farm, 310
- Murray, John, farm, 62
- Muscota, Indian name of Spuyten Duyvil Creek, 334
- N
- Nagel, Jan, associated with Dyckman, 330
- Nagel, Jan, 2d, builds Century House, 341
- Nantes, Edict of, revocation of, 62
- Napoleon, decrees of, injure Hudson's trade, 457
- Narragansett Indians, 437
- Naval Academy, Perry's battleflag at, footnote, 60
- Naval heroes, arch to, 244
- Navigation laws, violation of, 359
- Negro burial-ground, 108; bodies exhumed from, for hospital, 148; barracks on site of, 152
- Negro plot, 20, 21
- Nelsonville, 407
- Nepperhaem, Indian name of Vander Donck's grant, 346
- Nepperhan River, dams on, 359
- Nesbit, experiments with steam navigation, 444
- Neutral Ground, location, 363, 364; atrocities perpetrated in, 364
- New Amsterdam, 8, 12; becomes New York, 16
- New England path, 452
- Newman, Mark H., & Co., booksellers, 75
- New Netherland, 8; surrendered by Dutch, 16; becomes N. Y., 16
- New Orange, Dutch name of N. Y. City, 16

- New Rochelle, British post, 364
 New Year's Eve celebration, 269
 New York City, map, 5; southwest view of, 13; receives name, 16; retaken by Dutch, 16; called New Orange, 16; British evacuate, 24, 363; ceases to be capital, 25, 26; becomes owner of fort, 27; sells property, 27; British capture of, 133; College, 317; formation of greater city, 350; the Swamp, 431; capital of State and nation, 467
 New York Commercial Building on site of New York Hotel, 186
 New York State, proclaimed, 416; Constitution adopted, 419; ratifies Articles of Confederation, 425; ratifies Federal Constitution, 427; becomes first in the Union, 467
 Niblo, William, opens garden, 67; 76; manager, 202
 Nicholson, Gov., deposed by citizens, 17
 Nicolls, Col. Richard, treaty with Dutch, 10; changes name of province, etc., 16; confirms Harlem grants, 309; grant to Abraham Staats, 450; grants in Kinderhook, 452, 456
 "Nine Partners' Grant," in Hyde Park, 431
 Nipnichsen, Indian village on Spuyten Duyvil neck, 345
 Niverville, in Rensselaer Co., 459
 Nomenclature of hotels and theatres, suggested reform in, 296
 Non-importation agreement, signed, 21; terms of, 63, 64; renewed, 64
 Non-intercourse act injures Hudson's trade, 457
 Norton, L., farm, 242
 Norton, Mary, farm, 242
- O
- Oblong, the, territory added to New York, 441
 O'Callaghan, E. B., State archivist, 4
 Ogden, William, farm, 242
 Oldboy, Felix, calls Broadway "an accidental thoroughfare," 175; quoted about canals, 332
 Old Guard, parades, 83; armory of, 272; history of, 273
 Omnibuses, 142, 143; first appearance of, 145; routes, names, and equipment, 145; Fifth Ave., 146; last on Broadway, 231
Onrest, or *Resilless*, vessel built by Block, 2
 Orange riots, 286, 288
 Osborne, Gov. Sir Danvers, suicide of, 62
 Oscawanna, 394
 Ossining township, 385; Sint Sinck Indians at, 386; bought by Philipse, 386; limestone quarries at, 386; State prison at, 386
 Oswego, market, 38-40, 62; Landing, 38
 Owens, John E., in *Solon Shingle*, 207
 O'Sullivan, John L., organizes Broadway surface road, 228
- P
- Paff, footnote, 56; shop, 137
 Palatinate, desolation of, 61, 439
 Palatine Bridge, 440
 Palatines, build church, 61; flee to England and America, 439; settle on Livingston Manor, 439; distress of, 440; their dispersion, 440; at Claverack, 450
 Palisade, across Manhattan Is., 9; gates in, 9; becomes Wall St., 9; decay and repairs, 9; demolition of, 10, 152; new, on Chambers St., 152
 Palmer, Edmund, executed as a spy, 399
 Palmer, Frederick, builds Farmers' Bridge, 339
 Palmo, F., café, 183; opera house, 184
 Panic, of 1837, 124, 125; of 1857, 126, 216
 Panton, George, rector of St. John's, Yonkers, 357
 Paparinemo (or Papariniman), Indian name of wading place, 339, 344; island of, 349
 Parades: Colve's, 16, 79; Indian, 19; Hamilton, 24, 25, 79; British evacuation, 24, 79; Stuyvesant's entry, 79-82; Hudson bi-cen-

Parades.—(Continued)

- tenary, 82; Lafayette reception, 82; French revolution of 1830, 82; Croton water, 82; Kossuth, 82; Prince of Wales, 82; Japanese embassy, 82; Franco-Prussian war, 82; Washington centenary, 82; Columbus, 82; Fourth of July, 82; Evacuation Day, 82; departure of troops, 83, 139, 142; political, 83; Roosevelt, 83; Old Guard, 83; immigrants, 83; return of troops, 227; change of route of, 244; wheelmen's, 278; dedication of Grant's tomb, 300; ground for, in Van Cortlandt Park, 353
- Parise, Augustus, garden, 193
- Parker, Foxhall, house on Broadway, 176
- Parker's restaurant, 255
- Parsons, William Barclay, subway engineer, 279
- Parthenon, the, 194
- Patroonships established by West India Co., 459
- Patti, Adelina, at Tripler's Hall, 207
- Paulding, James Kirke, footnote, 57; 155; Placentia estate, 430
- Paulding, John, captor of André, 361, 373; monument to, 398
- Paulding Manor, in Tarrytown, 371
- Paulding, Philip R., builder of "Paulding's Folly," 371
- Pavements, Brower (Stone) St., 33; Broadway, 33, 39, 134, 135, 176, 276; Bowling Green, 33
- Pavonia, Indian massacre at, 4
- Pawling's Purchase, first name of Hyde Park, 431
- Payne, John Howard, lies in state at City Hall, 117
- Peale, Reuben, American Museum, 194
- Peck, Jan, settles at Peekskill, 395; tapster on the *Ileere Straat*, 395
- Peekskill, "Boscobel," home of Beecher at, 370; André escort recalled at, 378; Indian village of Sackhoses, 395; Jan Peck settles, 395; American army at, 396; burnt by Gov. Tryon, 400; removed to present site, 401
- Peekskill Bay, 391, 395
- Pell, Albert S., house on Broadway, 176
- Pell's Manor (Pelham), British post, 364
- Pennington, Capt., duel, 64
- Pennsylvania Dutch, origin of, 440
- Pequod Indians receive Mohicans, 436
- Perry, Commo. Matthew Calbraith, resident of Mt. Pleasant, 369
- Perry, Capt. Oliver Hazard, battle-flag, 60; reception at City Hall, 115
- Petticoat Lane, English name for Beaver St., 14
- Pfaff, "Charley," beer cellar, 188; literary visitors to, 189
- Philadelphia Almanack, table of distances, 344
- Philipsburgh, or Philipseborough, Manor of, formed, 339, 346; Weckquaesgeek tract, 363; Bissightick tract, 364; Pocantico tract, 372; Sing Sing tract, 386; northern boundary at Croton R., 387
- Philipse, Adolphus, inherits Upper Yonkers, 372; his Highland estate divided, 405, 406
- Philipse, Frederick, first, patent for Manor of Philipsburgh, 339, 346; builds King's Bridge, 339; objects to Farmers' Bridge, 339; Pocantico, or upper, mills, 344, 380, 381; buys Van der Donck land, 346; called the "Dutch millionaire," 346; interested in contraband trade, 346; backs Capt. Kidd, 346, 438; returns to his manor, 347; his first wife, 351; sells land to Jacobus Van Cortlandt, 351; a member of Ref. Dutch Church, 355; builds lower mills at Yonkers, 357; Philipse Castle, 381, 382; tablet on Sleepy Hollow Church, 382; buys Sing Sing tract, 386
- Philipse, Frederick, second manor lord, 347; founds St. John's Church, 355, 356; builds manor-house, 357; inherits Upper Yonkers, 372
- Philipse, Col. Frederick, third, leases Bowling Green, 19; manor lord, 346; estates confiscated, 347; gives to St. John's Church, 356; estates sold by State, 359; history of property, 359; inherits part of Highlands, 405

- Philipse Manor-house, city hall at Yonkers, 357; view of, 358; becomes property of C. P. Low, 359; subsequent history, 359
- Philipstown, 405
- Phillips, Wendell, abolitionist, 183
- Pieters, Jochim, receives grant from Kieft, 309; hills, 319
- Pigeon shooting, 295
- Pintaux, Monsieur, café, 183
- Pirates, 43; favored by Gov. Fletcher, 346, 438
- Pitt, William, statue of, 22
- Pocantico brook, Indian village on, 372; location, 380
- Poe, Edgar Allan, *Mystery of Marie Roget*, 150, 155; anecdote of his writing *Eureka*, 169; resident at Bloomingdale, 294; visitor at Macomb house, 348
- Poelnitz, "Baron," acquires "Minto" estate, 178
- Pomeroy, Gen. Seth, monument to, 396, 398; his Highland command, 397, 398
- Ponisi, Madam, at Wallack's T., 210
- Poppleton, Mrs., confectionery shop, 76
- Post, to Boston, 21; to Albany, 21
- Post, Dr., erects Claremont, 298
- Post, Peter, patriot guide, 361
- Post-office, 21; at Dr. Tillary's, 78; Federal, 118; in Rotunda, 129
- Potters' fields, 109; bodies exhumed from, for hospital, 148; in Union Sq., 220; in Madison Sq., 238
- Poughkeepsie, 415, 422; College Hill, 423; first patent, 423; origin of name, 424; first settlers, 425; civic history, 425; Federal Constitution adopted at, 427; ship-building at, 427; visited by Lafayette, 428; Vassar College, 426-428; bridge, 428, 429; inter-collegiate rowing at, 428; 445
- Powder house on Commons, 90
- Price, Stephen, manager Park T., 166
- Printing-press, first, in New York, 74
- Prison, State, at Sing Sing, 386; new site for, 387
- Privateers, colonial, 42; War of 1812, 122
- Processions, *See* Parades
- Province Arms tavern, opened, 62; dinner to Gov. Hardy, 62; opening of King's Coll., 63; becomes Burns's Coffee House (or City Arms), 63; other owners, 64; becomes State Arms, 66; Washington entertained at, 66; City Hotel on site of, 66
- Province House, 20
- Provincial Assembly, act concerning Kingsbridge road, 297; act concerning Albany Post-road, 344
- Provoost, Widow, house on Great George St., 152
- Provost prison, view of, 91; site of, 92-94; remodelled, 94; used as hospital, 95; public offices, 95; British soldiers attack, 97; McDougal a prisoner in, 104; reference, 119
- Publishers and booksellers, 74, 75
- Putnam, George P., Irving's publisher, 53; location, 75; collector of internal revenue, 128; issues *Fable for Critics*, 157; establishes *Putnam's Monthly*, 158; publishes Poe's *Eureka*, 169; store threatened by fire, 207
- Putnam, Gen. Israel, hdqrs., 44; 120; evacuates city, 133; joins Washington, 264, 288; commands the Highlands, 397; executes Palmer, 399
- Putnam, Major Rufus, engineer, 326
- Putnam County, Historical Society preserves mile stones, footnote, 399; Continental Village in, 400; formation of, 405; taken from Dutchess Co., 414

Q

- Quakers associate in founding Hudson, 456
- Quarantine at Staten Is., 78
- Queen Anne, grants farm to Trinity, 59; farm, 136; grant to Beekman, 431; assists Palatines, 439
- Queen's Head tavern, 63

R

- Rachel, 139; at Tripler's Hall, 207

- Rahl, Col., hdqrs. at Blue Bell tavern, 332
- Railroads: N. Y. & N. H. station, 174; Broadway surface, 228-234; changes in motive power, 233, 234; Pennsylvania station, 255; elevated, 278; subway, 279, 280; Beach pneumatic, 279; N. Y. Central, change of course at ship canal, 334; 339; Putnam station at Kingsbridge, 349; change at Kingsbridge, 350; Hudson River, built, 359; Poughkeepsie & Eastern, 428; Boston & Albany, footnote, 454
- Randall, John, Jr., street commission's surveyor, 174
- Randall, Robert R., acquires "Minto" estate, 178; establishes Sailor's Snug Harbor, 178, 179
- Ranelagh Garden, on Rutgers farm, 194
- Rapid Transit, Board, 279; Commission, 279
- Raymond, John T., in *The Gilded Age*, 235
- Reaches, river, Martelaer's, 410; Clover, 448
- Red Hook, 430; settlers in, 432; origin of name, 433
- Red Hook, Upper, 430; Indian battle-field at, 433
- Reed, Adjutant-Gen., meets flag of truce, 121
- Regiment, Seventh, draft riots, 128; departs for Civil War, 141, 142; Astor Place Riot, 196; 459
- Regiment, Ninth, members killed in Orange Riot, 288
- Regiment, Twenty-second, marches to new armory, 276; armory, 276; sketch of, 277
- Regiment, Seventy-first, armory of, 255, 268
- Regiment, Seventy-ninth, Gov. Fenton reviews, 227
- Rehan, Ada, at Daly's T., 251
- Rensselaer (formerly Greenbush), owned by De Laet, 461; first settlers in, 461; conveyed to Johannes Van Rensselaer, 461
- Rensselaer County, formed from Albany Co., 436; fine farms in, 446; post-road through, 459
- Rensselaer Manor (or Rensselaerswyck), anti-rent wars on, 442; Lower Manor of, 450; 452, 459; patent for, 461; first settlers on, 466; Beverwyck charter affects, 466
- Renwick, Jane, Burns's "Blue-Eyed Lassie," 53
- Renwick, Professor, member "Bread and Cheese" Club, 53, 154
- Reservoir on Broadway, 36, 166
- Rhinebeck, 430; origin of name, 431; first purchase of, 432; Dutch settlers in, 432; precinct, 432; 437, 454
- "Rialto," the, for actors, 256
- Rickett's Amphitheatre, 166
- Rignold, George, at Booth's T., 205
- Riker, James, quoted, 336
- Riots: Bread, 125, 126; Draft, 126, 127; draft stopped, 128; Doctors', 148, 149; Orange, 286-288; Colored Orphan Asylum burned, 312; on Livingston Manor, 440, 441; anti-rent, 441
- Riverdale, Indian hiding-places in, 353
- Riverside Drive, 276, 298
- Rivington, printer, 74
- Road-houses: Buck's Horn, 233, 234; Madison Cottage, 238, 240; on Bloomingdale road, 295; in Audubon Park, 315; on Kingsbridge road, 331
- Roa Hook, State camp at, 393, 397; site of Ft. Independence, 397
- Robinson, Col. Beverly, acquires part of Highlands, 405; erects mill, 407; house used by American commanders, 408
- Robson and Crane at Star T., 211
- Rochambeau, Comte de, at Van Cortlandt mansion, 353; at Dobbs Ferry, 362, 363; at Van Cortlandt manor-house, 391; comment on American army, 394
- Rockwell, Charles, at Wallack's T., 210
- Rockwood, George G., at closing of Wallack's T., 211
- Roelof Jansen's kill, 414; Livingston buys land on, 438; 439; squatters on, 442; location of, 445

- Rogers, Ann, farm, 298
 Rogers, John, leases Bowling Green, 27
 Rogers, John, first settler in Highlands, 407
 Rogers, Major, attempt to release from New Jail, 97
 Rogers, Mary, mysterious death of, 150
 Rogers, Nathan, hanged in effigy, 105
 Rokeby estate, sketch of, 433
 Rombout, François, well, 36; house of, 51; grant in Dutchess Co., 414
 Roosa, patentee of Kipsburgh Manor, 432
 Roosevelt, John, leases Bowling Green, 19
 Roosevelt, Theodore, reception to, 83; at Sleepy Hollow Church bi-centenary, 384
 Root, Elihu, counsel for Jacob Sharp, 232
 Ropewalk, on line of Great George St., 34
 Rotunda, the, picture of, 127; erection of, 129; various uses of, 129
 Rowing, intercollegiate, at Poughkeepsie, 428
 Rudde, William, bookseller, 75
 Ruggles, Samuel B., improves Union Sq. and Gramercy Park, 221
 Russell, Lillian, at Tony Pastor's, 216
 Rutgers, Anthony, grantee of land near Canal St., 171; house becomes Ranelagh Garden, 194
 Rutgers, Col. Henry, chairman of meetings, 121, 122; gives lot to Presbyterian Church, 290
 Rutgers, Widow, farm, 134; farm, site of N. Y. Hospital, 148
 Rutherford, John, street commissioner, 174
 Ryckman, Mrs., boarding-house keeper, 53
- S
- Sackhoes, Indian village, 395
 Sage, Mrs. Russell, purchases Constitution Island, 411
 Sailors' Snug Harbor, 178, 179
Salmagundi, "The Stranger at Home, or a Tour of Broadway," 54-57; authors of, footnote, 57; 155, 156, 430
 Saltus, Col. "Nick," forms Union Club, 67
 Samler farm, 242
 Sands' Mills (Armonk), André taken to, 397
 Sandy Hook, lottery for lighthouse on, 63
 Sawmill River, origin of name, 359
 Saxe, John Godfrey, quoted, 28, 199
 Scarborough, village of, 385
 Schenectady, meaning of name, 463; fur trade at, 466
 Schodac, of Indian origin, 436; post-road through, 459
 School, Normal, established, 178
Schreyer's Hoek, see Battery
 Schuyler, Alida, marries Robert Livingston, 437
 Schuyler, Peter, grant from Dongan, 423; Magdalen Island purchase, 432; grant in Kinderhook, 452
 Schuyler, Gen. Philip, 435; guest at Van Schaack house, 454
 Scott, Gen. Winfield, reception at City Hall, 116
 Scott-Siddons, Mrs., début at N. Y. Theatre, 217
 Scudder, John, his American Museum, 96, 196
 Sears, Isaac, called "King," 44; occupies Kennedy house, 44; injured, 101; sent to New Jail, 107
 Settlers, Dutch, 5, 383, 415, 425, 432, 446, 452, 462, 466; English, 8, 415; German, 415, 431, 432, 446; Huguenot, 415, 432, 446; Palatine, 439, 450
 Seward, William H., statue of, 237
 Seymour, Gov. Horatio, addresses rioters, 128
 Seymour, Nelse, negro minstrel, 217, 218
 Shackbury, Dr., composes "Yankee Doodle," 461
 Sharp, Jacob, 35; organizes Broadway surface railway, 228; imprisoned, 232
 Sharpless, James, English painter, 76

- Sheldon, Col., ambushes Hessians, 361; his dragoons, 377; André taken to his quarters, 378
- Shepard, Elliott F., estate at Scarborough, 385
- Shepherd & Johnson, stage route to Chelsea, 146
- Sherman Square, 292
- Shoemakers' Land, 77
- Shorrack-kappock, Indian name of Kingsbridge, 345
- Sidewalks, called *strookes*, 33; first, 134; on Broadway, 162, 176
- Simcoe, Lt.-Col. John G., defeats Stockbridge Indians, 353; attempt to capture Col. Gist, 357
- Sing Sing, 370; origin of name, 386; State prison at, 386
- Singer Building, view of, 69
- Sint Sinck Indians, 343; at Ossining, 386
- Six Nations, 460
- Skating rink, Cosmopolitan, 261; Metropolitan, 272
- Skinner, American irregulars, 364
- Slack, Sarah, farm, 266
- Sleepy Hollow, church, 382; picture, 383
- Sleights on Broadway, frontispiece; 146
- Slughter, Gov., arrives in N. Y., 17; orders trial of Leisler, 17; character of, 17; signs death warrant of Leisler and Milborne, 18; death of, 18; quoted as to importance of Albany, 466
- Sluyter visits Claverack, 450
- Small-pox, inoculation for, 400
- Smedes, Abraham K., farm, 310
- Smith, Gerrit, abolitionist, 183
- Smith, John, farm, 222
- Smith, Joshua Hett, André-Arnold interview at his house, 385; with André, crosses King's Ferry, 393; arrested at Fishkill, 417; his trial, 418
- Smith, Jotham, shop, 137, 157
- Smith, Melancthon, opposes adoption of Federal Constitution, 426
- Snyder's brewery, 164
- Somerindyke, Richard, farm, 283; view of house, 284; Louis Philippe at his house, 295
- Sons of Liberty, make demonstration, 21; hdqrs., 63, 93, 104; place of resort, 77; origin of name, 97; act against press gang, 98; against Stamp Act, 98, 99; celebrate arrival of Gov. Moore, 100; erect liberty-poles, 101; attacked by British soldiers, 101, 102
- Sons of the Revolution, custodians of Fraunce's tavern, 63; erect tablet at Trinity Cemetery, 314; erect Pomeroy monument at Cortlandtville, 399
- Sontag, Henrietta, at Tripler's Hall, 207
- Sothorn, Edwin, 213, 217
- South Schodac, on post-road, 459
- Southworth, Mrs. E. D. E. N., resident of Yonkers, 368
- Sparta village, 385; *Vulture* fires at tombstones, 385; birthplace of Admiral John L. Worden, 385; copper mine at, 386
- Spingler, Henry, farm on site of Union Sq., 222
- Spingler Institute, 222
- Spring Garden, 104; house, 134
- Spuyten Duyvil Creek, Indian name of, 334; origin of name, 334, 335; story of Anthony the Trumpeter, 336, 337; mill and dams on, 348
- Spuyten Duyvil neck, 345; fortifications on, 350
- Squatters, Dutch, 6; in parks, 220, 238; near Bloomingdale road, 277, 278; on Roelof Jansen's kill, 442
- Staats, Major Abraham, first grant in Claverack, 431; house burned by Indians, 450; 452
- Staats, Dr. Samuel, at Staatsburg, 431; 432
- Staatsburg, 430; origin of name, 431
- Stage routes, 144; to Greenwich village, 145; to Chelsea, 146
- Stamp Act, passed, 21, 97; repeal of, 22, 100; meeting at Burns's Coffee House, 63; Congress, 98
- Stanford & Swords, booksellers, 75
- State Arms tavern, 66
- State camp at Roa Hook, 393, 397
- Staten Island, quarantine station at, 78; Sailors' Snug Harbor on, 179
- States-General, grants licences to trade, 3; correspondence with, 4

- Statues: De Peyster, 18; George III., 22, 23; Pitt, 22; on custom-house, 30; Washington, 223; Lafayette, 224; Lincoln, 224; Seward, 237; Farragut, 246; Greeley, 254; Dodge, 254; Columbus, 274; Verdi, 292
- "Steamship Row," on site of fort, 28, 29
- Stedman, Edmund Clarence, 156; at Pfaff's, 189
- Steel, tavern-keeper, 45
- Steuben, Baron, injured in Doctor's Riot, 149; at Van Cortlandt manor-house, 391; drill-master of American army, 394; Order of the Cincinnati formed at his hdqrs., 420
- Stevens family, 48
- Stewart, Alexander T., shop, 157; establishes business, 159; removals, 160; body of, stolen, 160; uptown store, 181; 188; owner of Niblo's, 204; owner of the Athenæum, 217
- Stewart, James, farm, 242
- Stilwell, Senator, bill to use City Hall park for new court-house, 131
- Stockbridge Indians, defeat of, 353; originally Mohicans, 437; their history, 437
- Stoddard, Richard Henry, 156; footnote, 157
- Stone bridge, view of, 173; origin of, 174
- Stone, William Leete, journalist, 156
- Stoutenburgh, Jacobus, settler at Staatsburg, 431
- Streets: *Tuyn*, Garden, or Exchange Place, 2; irregularity of, 6; *Heere Straat*, 6; Great Queen (or Pearl), 6; Bridge, 8, 15; Beaver, 8, 15; Wall, 9; first map of, 10; Whitehall, 14; State, 14; Marketfield, 14; Petticoat Lane, 14; Morris, 15; Great George, 31, 34, 36, 84; Brower (Stone), 33; cleaning of, 40; William, dry-goods section, 41; Rector, 51, 52, 60, 61; Vesey, 52, 136; Pine, 61; Maiden Lane regulated, 77; Thomas, 134, 148; Fair (Division or Fulton), 136; Barclay, 137; Murray, 137; Chambers, 137—palisade in, 152; Chambers, opened, 152; Warren, 137; Robinson (Park Place), 137; Duggan (now Canal), 173; Canal, regulation of, 173; commission to lay out, 174; plan of, 174; Astor Place (Sand Hill road), 178; Lafayette Place established, 196; Western Boulevard opened, 274; Harsen's lane, 288; footnote, 290; Harlem lane, 297; St. Nicholas Ave., 297; Manhattan, 305, 333; Hamilton Place, 308; Macomb, 345, 348; Beekman, 431
- Striker farm, 266
- Stringer & Townsend, booksellers, 75
- Strong, Mayor Wm. L., approves subway plans, 279
- Stryker, James, farm, 298
- Stuyvesant, Balthasar, farm, 10
- Stuyvesant, Nicholas, farm, 10
- Stuyvesant, Gov. Peter, resents English encroachments, 8, 9, 422; builds Whitehall, 14; marshals army on Bowling Green, 15; surrenders New Amsterdam, 16; grant to Ide, 298; grant to De Kay, 305; grants to Harlem, 309; thwarts Van der Donck, 346; 366, 431; declares Claverack purchase void, 448; compels Van Rensselaer to divide his domain, 460; gives charter to Beverwyck, 466
- Stuyvesant Falls, 456, 458
- St. Andrew's Society, 64
- St. George's Cricket Club, 248
- St. John's Park, 20
- St. Luke's Hospital, 302
- St. Paul Building, on site of Bar-num's Museum, 199
- St. John, Charles, hatter, 68
- St. John & Toucey, tailors, 53
- Subway, 279; contracts for, let, 280; sections under Broadway, 280; openings of, 280; 281; viaduct at Manhattan St., 307; depth of, at Washington Heights, 315; across Harlem ship canal, 334; at Van Cortlandt Park, 349, 355
- Sullivan, General, punitive expedition against Iroquois, 390
- Sumner, Charles, attacked by Preston Brooks, 183; guest at Van Schaack house, 454

Sunnyside, home of Irving, 364;
how built, 366; sketch of, 366
Swedes, Dutch expedition against,
79
Swords, T. & J., booksellers, 74

T

- Tablets: Washington Building, 2;
City Hotel, 68; Montgomery, at
St. Paul's, 72; City Hall, 108;
subway, 118; at Times Sq., 266;
Knowlton and Leitch, 304, 305;
at Trinity Cemetery, 314; on
Morris house, 323; at Tarrytown
station, 372; to Irving, on Christ
Church, 372; on Sleepy Hollow
church, 382; on Van Cortlandt
house, Cortlandtville, 398
Talleyrand, 44; is entertained by
Jumels, 319
Tallmadge, Maj. Benj., custodian
of André, 377, 378
Tallman, John H., farm, 282
Tammany Hall, 153, 212
Tanners, ordinance against, 77
Tappan, execution of André at, 380
Tarleton, Col. Banastre, 48; de-
feats Stockbridge Indians, 353
Tarrytown, fine estates in, 370;
origin of the name, 371; Irving's
solution, 372; Revolutionary con-
flicts, 371, 372; tablet at station,
372; St. Joseph's Normal School,
372; other schools, 372; tablet
to Irving, 372
Tattersall's, horse exchange, 200
Taverns: Kocks's and Krigier's, 42;
King's Arms, 45; John Corbett's,
52; Province Arms, 62; Horse and
Cart, 62; King's Head, 63;
City Arms, 63; Queen's Head
(Fraunce's), 63; State Arms, 66;
Drovers' Inn, 137; Bull's Head,
137; Stone Bridge, 174; Buck's
Horn, 233, 234; Madison Cot-
tage, 238, 240; Half-way House,
273; Crossed Keys, 322, 323;
Blue Bell, 331-333; Dyckman's,
340; Hyatt's, 340; Century House,
340; Kingsbridge, 342; Cock's,
at Kingsbridge, 348; Dusen-
berry's, at Cortlandtville, 399,
400; Rogers's, in the Highlands,
407; described by De Chastellux,
418; Blue Store, 446, 447; Kel-
logg's, in Hudson, 447
Taylor, Bayard, 156; at Pfaff's, 189
Taylor, James, farm, 242
Taylor, Wm., D. D., at Tabernacle,
255
Taylor, Pres't Zachary, funeral, 82
Taylor's restaurant, 184
Tea landed in N. Y., 106
Tea parties given by aldermen, 117
Tea-water pump, 36
Teachers College, 302
Teller house, occupied by Brett, 419
Teller's, or Sarah's, Point, *Vulture*
anchors off, 392
Temple, Charlotte, grave in Trinity
churchyard, 61
Ten Broeck, Dirck Wessel, settles
in Claverack, 442
"Tenderloin," the, 211, 248
Tetard's Hill, American fortifi-
cations on, 350
Thacher, Dr., inoculation for small-
pox, 399, 400
Thackeray, Wm. M., 156
Theatres: Bowery, on site of
Bull's Head tavern, 137; Niblo's
Garden, 67, 192—hist. of, 202—
204—*The Black Crook* at, 204—
later hist. of, 205, 206; Broadway,
benefit for Kipp & Brown, 145—
burnt, 202—new T. (formerly
Apollo Saloon), 212; Gothic Hall,
164; Apollo Rooms, pict. of, 165;
Rickett's Amphitheatre, 166; Con-
cert Hall, 167; Enterprise Hall,
167; Apollo Gallery, 167; Palmo's
Opera House, becomes Burton's
T., 183; Park, location of, 192—
company at Mt. Vernon Garden,
194—company at Olympic T.,
199; American Museum, Peale's,
194—becomes Barnum's, 194—
erection of, 196—view of, burning,
197—anecdotes of, 197, 198—re-
opens at Spring St., 211—burnt,
211; Opera House (on site of
Mercantile Library), Macready
riot, 196; New York Museum,
196; Olympic, at Nos. 442-448
Broadway, 199, 200—Mitchell
as manager, 200—other managers,
202; Tripler's Hall, hist. of, 206,
207—changes of name, 207;
Winter Garden, 207; Lyceum,

Theatres,—(Continued)

under Brougham, 208—under Wallack, 208; Wallack's, at 13th St., 208, 209—hist. of, 210—moves uptown, 251; Star, 210—final performance, 211; Chinese Rooms, become Barnum's, 211—burned, 211; *Old Broadway*, picture of, 212—history of, 213; Laura Keene's Varieties, 213, 214—becomes Olympic, 214; Olympic (formerly Laura Keene's), *Humpty Dumpty* at, 214; Buckley's Minstrel Hall, bad luck of, 214; San Francisco minstrels, 214—move uptown, 250; Metropolitan, under Tony Pastor, 215; New Theatre Comique, 215—under Harrigan and Hart, 217—their popularity, 218—becomes Old London Street, 218; Wood's Minstrel Hall and T., Harrigan and Hart at, 216; Wood's Marble Hall, minstrels, 216; Athenæum, later, Lucy Rushton's and Worrell Sisters' N. Y. Theatre, 217—becomes Daly's, 217—becomes Globe, 217; Kelly & Leon's Minstrel Hall, 218; Lina Edward's, 218; Hope Chapel, 218; Broadway Academy of Music, 218; Blitz's New Hall, 218; minor places on Broadway, 219; Abbey's Park, 234—burned, 236, 259; Franconi's Hippodrome, on site of Madison Cottage, 238, 239; theatres between 23d and 34th streets, 251, 252; theatres between 34th and 42d streets, 259–261; theatres above 42d St., 268, 270, 272, 274; prices of seats in, 208, 269

Theatrical trust, 252, 268, 269

Thompson, Corporal, opens Madison Cottage, 238

Thorne, Colonel, acquires Apthorpe property, 286

Tibbett's brook, 345; origin of name, 349; Van Cortlandt buys land on, 351

Tilden, Samuel J., estate at Grey-stone, 360; presides at André capture centenary, 375; born in Columbia Co., 450

Tillary, Dr. James, post-office at house of, 78

Time ball, for mariners, 70

Times, the, building, 262–264

Tollemache, Capt., fights duel, 64

Toll-gates, 345, 360, 445, 457

Tontine Association, erects City Hotel, 66

Tories, or loyalists, lose property, 282, 347; outrages by, 283; De Lanceys as, 283, 284

Townships formed, 349, 425

Trails, Indian, Kingsbridge road, 310; development of, into roads, 343, 344; through the Highlands, 407; through Livingston's Manor, 440

Trees, 33, 61, 176, 280; on Albany Post-road, 430

Tribune, the, attacked by rioters, 128

Trinity Church Corporation, erects monument, 61; erects St. Paul's Chapel, 71

Troops, departure of, 139–142

Trumbull, John, 76

Tryon, Governor, 20; visits Van Cortlandt Manor, 390; destroys Peekskill and Cortlandtville, 400

Tulip tree in Union Sq., 179, 220

Twain, Mark, 235

Tweed, Wm. M., threatens Grace Church, 180; as alderman, 229

Tweed Ring, builds county court-house, 129; 229; opens Boulevard, 275; buys trees for Boulevard, 280

Twins, Siamese, exhibition of, 219

U

Ulster County, 412, 436

Uncas, Mohican chief, 436, 437

Undercliff, estate of Geo. P. Morris, 411, 413

Union Club, formation of, 67

Union Dime Savings Bank, omnibus terminus at, 147; increment of land value, 252

Union Square, lighted, 38; called Union Place, 220; public meeting place, 220; potter's field, 220; regulated, 221; fashionable section, 222; picture of, 225; bomb throwing in, 226

United Netherlands Company, formation, 2; charter expires, 3
 Untermeyer, Samuel, estate of Greystone, 360; phenomenal lawyer's fee, 360
 Upper party, Americans in Neutral Ground, 364
 Usselinx, Willem, his reasons for colony in New Netherland, 3

V

- Valatie, on Albany Post-road, 459
 Valentine's Hill, British post, 364
 Van Alen, Katrina, original of Katrina Van Tassel, 452, 454
 Van Amburgh's Menagerie with Barnum, 211
 Van Buren, Pres't Martin, monument at Kinderhook, 451; his home at Kinderhook, 452; entertains Irving, 452
 Van Corlaer, Anthony, Indian agent for Van Rensselaer, 460
 Van Cortlandt family, 48; owners of property below Canal St., 166
 Van Cortlandt, Catherine, erects Sleepy Hollow church, 382
 Van Cortlandt, Frederick, builds mansion in Van C. Park, 352
 Van Cortlandt, Frederick, city clerk of N. Y., 352; owner of "Upper Van Cortlandt's," 352; house used by British, 353; hides city records, 354
 Van Cortlandt, Jacobus, marries Eva Philipse, 351; erects house and mills in Van C. Park, 351
 Van Cortlandt, Jacobus, succeeds to property, 352; a Tory, 353
 Van Cortlandt, Oloff Stevenson, owner of Damen farm, 68
 Van Cortlandt, Gen. Philip, his military services, 390
 Van Cortlandt, Pierre, Gov. Tryon visits, 390; his civic services to the State, 390
 Van Cortlandt, Stephanus, patent for manor, 388; division of manor, 388; in Rombout grant, 414
 Van Cortlandt Manor, manor-house, 388, 389; historic associations of manor-house, 391; Whitefield and Asbury preach at, 392; Cortlandtville in, 397
 Van Cortlandt Mansion, 345, 349, 351; built by Fred. Van C., 352; used as museum, 352; known as "Lower Van Cortlandt's," 352; distinguished visitors at, 353
 Van Cortlandt Park, terminus of subway, 282, 349, 355; dam and mills in, 352; Indian Field in, 353, 354; formation of, 353; parade ground, 353; Vault Hill in, 354
 Van der Donck, Adrien, called de Jonkheer, buys land above Harlem R., 345; becomes a patroon, 346; 349; site of house, 352; builds mills on Nepperhan R., 359; mentions Kinderhook and Claverack, 454; sheriff of Rensselaerswyck, 460
 Van Dyke, country place in Dutch days, 6
 Van Hoesen, Jan Frans, first settler in Claverack, 450; his patent includes Hudson, 456
 Van Kleeck, Baltus, house, erection of, 424, 425; legislature meets at, 425; news of Yorktown received at, 426
 Van Ness, Judge Wm. P., builds Lindenwald, 450; Burr's second in Hamilton duel, 451; entertains Irving, 451
 Van Norden, farm, 242
 Van Oblinus, Pieter, farm in Harlem, 310
 Van Rensselaer, Hendrick, dispute with Livingston, 441
 Van Rensselaer, Johannes, forms Lower Manor, 450; receives Cralo and Claverack, 461
 Van Rensselaer, Kilian, patroon, 445; acquires land in Claverack, 448; becomes patroon, 459; his first purchases, 460; his colony of Rensselaerswyck, 460
 Van Rensselaer Manor (or Rensselaerswyck), see Rensselaer Manor
 Van Schaack house, 453; distinguished visitors at, 454
 Van Slechtenhorst buys land at Claverack, 448
 Van Tassel, Jacob, 366; his goose-gun, 368

- Van Tassel, Katrina, character of Irving's, 368; original of, 452
- Van Tienhoven, Secretary Cornelis, farm, 11, 76, 77; house of, 42; buys Keskeskeck on mainland, 343
- Van Twiller, Director, builds fort, 12
- Van Wart, Rev. Alexander, at André centenary, 375
- Van Wart, Isaac, captor of André, 362, 373
- Van Wyck, Abraham, ball-alley, 77
- Vandenheuvel, John C., farm on Bloomingdale road, 283, 294; his town house, 294
- Vanderbilt, Wm. H., buys Hopper farm, for Horse Exchange, 268
- Vandergrift, country place, 6; fire buckets at house of, 10
- Vanderlyn, John, erects Rotunda, 129
- Varian, Isaac, farm, 222, 242; tree, 247, 248; cottage, 249
- Vassar College, view of Thompson Library, 426; of main building, 427; formation of, 428
- Vassar, Matthew, founds college, 428
- Vaughan, General, burns Clermont mansions, 444
- Vault Hill, in Van C. park, 354; decoy camp-fires on, 355
- Verdi, Giuseppe, statue of, 292
- Verplanck, Gulian, grant in Dutchess Co., 414; Order of the Cincinnati organized in his house, 420
- Verplanck Gulian C., editor, 74; 154, 155; ancestral home of, 420
- Verplanck, Philip, surveys Van C. Manor, 388
- Verplanck's Point, King's Ferry at, 355, 394; historic importance of, 394; French army arrives at, 394
- Verveelen, Johannes, Harlem ferryman, 338
- Vesey, Rev. William, first rector of Trinity, 52
- Vineyard, the, pleasure resort, 85
- Vlacte*, the, 9; becomes the Commons, 84
- Volckertsen, Dutch trader, 2
- Von Hoffman, "Baron," adventurer, 168
- Vulture*, the, British vessel in André affair, 378; fires at Sparta graveyard, 385; anchors off Teller's Point, 392

W

- Wading place, in Harlem, 328; description of, 337, 338; ferry removed to, 338; 344
- Wallack, James W., manager, 208; last appearance, 208, 210
- Wallack, Lester, 208; manager, 210; his two theatres, 210; his uptown theatre, 251
- Wappingers, Indian tribe, 422; friendly to Dutch, 423; battle with Iroquois, 433; 436
- Wappingers Falls, 399, 422; Massachusetts encroaches on, 422
- War of 1812, declared, 121; devastation by British, 122; fortifications in N. Y., 123, 124; injures Hudson's trade, 457; Greenbush a military dépôt during, 461
- Waranoak Indians, 412, 415
- Wards, West, 38, 48; division of city into, 133; boundaries of, 133; 136
- Waring, Colonel, cleans N. Y. streets, 40
- Warner, Anna, present owner of Constitution Island, 411; her Bible class at West Point, 411
- Warner, Henry, owner of Constitution Island, 410
- Warner, Susan, author, 410; her Bible class at West Point, 411
- Warren, Minnie, at Barnum's, 211
- Warren, Admiral Sir Peter, secures lot at No. 1 Broadway, 43; street named after, 136; farm, 222
- Washington, Gen. George, calls council, 24; to occupy Government House, 25; hdqrs. in Kennedy house, 44; cognizant of Champe's plot, 47; lives in McComb house, 50; anecdote of, in connection with Washington Irving, 50, 51; attends St. Paul's, 71; centenary, 82, 115; sends Nathan Hale on mission, 120; statue of, in Union Sq., 223; Arch, 244; meets Putnam, 264; at Apthorpe mansion, 288; hdqrs.

- Washington, Gen.—*Continued*
 in Morris house, 305, 318; directs battle of Harlem Heights, 305, 307; meets Mary Philipse, 318; meets Alexander Hamilton, 319; visit to Morris house, 319; leaves garrison in Ft. Washington, 326; at Blue Bell tavern, 332; at Van Cortlandt mansion, 353; receives news of De Grasse and Lafayette, 354; leaves campfires on Vault Hill, 355; hdqrs. at Dobbs Ferry, 362, 363; quotation of, on André monument, 374; meets French officers at Hartford, 377; his connection with André, 378–380; orders court-martial on André, 378; mentions Croton bridge in diary, 387, 391; at Peekskill, 396; at Cold Spring, 411; interview with Harvey Birch, 412; sword of, 417; prevents insubordination in army, 433
 Washington Hall, erection of, 153; "Bread and Cheese" Club at, 154; acquired by Stewart, 160
 Washington Heights, 280; original grant to Jochim Pieters, 309; what the subway has done for, 315
 Water, Croton, 28, 37; from wells, 34, 36; Colles's scheme to obtain, 36; quality of, 36, 37; Manhattan Co. to supply, 36, 37
 Watkins, Samuel, farm, 310
 Watts, John, at No. 3 Broadway, 45; farm of, 222
 Wayne, Gen. Anthony, *Life of*, 434
 Weather Bureau, 74
 Webb, Gen. James Watson, resident of Mt. Pleasant, 369; born in Claverack, 450
 Weber, Philip, farm, 266
 Webster, Daniel, 50, 139, funeral, 82; reception at City Hall, 115
 Weckquaesgeek Indians, 343; village at Dobbs Ferry, 363; war with, 383
 Weed, Thurlow, political boss, 139
 Weepers' Point, *see* Battery
 Wells, public, 34; Mr. Rombout's, 36; abolished, 36
 Wells & Patterson, shop, 137
 Wendell, or Elm, Park, formerly Apthorpe estate, 286
 West India Company, formation and objects of, 3; correspondence with, 4; grants burgher government, 10; farm, 6, 59, 60, 139; establishes patroonships, 459; sends first colony, 462
 West Point, chain across Hudson, 397; André on his way to, 399; hdqrs. of commander of, 408; completion of new buildings, 409; at outbreak of Spanish war, 409; Bible classes at, 411; Foundry, 411
 Westchester, English settlement at, 8; parish, 356; British post, 364
 Westchester County, formed, 343; literary people in, 368–370; extent of Van Cortlandt manor, 388; campaign, 416
 Weymouth, printer, 74
 Wharton house, Harvey Birch escapes from, 419
 Wheeler, A. C. (Nym Crinkle), resident of Mt. Pleasant, 369
 Wheelmen, 276, 278
 White Plains, Bloomingdale Asylum removes to, 302; American retreat to, 318; 372; Dec. of Independence read at, 416
 White Way, the Great, 86, 256, 257, 262
 Whitefield, George, preaches at Van Cortlandt manor, 392
 Whitehall, the, sketch of, 14
 Whitman, Walt, at Pfaff's, 189
 Wicopee, Indians, 412; pass, 412
 Willard, of the City Hotel, 67, 68
 Willemstadt, Dutch rename for Albany, 465
 Willett, Edward, opens Province Arms, 62
 Willett, Marinus, 77; secretary of meetings, 121, 122
 William and Mary, declaration of, as sovereigns, 17
 Williams, Cornelius, farm, 222
 Williams, David, captor of André, 373
 Willis, Nathaniel P., 154, 157
 Wilmot, David, guest at Van Schaack house, 454
 Windmill in *Heere Straat*, 6
 Windust, Edward, opens Athenæum Hotel, 166
 Winnakee brook, at Poughkeepsie, 424

- Winter, William, at Pfaff's, 189
 Wolcott, Gov. Oliver, wife and daughter of, make bullets, 23
 Wood, Fernando, 212; at Union Sq. meeting, 227; house of, on Bloomingdale Road, 274; 381
 Wood, Mrs. John, manager, 214
 Woodlawn, roadhouse, 295
 Woodworth, Samuel, 155
 Woolworth Building, 137, 138
 Worden, R.-Admiral John L., *Monitor-Merrimac* fight, 385
 Worth, Gen. Wm. J., funeral, 82; body lies in state, 118; monument, 244, 245, 246; birthplace at Hudson, 459
 Wurcz, Lieut., Hessian commander, 361
- Y
- Yates, Robert, opposes adoption of Federal Constitution, 426
- Yonkers, called *de Jonkheer's* land, 345; origin of name, 346; Indian Nepperhaem, 346; township of, 349; town of Kingsbridge formed from, 350; trolley line to, 350; recent development in, 355; becomes a city, 359; its industries, 359; Hog Hill, 360; British post, 364; homes of literary people, 368, 369; anchorage of Henry Hudson, 388
- Z
- Zaaskill, de*, Dutch name of Nepperhan R., 359
Zantberg, range of sand hills across Manhattan I., 178
 "Zealandia," bastion at land gate, 9; discovery of foundations of, 10

.

4 5



*A Selection from the
Catalogue of*
G. P. PUTNAM'S SONS



**Complete Catalogue sent
on application**

The Hudson River from Ocean to Source : : : . . :

Historical Legendary Picturesque

By EDGAR MAYHEW BACON

Author of "Chronicles of Tarrytown," "Narragansett Bay," "Henry Hudson," etc.

*Large 8°, with over 100 illustrations.
Net, \$3.50. By express, prepaid, \$3.75.*

NO stream in America is so rich in legends and historic associations as the Hudson. From ocean to source every mile of it is crowded with reminders of the early explorers, of the Indian wars, of the struggle of the colonies, and of the quaint, peaceful village existence along its banks in the early days of the Republic. Before the explorers came, the river figured to a great extent in the legendary history of the Indian tribes of the East. Mr. Bacon is well equipped for the undertaking of a book of this sort, and the story he tells is of national interest.

The volume is illustrated with views taken especially for this work and with many rare old prints now first published in book form.

G. P. PUTNAM'S SONS

New York

London

American Historic Towns

Historic Towns of New England

Edited by LYMAN P. POWELL. With introduction by
GEORGE P. MORRIS. With 161 illustrations. Large
8°, gilt top net \$3 00

CONTENTS: **Portland**, by Samuel T. Pickard; **Rutland**, by Edwin D. Mead; **Salem**, by George D. Latimer; **Boston**, by Thomas Wentworth Higginson; **Cambridge**, by Samuel A. Eliot; **Concord**, by Frank A. Sanborn; **Plymouth**, by Ellen Watson; **Cape Cod Towns**, by Katharine Lee Bates; **Deerfield**, by George Sheldon; **Newport**, by Susan Coolidge; **Providence**, by William B. Weeden; **Hartford**, by Mary K. Talcott; **New Haven**, by Frederick Hull Cogswell.

"These monographs have permanent literary and historical value. They are from the pens of authors who are saturated with their themes, and do not write to order, but *con amore*. The beautiful letterpress adds greatly to the attractiveness of the book."—*The Watchman*.

"The authors of the Boston papers have succeeded in presenting a wonderfully interesting account in which none of the more important events have been omitted. . . . the quaint Cape Cod towns that have clung tenaciously to their old-fashioned ways are described with a characteristic vividness by Miss Bates. . . . The other papers are presented in a delightfully attractive manner that will serve to make more deeply cherished the memory of the places described."—*New York Times*.

Historic Towns of the Middle States

Edited by LYMAN P. POWELL. With introduction by
Dr. ALBERT SHAW. With 135 illustrations. Large
8°, gilt top net \$3 00

CONTENTS: **Albany**, by W. W. Battershall; **Saratoga**, by Ellen H. Walworth; **Schenectady**, by Judson S. Landon; **Newburgh**, by Adelaide Skeel; **Tarrytown**, by H. W. Mabie; **Brooklyn**, by Harrington Putnam; **New York**, by J. B. Gilder; **Buffalo**, by Rowland B. Mahany; **Pittsburgh**, by S. H. Church; **Philadelphia**, by Talcott Williams; **Princeton**, by W. M. Sloane; **Wilmington**, by E. N. Vollandigham.

"Mr. Powell's contributors have prepared a most interesting collection of papers on important landmarks of the Middle States. The writers enter into the history of their respective towns with much elaborateness."—*N. Y. Tribune*.

G. P. PUTNAM'S SONS, New York and London

American Historic Towns

Historic Towns of the Southern States

Edited by LYMAN P. POWELL. With introduction by
W. P. TRENT. With about 175 illustrations. Large
8°, gilt top net \$3 00

CONTENTS: **Baltimore**, By St. George L. Sioussat; **Annapolis**
and **Frederick**, by Sara Andrew Shafer; **Washington**, by F. A.
Vanderlip; **Richmond**, by William Wirt Henry; **Williamsburg**,
by Lyon G. Tyler; **Wilmington, N. C.**, by J. B. Cheshire;
Charlestown, by Yates Snowden; **Savannah**, by Pleasant A.
Stoval; **St. Augustine**, by G. R. Fairbanks; **Mobile**, by Peter
J. Hamilton; **Montgomery**, by George Petrie; **New Orleans**,
by Grace King; **Vicksburg**, by H. F. Simrall; **Knoxville**, by
Joshua W. Caldwell; **Nashville**, by Gates P. Thruston; **Louis-**
ville, by Lucien V. Rule; **Little Rock**, by George B. Rose.

"This very charming volume is so exquisitely gotten up, the scheme is so perfect, the seventeen writers have done their work with such historical accuracy and with such literary skill, the illustrations are so abundant and so artistic, that all must rejoice that Mr. Powell ever attempted to make the historical pilgrimages."—*Journal of Education*.

Historic Towns of the Western States

Edited by LYMAN P. POWELL. With introduction by
R. G. THWAITES. With 218 illustrations. Large 8°,
gilt top. (By mail \$3.25) net \$3 00

CONTENTS: **Detroit**, by Silas Farmer; **Chicago**, by Hon. Lyman
T. Gage; **St. Louis**, by F. M. Crunden; **Monterey**, by Harold
Balce; **San Francisco**, by Edwin Markham; **Portland**, by Rev.
Thomas L. Cole; **Madison**, by Prof. R. G. Thwaites; **Kansas**
City, by Charles S. Gleed; **Cleveland**, by President Charles F.
Thwing; **Cincinnati**, by Hon. M. E. Ailes; **Marietta**, by Muriel
C. Dyar; **Des Moines**, by Dr. F. I. Herriot; **Indianapolis**, by
Hon. Perry S. Heath; **Denver**, by J. C. Dana; **Omaha**, by Dr.
Victor Rosewater; **Los Angeles**, by Florence E. Winslow; **Salt**
Lake City, by Prof. James E. Talmage; **Minneapolis** and **St.**
Paul, by Hon. Charles B. Elliott; **Santa Fé**, by Dr. F. W.
Hodge; **Vincennes**, by W. H. Smith.

G. P. PUTNAM'S SONS, New York and London

Literary New York

Its Landmarks and Associations

By Charles Hemstreet

*8vo. With 65 Illustrations, \$1.75 net
(By mail, \$1.95)*

The subject of Historic New York is a fascinating one, and this book, written by a well-known authority, and embellished with many new and artistic illustrations, will appeal to a wide circle of readers. Mr. Hemstreet's descriptions and traditions cluster around the great literary figures who have been associated with old New York. The book contains much that is valuable, and in its charming form is well suited for presentation, and also deserves a place in every library.

Chronicles of Tarrytown and Sleepy Hollow

By Edgar Mayhew Bacon

Author of "The Hudson River," "Narragansett Bay," etc.

16mo. Revised Edition, gilt top. With 19 Illustrations and a Map, \$1.25 net. (By mail \$1.35)

"The author has well performed an agreeable task, for the material is abundant and the charm of it wonderfully appealing to men of imagination and historical interest. The illustrations bring out the spirit of the locality."

The Outlook.

New York

G. P. Putnam's Sons

London

1



974.71
J52

STANFORD UNIVERSITY LIBRARIES
CECIL H. GREEN LIBRARY
STANFORD, CALIFORNIA 94305-6004
(415) 723-1493

All books may be recalled after 7 days

DATE DUE

20 MAR - 9 1994

28D DEC 16 1994

28D DEC 10 1995

28D MAR 25 1996

